

# America's War for Humanity



▪ INCLUDING ▪  
A COMPLETE HISTORY OF THE  
WORLD WAR UP TO DATE





Class J522

Book R8

Copyright N<sup>o</sup> \_\_\_\_\_

COPYRIGHT DEPOSIT.









Copyright by G. V. Buck, Washington, D. C. From Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

**PRESIDENT WILSON AND WAR CABINET**

Back row, from left to right: President Woodrow Wilson; William G. McAdoo, Sec. of the Treasury; Thomas W. Gregory, Attorney General; Josephus Daniels, Sec. of the Navy; David F. Houston, Sec. of Agriculture, and William B. Wilson, Sec. of Labor.

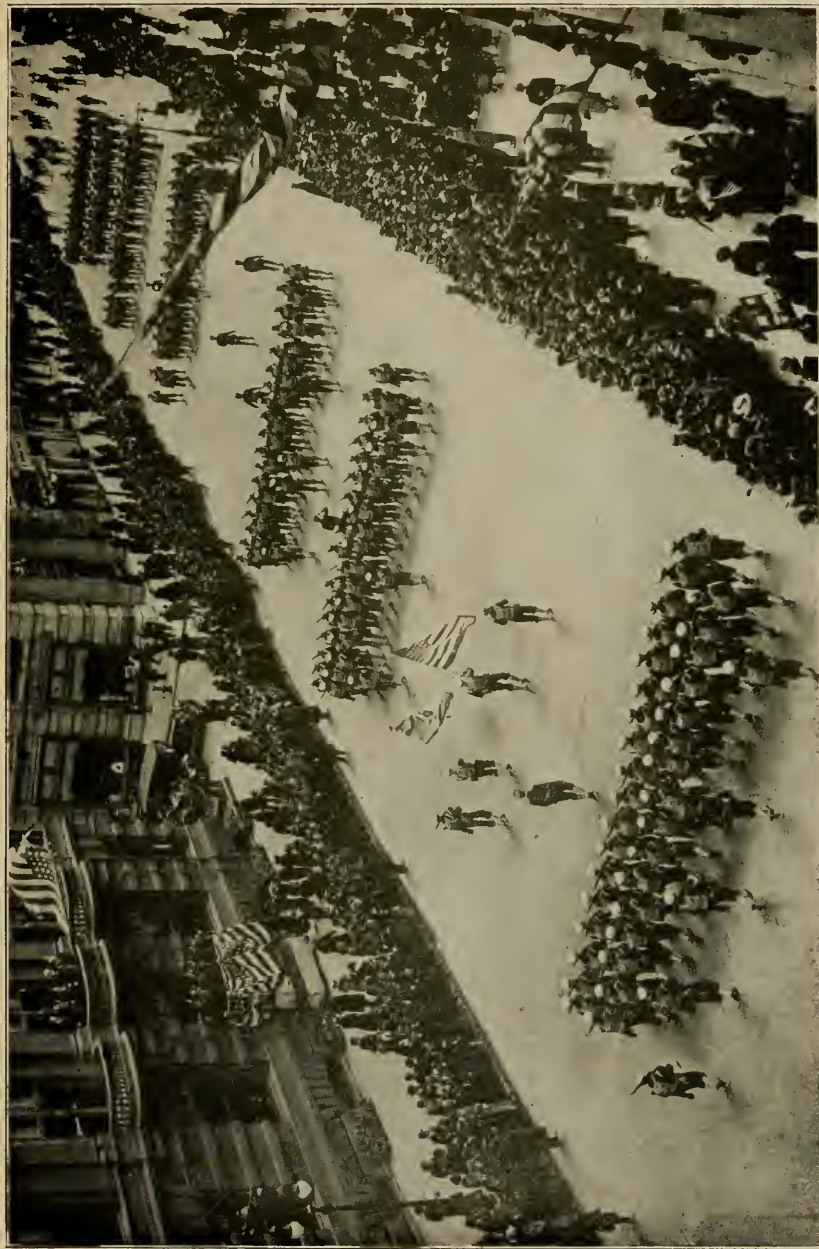
Front row, from left to right: Robert Lansing, Sec. of State; Newton D. Baker, Sec. of War; Albert S. Burleson, Postmaster General; Franklin K. Lane, Sec. of the Interior, and William C. Redfield, Sec. of Commerce.



Photo from Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

LIEUTENANT BRUCE R. WARE, JR., U. S. N.

Who fired the first shot in our war with Germany which sank a German submarine that attempted to attack the S. S. Mongolia, an American liner, in the war zone. Lieutenant Ware was placed in charge of the gun crew on the vessel, being one of the first men to volunteer for duty. He is an authority on gunnery and engineering. He is thirty years of age and a native of Newton, Mass.



Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

**THE FIRST NAVAL RESERVE UNIT TO LEAVE FOR SERVICE IN THE WAR**

The First Battalion of the Naval Militia of N. Y. passing in review of Mayor Mitchell and other officials on stand at Union League Club, 39th St. and Fifth Avenue.





Copyright, Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

Top: U. S. troops guarding arms taken from aliens in the United States.

Bottom: Our jackies in war equipment.



Copyright, Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

MAJOR-GENERAL LEONARD WOOD  
Famous fighter in Spanish-American War and in Mexico.

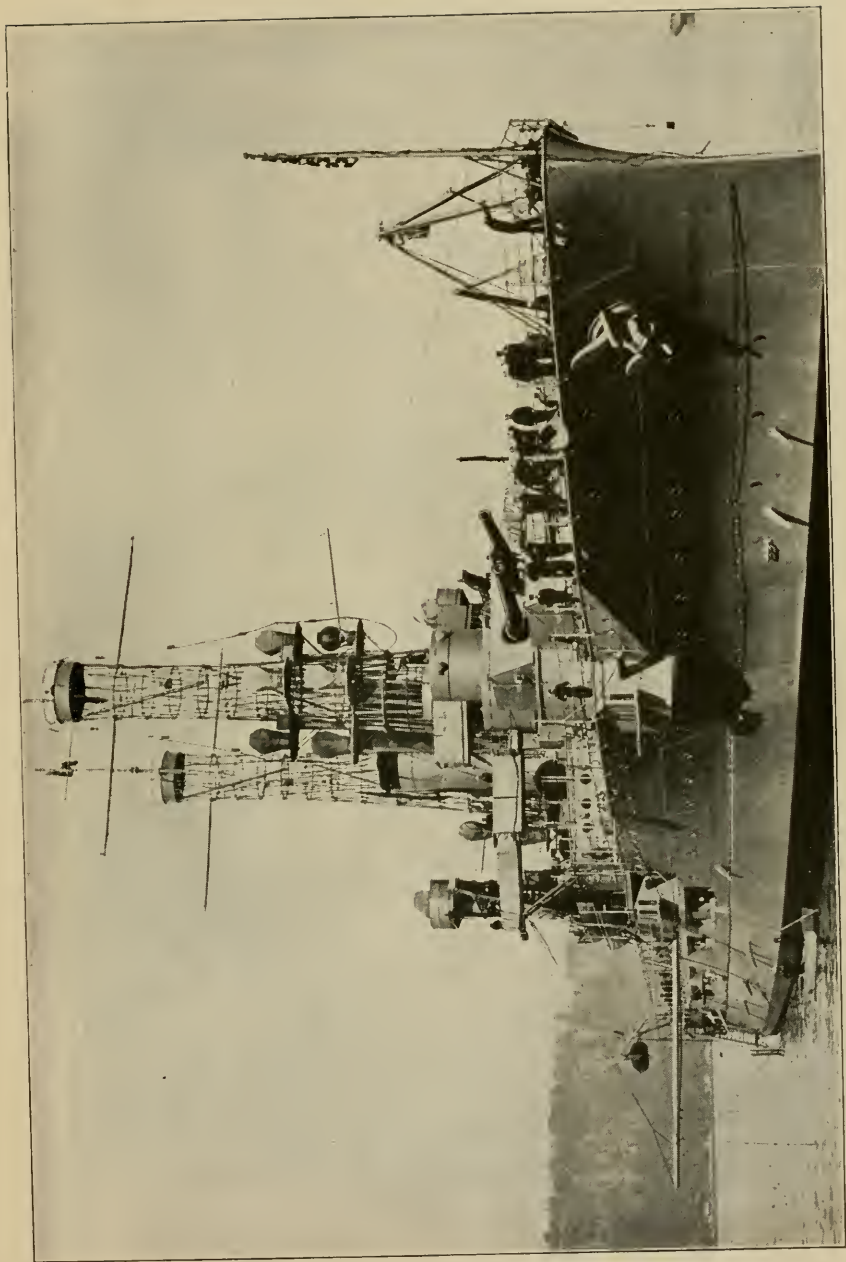


Copyright, Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

Top: Fifth Brigade, U. S. army ready for war.

Bottom: Mobilization of U. S. army soldiers from Fort Leavenworth, Kan.





Copyright, Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.  
UNITED STATES BATTLESHIP UTAH READY FOR FIGHTING





Copyright, Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

Top: Enlisted men going aboard the Louisiana—off for the war.  
Bottom: Recruits for the navy filling out applications.

We shall fight for the things we have always carried  
nearest our hearts. —*President Wilson.*

# AMERICA'S WAR FOR HUMANITY

Including a Complete History of  
the World War Up-to-date

A Thrilling Story of the most Sanguinary Struggle of all the Ages  
the Belgian Outrages, the Battles of the Marne, Aisne, Verdun,  
The Somme, Arras, Russian, Serbian and Roumanian  
Campaigns, Naval Battles, etc., etc., also Germany's  
Ruthless Submarine Warfare in which even Hos-  
pital and Relief Ships were Sunk without  
Warning, and without Thought of Help  
or Mercy for those on Board, which  
forced the Declaration of War  
by the United States

—BY—

**THOMAS H. RUSSELL, A. M., LL. D.**

Noted Historical and Military Writer, Member American Historical Association,

With Introductory Chapter containing  
**President Wilson's Great War Message**

Exciting Personal Experiences from the Bloodstained  
Battlefields of Europe

Over 100 Actual Photographs, Maps and Authentic Drawings

1522  
R8

INVOCATION OF BISHOP FALLOWS AT  
THE JOFFRE-VIVIANI MEETING,  
CHICAGO, MAY 5, 1917

"**L**ORD of our far-flung battle line, may Thy richest benediction rest upon these our distinguished comrades, who have come to us from across the sea; standing for the mighty hosts of freedom, who have been not only on their own firing line, but upon ours; for they have been fighting for us, dying for us; God grant that line may be in swift pursuit of a fast retreating enemy.

"O, God, may Thy blessing rest upon the united flags of the nations contending for justice, for right, for liberty and humanity. The tri-color of France, the shamrock and thistle and rose of the United British empire, the flag of sunny Italy, and the resurrection flags of Belgium, Roumania and Serbia, with our own Star Spangled banner forever floating with theirs.

"O, God of Hosts, we look to Thee for victory. We have the right to look, because our cause is just and in Thee, the God of nations, we put unshaking confidence, and Thou wilt not disappoint us.

"Give us speedily the victory, to be followed by an everlasting, unbroken peace of the world. Thou shalt have all the praise and glory, world without end. Amen."

JUL -9 1917

Copyright, 1917  
by L. W. Walter

©CLA 467895

201

## DEDICATED

to the two great liberty-loving peoples of North America; kindred in tongue, in free institutions, and in ideals of civic and national justice which have united them in friendship for more than a century of neighborly progress, and now more closely bind them as allies against the menace of an autocratic militarism seeking to impose its will upon the world.

In the sincere conviction that the patriotic sacrifices of the great Dominion will be matched by the unselfish devotion of the mighty Republic to its ideals and to the maintenance of its glorious traditions, so that fighting side by side for humanity, they may share the glory of the coming victory over a desperate and blood-stained despotism, and insure a righteous peace to all mankind for centuries to come.

## THE DAY OF UNIVERSAL PEACE

*"They shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning hooks: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more."—Isaiah II, 4.*

Six thousand years ago, the old Jewish prophet, Isaiah, looked down the vista of future ages and somewhere saw a vision of a beautiful world ruled by Jehovah.

A world without military schools, standing armies or navies. A world where universal peace prevailed.

Millions have looked upon Isaiah's picture and longed for it to become a reality. Will it?

Is Christianity, the gospel of peace, a failure? Will fraternalism bear no fruit?

I do not believe that universal peace is a dream. Millions are in favor of it now.

The wars of Hannibal and Alexander, of Caesar and Napoleon, were trivial in comparison with the present European war. It now looks as though millions of the world's picked men will be blotted out as the stars disappear with the morning light. Human bodies are being piled in heaps that rival the hills of northern France. Human blood flows in streams rivaling the rivers that flow peacefully to the sea. What will be the result?

The whole human race will sicken at the sight. It will think as it has never thought before. Ambitious rulers will be retired with disgrace. The people will rule. Military heroes will be stamped with the mark of Cain.

I predict that all armies will be disbanded. Battleships and torpedo boats will be dismantled and used only in protecting the commerce of the world and policing the globe. Common sense and diplomacy will rule the world.

The vision of Isaiah will come true, and the present war is bound to hasten it.

M. P. BERRY.



## P R E F A C E

With the formal declaration of war by the United States against Germany on April 6, 1917, the titanic struggle of the nations that had its inception in the summer of 1914 became, indeed, a world war. Brazil and Argentina promptly followed the lead of the American Government in taking up arms to end the ruthless destruction of the world's shipping by a war-maddened autocracy, running amuck like a mad dog, and thus every continent on the globe became directly involved.

It was no longer a European war. North and South America, Asia, Africa and Australia were all engaged in the conflict, as well as Europe. All the continents furnished belligerents and shared the sacrifices entailed by Armageddon. Not a nation escaped the consequences. Neutrals suffered with the rest of civilization.

Under these circumstances a clear review of the causes, ostensible and real, that led up to the mighty conflict, and of the destructive campaigns that preceded the final struggle, in which the United States bore an active part, is of timely value to the people of North America, on both sides of the international boundary that stretches from ocean to ocean without an armed guard or a fort, and is the best evidence that history has adduced that right-minded nations can dwell together in amity.

This volume aims at presenting such a review. It is as complete a history of the great war as is possible at this time, within the limits of a single volume. It presents the facts of the case against Germany, in all their appalling horror of cumulative crime against humanity and civilization, but it presents them without heat or exaggeration. An earnest effort has been made to anticipate the historical standpoint, to set forth the events of the war in their relative importance, and to

give the reader a comprehensive idea of the course of the struggle as it affected the various nations concerned.

Patriotic Americans owe it to themselves to become familiar with the deeds of heroism that have been performed on the European and Asiatic fields of war prior to their national decision "to take up arms against a sea of troubles, and by opposing end them." The period during which the patience of this people was exercised as national patience never was exercised before, was a period of unprecedented martial achievement and endurance. Great and protracted battles were fought; infantry charges that will be sung by poets and rehearsed by orators a hundred years hence were delivered; attacks and counter-attacks that wiped out whole regiments at a time became almost commonplace; new methods of warfare sprang into existence, only to be met by newer means of destruction or defense; individual deeds of heroism on the battlefield thrilled whole nations with pride; the soil of Belgium, France, Poland, Serbia, Roumania, Austria, Mesopotamia, Egypt, and even Palestine received a new baptism of heroic blood on historic fields.

Canadians and Australians carried their battle flags to victory in a hundred fights that will be recounted in the ends of the earth for generations to come — and when America entered the war, it was raging at its fiercest on the tremendous battle front of the western arena in Europe. Truly the story of these days will never lose its interest, told as it is in these pages while the struggle is still in progress and the issue undecided, though the tide of battle everywhere has turned in favor of the Allied cause and the doom of Prussian autocracy seems in sight. With the enormous financial, physical, and moral weight of the United States thrown into the scale for humanity, victory should not be long delayed.

T. H. R.



# CONTENTS

---

CHAPTER	PAGE
INTRODUCTION .....	13
I. CAUSES OF THE WAR.....	19
National and Race Prejudices—The Triple Alliance—The Triple Entente—Teuton vs. Slav—Influence of Russian Diplomacy—Russia vs. Austria—Control of Balkan Sea-ports—England's Commercial Supremacy Challenged by Germany—Assassination of Archduke Francis Ferdinand of Austria by a Serb.	
II. HOW WAR WAS DECLARED.....	31
Ultimatum by Austria to Serbia—War Declared by Austria—Russia Mobilizes—Germany Declares War on Russia—France and England Involved—Germans Enter Belgium—Scenes in European Capitals.	
III. ARMED FORCES INVOLVED.....	47
Strength of the Opposing Armies and Fleets—Millions of Men Under Arms—Attitude of Italy, Turkey and Greece—Organization of an Army—Heavy Artillery Used in the War.	
IV. THE NATIONS AT WAR.....	53
Rulers and Heirs Apparent of Countries Engaged—Areas and Populations—Their Exports and Imports, Principal Cities, Etc.—Europe's Map Often Changed—The Franco-Prussian War of 1870-71—Japan Enters the War.	
V. INVASION OF BELGIUM.....	69
Belgians Rush to Defense of Their Frontier—Towns Bombarded and Burned—The Defense of Liège—A German Officer's Experience—An Englishman's Story—The Terrible Krupp Siege Guns—Destruction of Louvain—Fall of Namur—German Proclamation to Inhabitants.	
VI. SURRENDER OF BRUSSELS.....	91
Belgian Capital Occupied by the Germans Without Bloodshed—Important Part Played by American Minister Brand Whitlock—March of the Kaiser's Troops Through the City—Belgian Forces Retreat to Antwerp—Zeppelin Attacks on Antwerp—Dinant and Termonde Fall.	

# CONTENTS

CHAPTER	PAGE
<b>VII. AT THE GERMAN FRONT.....</b> Remarkable Story by American War Correspondent of His Visit to General von Boehn's Headquarters in the Field—The German Fighting Machine—The General's Version of Alleged German Atrocities.	109
<b>VIII. BRITAIN RAISES AN ARMY.....</b> Earl Kitchener Appointed Secretary for War—A New Volunteer Army—Expeditionary Force Landed in France—Field Marshal Sir John French in Command—Colonies Rally to Britain's Aid—The Canadian Contingent—Indian Troops Called For—Native Princes Offer Aid.	121
<b>IX. EARLY BATTLES OF THE WAR.....</b> Belgian Resistance to the German Advance—The Fighting at Vise, Haelen, Diest, Aerschot and Tirlemont—Mons and Charleroi the First Great Battles of the War—Allies Make a Gallant Stand, but Forced to Retire Across the French Border.	137
<b>X. GERMAN ADVANCE ON PARIS.....</b> Allies Withdraw for Ten Days, Disputing Every Inch of Ground with the Kaiser's Troops—Germans Push Their Way Through France in Three Main Columns—Official Reports of the Withdrawing Engagements—Paris Almost in Sight.	161
<b>XI. BATTLE OF THE MARNE.....</b> German Plans Suddenly Changed—Direction of Advance Swings to the Southeast When Close to the French Capital—Successful Resistance by the Allies—The Prolonged Encounter at the Marne—Germans Retreat, with Allies in Hot Pursuit for Many Miles.	171
<b>XII. THE RUSSIAN CAMPAIGN.....</b> Slow Mobilization of Troops—Invasion of German and Austrian Territory—Cossacks Lead the Van—Early Successes in East Prussia—"On to Berlin"—Heavy Losses Inflicted on Austrians—German Troops Rushed to the Defense of the Eastern Territory.	192
<b>XIII. THE AUSTRO-SERVIAN CAMPAIGN.....</b> Declaration of War by Austria—Bombardment of Belgrade—Servian Capital Removed—Seasoned Soldiers of Servia Give a Good Account of Themselves—Many Indecisive Engagements—Servians in Austrian Territory.	214

# CONTENTS

11

## CHAPTER

PAGE

XIV.	STORIES FROM THE BATTLEFIELD.....	222
	Thrilling Incidents of the Great War Told by Actual Combatants—Personal Experiences from the Lips of Survivors of the World's Bloodiest Battles—Tales of Prisoners of War, Wounded Soldiers, and Refugees Rendered Homeless in the Blighted Arena of Conflict—Hand-to-Hand Fighting—Frightful Mortality Among Officers—How It Feels to Be Wounded—In the "Valley of Death"—A Belgian Boy Hero—A British Cavalry Charge—Spirit of French Women—In the Paris Military Hospital—German Uhlans as Scouts—How a German Prince Died—Fearful State of Battlefields.	
XV.	THE MYSTERY OF THE FLEETS.....	256
	Movements of British Battleships Veiled in Secrecy—German Dreadnoughts in North Sea and Baltic Ports—Activity of Smaller Craft—English Keep Trade Routes Open—Several Minor Battles at Sea.	
XVI.	SUBMARINES AND MINES.....	269
	Battleships in Constant Danger from Submerged Craft—Opinions of Admiral Sir Percy Scott—Construction of Modern Torpedoes—How Mines Are Laid and Exploded on Contact.	
XVII.	AERO-MILITARY OPERATIONS.....	275
	Aerial Attacks on Cities—Some of the Achievements of the Airmen in the Great War—Deeds of Heroism and Daring—Zeppelins in Action—Their Construction and Operation.	
XVIII.	BATTLE OF THE AISNE.....	284
	Most Prolonged Encounter in History Between Gigantic Forces—A Far-Flung Battle Line—Germans Face French and British in the Aisne Valley and Fight for Weeks—Armies Deadlocked After a Desperate and Bloody Struggle.	
XIX.	FALL OF ANTWERP.....	311
	Great Seaport of Belgium Besieged by a Large German Force—Forts Battered by Heavy Siege Guns—Final Surrender of the City—Belgian and British Defenders Escape—Exodus of Inhabitants—Germans Reach the Sea.	
XX.	THE WOUNDED AND PRISONERS.....	323
	Typical Precautions Used by the German Army—The Soldier's First-Aid Outfit—System in Hospital Arrangements—How Prisoners of War Are Treated—Regulations Are Humane and Fair to All Concerned.	

CHAPTER	PAGE
XXI. HORRORS OF THE WAR.....	331
Plan to Send Santa Claus Gifts From America to War-Stricken Children of Europe—A Widespread Response—Movement Indorsed by Press, Pulpit and Leading Citizens—Approved by Governments of Contending Nations.	
XXII. LATER EVENTS OF THE WAR.....	338
Results of the Battle of the Rivers—Fierce Fighting in Northern France—Developments on the Eastern Battle Front—The Campaign in the Pacific—Naval Activities of the Powers.	
XXIII. SINKING OF THE LUSITANIA.....	380
Torpedoed by a Submarine—Crisis in German-American Relations—The Diplomatic Exchanges.	
XXIV. A SUMMER OF SLAUGHTER.....	382
Submarine Activities—Horrors in Serbia—Bloody Battles East and West—Italy Declares War and Invades Austria—Russians Pushed Back in Galicia.	
XXV. SECOND WINTER OF THE WAR.....	397
XXVI. CLIMAX OF THE WAR.....	404
XXVII. WORLD'S GREATEST SEA FIGHT.....	420
XXVIII. BATTLES EAST AND WEST.....	428
XXIX. CONTINUATION OF WAR IN 1917.....	452
XXX. UNITED STATES ENTERS WAR.....	461

# INTRODUCTION

## PRESIDENT WILSON'S EPOCHAL ADDRESS

CALLING FOR ACTION AGAINST GERMANY, DELIVERED BY HIM TO THE CONGRESS IN  
EXTRAORDINARY SESSION, APRIL 3, 1917

"Gentlemen of the Congress: I have called the congress into extraordinary session because there are serious, very serious, choices of policy to be made, and made immediately, which it was neither right nor constitutionally permissible that I should assume the responsibility of making.

"On the 3d of February last I officially laid before you the extraordinary announcement of the imperial German government that on and after the first day of February it was its purpose to put aside all restraints of law or of humanity and use its submarines to sink every vessel that sought to approach either the ports of Great Britain and Ireland or the western coast of Europe or any of the ports controlled by the enemies of Germany within the Mediterranean.

### HOPED FOR MODIFIED WARFARE

"That had seemed to be the object of the German submarine warfare earlier in the war, but since April of last year the imperial government had somewhat restrained the commanders of its undersea craft in conformity with its promise then given to us that passenger boats should not be sunk and that due warning would be given to all other vessels which its submarines might seek to destroy, when no resistance was offered or escape attempted, and care taken that their crews were given at least a fair chance to save their lives in their open boats.

"The precautions taken were meager and haphazard enough, as was proved in distressing instance after instance in the progress of the cruel and unmanly business, but a certain degree of restraint was observed.

"The new policy has swept every restriction aside. Vessels of every kind, whatever their flag, their character, their cargo, their destination, their errand, have been ruthlessly sent to the bottom without warning and without thought of help or mercy for those on board, the vessels of friendly neutrals along with those of belligerents.

"Even hospital ships and ships carrying relief to the sorely bereaved and stricken people of Belgium, though the latter were provided with safe conduct through the proscribed area by the German government itself and were distinguished by unmistakable marks of identity, have been sunk with the same reckless lack of compassion or of principle.

### RELIED ON LAW OF NATIONS

"I was for a little while unable to believe that such things would be in fact done by any government that had hitherto subscribed to the humane practices of civilized nations.

"International law had its origin in the attempt to set up some law which would be respected and observed upon the seas, where no nation had right of dominion and where lay the free highways of the world. By painful stage after stage has that law been built up, with meager enough results, indeed, after all was accomplished that could be accomplished, but always with a clear view, at least, of what the heart and conscience of mankind demanded.

"This minimum of right the German government has swept aside under the plea of retaliation and necessity and because it had no weapons which it could use at sea except these which it is impossible to employ as it is employing them without throwing to the winds all scruples of humanity or of respect for the understandings that were supposed to underlie the intercourse of the world.



## CHALLENGE TO ALL MANKIND

"I am not now thinking of the loss of property involved, immense and serious as that is, but only of the wanton and wholesale destruction of the lives of noncombatants, men, women and children, engaged in pursuits which have always, even in the darkest periods of modern history, been deemed innocent and legitimate. Property can be paid for; the lives of peaceful and innocent people cannot be. The present German submarine warfare against commerce is a warfare against mankind.

"It is a war against all nations. American ships have been sunk, American lives taken, in ways which it has stirred us very deeply to learn of, but the ships and people of other neutral and friendly nations have been sunk and overwhelmed in the waters in the same way.

"There has been no discrimination. The challenge is to all mankind. Each nation must decide for itself how it will meet it. The choice we make for ourselves must be made with a moderation of counsel and a temperateness of judgment befitting our character and our motives as a nation. We must put excited feelings away. Our motive will not be revenge or the victorious assertion of the physical might of the nation, but only the vindication of right—of human right—of which we are only a single champion.

"When I addressed the congress on the 26th of February last I thought that it would suffice to assert our neutral rights with arms, our right to use the seas against unlawful interference, our right to keep our people safe against unlawful violence.

"But armed neutrality, it now appears, is impracticable. Because submarines are in effect outlaws when used as the German submarines have been used against merchant shipping, it is impossible to defend ships against their attacks, as the law of nations has assumed that merchantmen would defend themselves against privateers or cruisers, visible craft giving chase upon the open sea.

"It is common prudence in such circumstances, grim necessity, indeed, to endeavor to destroy them before they have shown their own intentions. They must be dealt with upon sight if dealt with at all.

"The German government denies the right of neutrals to use arms at all within the areas of the sea which it has proscribed, even in the defense of rights which no modern publicist has ever before questioned their right to defend.

"The intimation is conveyed that the armed guards which we have placed on our merchant ships will be treated as beyond the pale of law and subject to be dealt with as pirates would be. Armed neutrality is ineffectual enough at best. In such circumstances and in the face of such pretensions it is worse than ineffectual; it is likely only to produce what it was meant to prevent; it is practically certain to draw us into the war without either the rights or the effectiveness of belligerents.

"There is one choice we cannot make, we are incapable of making: We will not choose the path of submission and suffer the most sacred rights of our nation and our people to be ignored or violated. The wrongs against which we now array ourselves are no common wrongs. They cut to the very roots of human life.

## MUST ACCEPT RESPONSIBILITY

"With a profound sense of the solemn and even tragical character of the step I am taking and of the grave responsibilities which it involves, but in unhesitating obedience to what I deem my constitutional duty, I advise that the congress declare the recent course of the imperial German government to be in fact nothing less than war against the government and people of the United States; that it formally accept the status of belligerent which has thus been thrust upon it; and that it take immediate steps not only to put the

country in a more thorough state of defense but also to exert all its power and employ all its resources to bring the government of the German empire to terms and end the war.

#### COURSE WE MUST PURSUE

"What this will involve is clear. It will involve the utmost practicable co-operation in counsel and action with the governments now at war with Germany and, as incident to that, the extension to those governments of the most liberal financial credits, in order that our resources may so far as possible be added to theirs.

"It will involve the organization and mobilization of all the material resources of the country to supply the materials of war and serve the incidental needs of the nation in the most abundant and yet the most economical and efficient way possible.

"It will involve the immediate full equipment of the navy in all respects, but particularly in supplying it with the best means of dealing with the enemy's submarines.

#### ARMY OF 500,000 MEN

"It will involve the immediate addition to the armed force of the United States already provided for by law in case of war at least 500,000 men, who should, in my opinion, be chosen upon the principal of universal liability to service, and also the authorization of subsequent additional increments of equal force so soon as they may be needed and can be handled in training.

"It will involve also, of course, the granting of adequate credits to the government, sustained, I hope, so far as they can equitably be sustained by the present generation, by well conceived taxation.

"I say sustained so far as may be equitably by taxation because it seems to me that it would be most unwise to base the credits which will now be necessary entirely on money borrowed. It is our duty, I most respectfully urge, to protect our people, so far as we may, against the very serious hardships and evils which would be likely to arise out of the inflation which would be produced by vast loans.

#### MUST SUPPLY THE ALLIES

"In carrying out the measures by which these things are to be accomplished we should keep constantly in mind the wisdom of interfering as little as possible in our own preparation and in the equipment of our own military forces with the duty—for it will be a very practical duty—of supplying the nations already at war with Germany with the materials which they can obtain only from us or by our assistance. They are in the field, and we should help them in every way to be effective there.

"I shall take the liberty of suggesting, through the several executive departments of the government, for the consideration of your committees, measures for the accomplishment of the several objects I have mentioned. I hope that it will be your pleasure to deal with them as having been framed after very careful thought by the branch of the government upon which the responsibility of conducting the war and safeguarding the nation will most directly fall.

#### SEEKS FREEDOM OF WORLD

"While we do these things, these deeply momentous things, let us be very clear, and make very clear to all the world, what our motives and our objects are. My own thought has not been driven from its habitual and normal course by the unhappy events of the last months, and I do not believe that the thought of the nation has been altered or clouded by them.

"I have exactly the same things in mind now that I had in mind when I addressed the senate on the twenty-second of January last; the same that I had in mind when I addressed the congress on the third of February and on the twenty-sixth of February.



"Our object now, as then, is to vindicate the principles of peace and justice in the life of the world as against selfish and autocratic power and to set up amongst the really free and self-governed peoples of the world such a concert of purpose and of action as will henceforth insure the observance of those principles.

"Neutrality is no longer feasible or desirable where the peace of the world is involved and the freedom of its peoples, and the menace to that peace and freedom lies in the existence of autocratic governments backed by organized force which is controlled wholly by their will—not by the will of their people.

"We have seen the last of neutrality in such circumstances. We are at the beginning of an age in which it will be insisted that the same standards of conduct and of responsibility for wrong done shall be observed among nations and their governments that are observed among the individual citizens of civilized states.

#### NO QUARREL WITH GERMANS

"We have no quarrel with the German people. We have no feeling towards them but one of sympathy and friendship. It was not upon their impulse that their government acted in entering this war. It was not with their previous knowledge or approval. It was a war determined upon as wars used to be determined upon in the old, unhappy days when peoples were nowhere consulted by their rulers and wars were provoked and waged in the interest of dynasties or of little groups of ambitious men who were accustomed to use their fellow-men as pawns and tools.

"Self-governed nations do not fill their neighbor states with spies or set the course of intrigue to bring about some critical posture of affairs which will give them an opportunity to strike and make conquest.

"Such designs can be successfully worked out only under cover and where no one has the right to ask questions. Cunningly contrived plans of deception or aggression, carried, it may be, from generation to generation, can be worked out and kept from the light only within the privacy of courts or behind the carefully guarded confidences of a narrow and privileged class. They are happily impossible where public opinion commands and insists upon full information concerning all the nation's affairs.

#### MENACE OF INTRIGUES

"A steadfast concert for peace can never be maintained except by a partnership of democratic nations. No autocratic government could be trusted to keep faith within or observe its covenants. It must be a league of honor, a partnership of opinion.

"Intrigue would eat its vitals away; the plottings of inner circles who could plan what they would and give account to no one, would be a corruption seated at its very heart.

"Only free peoples can hold their purpose and their honor steady to a common end and prefer the interest of mankind to any narrow interest of their own.

#### WELCOME TO FREE RUSSIA

"Does not every American feel that assurance has been added to our hope for the future peace of the world by the wonderful and heartening things that have been happening within the last few weeks in Russia?

"Russia was known by those who knew it best to have been always in fact democratic at heart in all the vital habits of her thought, in all the intimate relationships of her people that spoke their natural instinct, their habitual attitude toward life. The autocracy that crowned the summit of her political structure, as long as it had stood and terrible as was the reality of its power, was not in fact Russian in origin, character or purpose; and now it has been

shaken off and the great, generous Russian people have added in all their native majesty and might to the forces that are fighting for freedom in the world, for justice, and for peace. Here is a fit partner for a league of honor.

"One of the things that has served to convince us that the Prussian autocracy was not and could never be our friend is that from the very outset of the present war it has filled our unsuspecting communities and even our offices of government with spies and set criminal intrigues everywhere afoot against our national unity of counsel, our peace within and without, our industries, and our commerce.

"Indeed, it is now evident that its spies were here even before the war began, and it is unhappily not a matter of conjecture, but a fact proved in our courts of justice, that the intrigues which have more than once come perilously near to disturbing the peace and dislocating the industries of the country have been carried on at the instigation, with the support, and even under the personal direction of official agents of the imperial government accredited to the government of the United States.

#### SOUGHT TO IGNORE PLOTS

"Even in checking these things and trying to extirpate them we have sought to put the most generous interpretation possible upon them because we knew that their source lay not in any hostile feeling or purpose of the German people towards us (who were, no doubt, as ignorant of them as we ourselves were) but only in the selfish designs of a government that did what it pleased and told its people nothing.

"But they played their part in serving to convince us at last that that government entertains no real friendship for us and means to act against our peace and security at its convenience. That it means to stir up enemies against us at our very doors the intercepted note to the German minister at Mexico City is eloquent evidence.

#### FIGHT FOR HUMAN RIGHTS

"We are accepting this challenge of hostile purpose because we know that in such a government, following such methods, we can never have a friend, and that in the presence of its organized power, always lying in wait to accomplish we know not what purpose, there can be no assured security for the democratic governments of the world.

"We are now about to accept gage of battle with this natural foe to liberty and shall, if necessary, spend the whole force of the nation to check and nullify its pretensions and its power. We are glad, now that we see the facts with no veil of false pretense about them, to fight thus for the ultimate peace of the world and for the liberation of its people, the German people included; for the rights of nations, great and small; the privilege of men everywhere to choose their way of life and of obedience.

#### SEEK NO SELFISH ENDS

"The world must be made safe for democracy. Its peace must be planted upon the tested foundations of political liberty. We have no selfish ends to serve. We desire no conquest, no dominion. We seek no indemnities for ourselves, no material compensation for the sacrifices we shall freely make. We are but one of the champions of the right of mankind. We shall be satisfied when those rights have been made as secure as the faith and the freedom of nations can make them.

"Just because we fight without rancor and without selfish object, seeking nothing for ourselves but what we shall wish to share with all free peoples, we shall, I feel confident, conduct our operations as belligerents without passion and ourselves observe with proud punctilio the principles of right and of fair play we profess to be fighting for.

## SILENT AS TO AUSTRIA

"I have said nothing of the governments allied with the imperial German government because they have not made war upon us or challenged us to defend our right and our honor.

"The Austro-Hungarian government has, indeed, avowed its unqualified indorsement and acceptance of the reckless and lawless submarine warfare adopted now without disguise by the imperial German government, and it has therefore not been possible for this government to receive Count Tarnowski, the ambassador recently accredited to this government by the imperial and royal government of Austria-Hungary; but that government has not actually engaged in warfare against citizens of the United States on the seas.

"On these premises I take the liberty, for the present at least, of postponing a discussion of our relations with the authorities at Vienna. We enter this war only where we are clearly forced into it because there are no other means of defending our rights.

"It will be all the easier for us to conduct ourselves as belligerents in a high spirit of right and fairness because we act without animus, not in enmity towards a people or with the desire to bring any injury or disadvantage upon them, but only in armed opposition to an irresponsible government which has thrown aside all considerations of humanity and of right and is running amuck.

## GERMANS IN AMERICA

"We are, let me say again, the sincere friends of the German people, and shall desire nothing so much as the early reestablishment of intimate relations of mutual advantage between us, however hard it may be for them, for the time being, to believe that this is spoken from our hearts.

"We have borne with their present government through all these bitter months because of that friendship, exercising a patience and forbearance which would otherwise have been impossible.

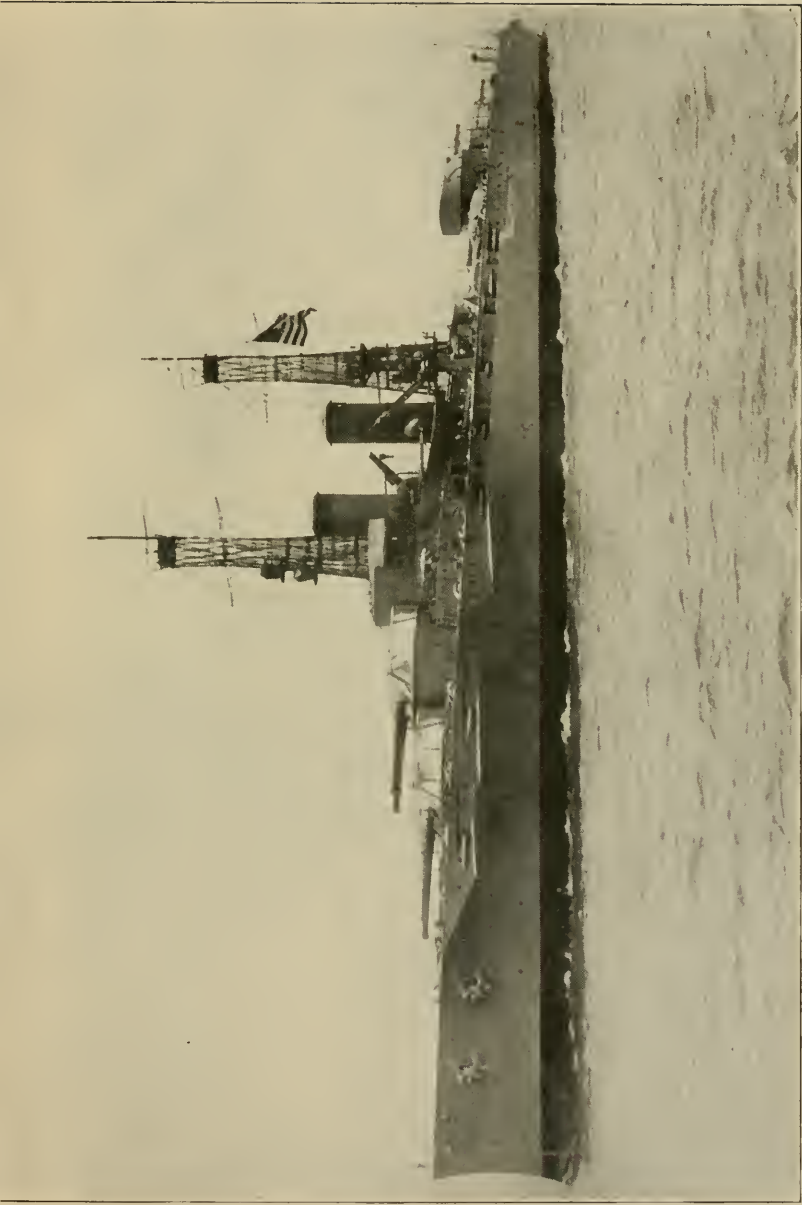
"We shall, happily, still have an opportunity to prove that friendship in our daily attitude and actions towards the millions of men and women of German birth and native sympathy who live amongst us and share our life, and we shall be proud to prove it towards all who are in fact loyal to their neighbors and to the government in the hour of test. They are, most of them, as true and loyal Americans as if they had never known any other fealty or allegiance. They will be prompt to stand with us in rebuking and restraining the few who may be of a different mind and purpose. If there should be disloyalty it will be dealt with with a firm hand of stern repression; but if it lifts its head at all it will lift it only here and there and without countenance except from a lawless and malignant few.

## CIVILIZATION IN BALANCE

"It is a distressing and oppressive duty, gentlemen of the congress, which I have performed in thus addressing you. There are, it may be, many months of fiery trial and sacrifice ahead of us. It is a fearful thing to lead this great peaceful people into war, into the most terrible and disastrous of all wars, civilization itself seeming to be in the balance.

"But the right is more precious than peace, and we shall fight for the things which we have always carried nearest our hearts—for democracy, for the right of those who submit to authority to have a voice in their own governments, for the rights and liberties of small nations, for a universal dominion of right by such a concert of free peoples as shall bring peace and safety to all nations and make the world itself at last free.

"To such a task we can dedicate our lives and our fortunes, everything that we are and everything that we have, with the pride of those who know that the day has come when America is privileged to spend her blood and her might for the principles that gave her birth and happiness and the peace which she has treasured. God helping her, she can do no other."



Copyright, Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

THE NEW UNITED STATES BATTLESHIP TEXAS  
Leaving Newport News, Va., for active duty.





Copyright, Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

Loading transport at New Orleans, with munitions of war, including 900 marines, before leaving for service "some-  
where at the front."



Copyright, Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

American surgeons tending wounded. Top shows surgeon dressing wounded enemy.

Bottom shows surgeon cutting out bullet from arm of wounded soldier.



Copyright, Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

Top: United States Warship North Dakota.

Bottom: New type of rapid-firing machine gun used by the United States Army.







Copyright, International News Service.

Top: Boatload of "jackies" off for landing to establish camp.

Copyright, Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

Bottom: United States sea fighters in battle line.



Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

FIRST PHOTOS OF SOME OF THE LEADERS WHO HELPED MAKE RUSSIA A REPUBLIC  
Revolutionary soldiers with red flag bearing the inscription, "down with the Monarchy and Long Live Democracy;  
Long Live the Republic."





Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

#### FRENCH COMMISSION ARRIVES IN WASHINGTON FOR WAR CONFERENCE

Left to right, in center: Robert Lansing, Secretary of State; Marshal Joseph Joffre, and ex-Premier Rene Viviani. Photograph taken just after leaving the "Mayflower" and landing at the Navy Yard. All along the route, from the Navy Yard to their official residence, they were greeted by cheers and applause. As the commission stepped ashore they were welcomed by the official delegation, headed by Secretary of State Lansing.

## CHAPTER I

### CAUSES OF THE WAR

*National and Race Prejudices—The Triple Alliance—The Triple Entente—Teuton vs. Slav—Influence of Russian Diplomacy—Russia vs. Austria—Control of Balkan Seaports—England's Commercial Supremacy Challenged by Germany—Assassination of Archduke Francis Ferdinand of Austria by a Serb.*

**W**ITHIN the space of less than a week from August 1, 1914, five of the six "great powers" of Europe became involved in a war that quickly developed into the greatest and most sanguinary struggle of all time. The European conflagration, long foreseen by statesmen and diplomats, and dreaded of all alike, had broken out.

Beginning with the thunder of Austrian guns at Belgrade, the reverberations of war were heard in every capital of the Old World. Austria's declaration of war against Serbia was followed by the alignment of Germany with its Teuton neighbor against the forces of Russia, France and England. Italy alone, of the six great powers, declined to align itself with its formal allies and made a determined effort at the outset to maintain its neutrality.

Soon the highways of Europe resounded with the hoofbeats and the tramp of marching hosts, with the rattle of arms and the rumble of artillery. Of such a war, once begun, no man could predict the end. But the world realized that it was a catastrophe of unparalleled proportions, a failure of civilization in its stronghold, a disaster to humanity.

For more than forty years the great powers of Europe had been at peace with one another. Though war had threatened now and then, diplomacy had avoided the actual outbreak. But that the dreaded conflict was inevitable had long been



recognized. For its coming immense armaments had been prepared, until the burdens of taxation laid upon the people had become in themselves a source of danger. But behind it all lay the sinister influence of the "junker" element of Germany—the military party, swollen with pride in the development of the German army by more than forty years of preparation for conflict, and the naval party, eager for "der Tag" which should bring a trial of the new German navy against the battle fleets of an enemy. Fostering and encouraging these militaristic sentiments was the growing desire of Germany for "a place in the sun," which was translatable only as a desire for world domination. Greater and wider markets for German commerce were urgently demanded, and visions of Germany as mistress of the seas, with a great colonial empire, and of the Kaiser as the undisputed military overlord of Europe, already filled and fired the Teuton imagination.

The political alignment of the great powers prior to the war was as follows: On the one side was the Triple Alliance, including Germany, Austria-Hungary, and Italy; while on the other was the Triple Entente, comprising Great Britain, France and Russia. As the event proved, the uncertain element in this line-up was Italy, which had a real grievance against Austria in the latter's possession of the former Italian territory known as the Trentino, and which was not consulted by Germany and Austria prior to the outbreak of hostilities. She therefore declined to enter the war as a member of the Triple Alliance, but was later found in the field against Austria, and thenceforth rendered powerful aid to the cause of "the Allies," as the members of the Triple Entente and their supporters soon came to be known.

It was in the Balkans, long regarded as the zone of danger to European peace, that the war-clouds gathered and darkened rapidly. For generations Austria and Russia had struggled diplomatically for the control of Balkan seaports, with the Balkan states acting as buffers in the diplomatic strife. Servia acted as a bar to Austria's commercial route to the *Ægean*, by way of the Sanjak of Novi Bazar to Saloniki, while Russia was Servia's great ally and stood stoutly behind the little Slav kingdom in its opposition to Austrian aggression.

## AMBITIONS OF SERVIA

Then came the recent Balkan Wars, and their outcome was viewed with alarm. Austria uneasily watched the approach of Serbia to the Adriatic and the *Ægean*. The formation of the new new autonomous state of Albania, between Serbia and the Adriatic, was all that prevented Austria from attacking Serbia during that crisis. The terms of peace left the situation, as it concerned Austria and Russia, practically as it had been. Austria made no further progress toward the sea, and Russia remained the ally of Serbia. Bulgaria had failed in its efforts to reach Salonica.

At this stage another element exerted its influence. Serbia awoke to the possibility of a Greater Serbia. An Empire of the Slavs had long been dreamed of. In Austria-Hungary itself millions of Slavs were dreaming of it and awaiting the disruption of Austria-Hungary, held together now, as they argue, only by the indomitable will of the old Emperor, Franz Joseph. The hatred between the Slavs and the Teutonic Austrians is intense. The annexation by Austria of Bosnia and Herzegovina, in which Servians predominate, increased the Servian hatred and the indignation of the whole Slav world to the point of violence. A conflict was avoided with difficulty. These principalities had hoped to form part of a Greater Serbia. Had not Russia been exhausted by the war with Japan, Serbia would have called upon her ally and the crisis would have come then. As it was, the Balkans teemed with plots and counterplots against the Austrians, culminating in the assassination of the Arch-Duke and heir-apparent to the Austrian throne, Francis Ferdinand, known for his anti-Slav principles, and therefore feared and hated as the king to be. The assassination occurred at Serajevo in Bosnia, where Servian disaffection was seething. Austria immediately laid the crime on the Servian government.

## AUSTRIA DECLARES WAR

Failing in her peremptory demands for satisfaction, Austria declared war, July 28, 1914, apparently for revenge, but behind her righteous indignation she still held in view her

traditional ambition, a port on the Mediterranean, to be secured by the complete control of the Novi Bazar route to Salonica, a route which, besides its commercial importance, is of tremendous strategic value to the nation which commands it. The treaty of Berlin of 1878, after the Russo-Turkish War, had given Austria the military, political, and commercial control of the route within the Sanjak of Novi Bazar, then a part of Turkey.

But now, in the division of spoils following the Balkan Wars, Servia gained control of Novi Bazar, Pristina, Uskub, and Istip, or practically the entire route to a short distance north of Salonica, where the new boundaries of Greece had been extended. This meant that Austria saw herself shut out from the Sanjak, and only by the destruction and subsequent occupation of Servia could Austria regain her ascendancy over the route. Victory would mean a long step by Austria toward the sea.

#### PLOTS AND COUNTERPLOTS

The "balance of power" among European nations has hitherto been maintained because the formation of a single nation out of the Balkan States has not been possible. Although the people of these states have similar pursuits, and live much alike in all regions, they have preserved their original racial differences. A village of Albanians may be within a few miles of a village of Greeks. Yet through centuries both have remained racially distinct. Here and there the barriers have given way somewhat, but in general the races persist side by side, sometimes peaceably, more often in mutual distrust or open feud. Such division has been fostered by the great nations, and new states have been created, as recently Albania, since the formation of a great state in the Balkans by the union of all or the absorbing greatness of one, would overthrow the balance of power, and besides interpose an insurmountable obstacle between Austria and Russia, and the sea.

Thus the states have been played against each other. Sometimes the game has been one of diplomacy, or one of force, hurling the states at each other's throats. Sometimes

the game has been one of treachery and assassination. Who can surmise the intricate plots and counterplots, or the insidious influences, the fostering of hatred, the failure of hopes and ambitions, that led to the assassination at Serajevo?

#### RACE AND RELIGIOUS PREJUDICES

Religious conditions in the Balkans are as complicated as racial relations. In Bulgaria, a branch of the Bulgarian race is Mohammedan, as are half a million Turks and colonists of the Eastern lowlands. The Albanians are largely Mohammedan. The bulk of the population of the Balkans, however, professes the Greek Orthodox faith. Even more than the Mohammedan labors for the spread of Islam, all good Greek Catholics pray for the day when Constantinople, sacred city of their faith, shall be rescued from the infidel, and the cross shall again be raised over the mosque of St. Sophia. Along the western coast of the Balkan Peninsula Roman Catholics are numerous.

On the one hand pride of religion and prejudice of race, on the other mountain barriers, harbors and sounds, hill pastures and lowland plains—these are the internal conditions that have shaped the history of the Balkan states. From without the intrigues and ambitions of the great nations of Europe have played upon or profited by these conditions, and of all the complex interrelations the present war is the outcome, and Europe is aflame with a great conflagration.

#### NATIONS HURRIED INTO WAR

The continent resounds with the tread of millions of marching men, but we cannot fail to hear too the wailing and weeping of women and children. One by one the nations leaped to the struggle. Germany, striking at the heart of France, violated the neutrality of Belgium, and aroused her stubborn resistance. England, indignant at the violation of international treaties, gathered her war forces to support Belgium and her allies against the German advance, and the order went out, "Seek the enemy, and destroy him."

At the present writing, battles rage on the Russian and German frontiers. The roar of naval combat is heard in the



North Sea. Little Serbia, the cause of the mighty tumult, checks the advance of the Austrians. Italy, at first declaring her neutrality, thus breaking the Triple Alliance, watches her hereditary enemy, Austria, and is eager to avenge ancient wrongs. The Netherlands, Denmark, Sweden, Norway, and Spain hold their forces in war order, to guard their integrity. Everywhere the dark cloud of conflict spreads its terror and gloom over the land. Japan has taken the side of England and therefore that of its former enemy, Russia. The great overseas dominions of the British Empire have rallied to its support and are raising and equipping armies for the European front. In Canada, Australia, and South Africa, the loyal sons of the dominions are flocking to the flag, prepared to render a good account of themselves against the Teuton foe and to prove beyond a doubt the solidarity of the empire on which the sun never sets.

---

#### BRITISH VIEW OF THE CASE

Immediately after the general outbreak of hostilities each of the contending nations sought to lay the blame for the conflagration upon the shoulders of some other. Thus the German blamed the Russian, France and England blamed Germany, Russia blamed Austria, and each nation, in official documents promptly given to the world, endeavored to justify its course of action.

England's declaration of war followed the invasion of Belgium by German troops en route to France, and her action was upheld by the issuance of a "white book" in August, containing copies of the diplomatic correspondence and "conversations" that had passed between Sir Edward Grey, secretary of state for foreign affairs, and the chancelleries of Europe during the critical period immediately preceding the conflict.

The British view of the immediate causes of war was summarized on September 12 by the Right Hon. Frederick Edwin Smith, K. C., M. P., organizer and director of the English official press bureau, in a statement as follows:

"The British white book, embracing facts, not arguments, states our whole case. The neutrality of Belgium was violated

by Germany, which, equally with France and England, had guaranteed it. This was done deliberately, without an atom of provocation. Hence our first and immediate occasion for going to war. Germany had no quarrel with Belgium, France or England, but made preparations to attack France through Luxemburg and Belgium and proposed to us that we stand aside and see Belgian neutrality violated and France crushed for no reason except to gratify German lust for power.

#### ENGLAND FIGHTS FOR HER EXISTENCE

“Belgium was invaded simply because it happened to bar the shortest road to Paris. Before Germany sent a man across the frontier it knew that if it violated Belgian neutrality England would enter the field. Even when it was evident to the whole of Europe that Germany had embarked on the enterprise for which it had been preparing for years, France, the first object of attack, kept its troops some miles from the frontier and waited for the Germans to take the first step in a war of pure aggression. Germany took advantage of this reluctance and pushed forward immense masses of troops into Belgium and France.

“We are fighting not only to fulfill our obligations to Belgium, but to preserve our own liberty and existence as a nation. Had Germany found us willing accomplices in her infamous scheme, had Belgium in the face of Germany’s immense military power accepted the inevitable and made no resistance, France would or might be subdued. While we sat in disgraceful safety, the French colonies and fleet would be passed to the victors, who, established within thirty miles of the English coast, would possess with their allies a fleet and armies numerically larger than ours. Then when the time came for our downfall we should meet our fate without a friend in the world.

“Even in the short time since the breaking out of the war Germany has made it plain that its main object is the destruction of the British army, fleet and empire. Within the last few days Germany has suggested to France that it might secure peace on easy terms if it would join Germany in subduing Great Britain. The instant response to that attempt was the conclusion of an arrangement between France, Russia and

Great Britain binding themselves not to make terms with the enemy except by mutual agreement.

"If any one doubts the statement that the real object of the war is the destruction of British power let him read the works of German leaders of thought, such as Reitschke and Bernhardi. These writers made no secret of their teachings or of the intentions of their country. But until the Kaiser gave the signal and moved his legions to attack Belgium, France and Russia, only the most thoughtful and far-seeing Englishmen believed that Germany could seriously contemplate a crime so colossal simply to gratify an inordinate ambition.

#### POINTS TO GREY'S ATTITUDE

"Americans and other neutrals who take the trouble to read the white book must be driven to the conclusion that any statesman less patient than Sir Edward Grey and less determined to spare no efforts to maintain peace at any but a dishonorable price would have acceded to the request of the Russian prime minister and declared that Britain would support Russia and France with all its resources should Austria and Germany persist in a course which must bring about a general conflagration.

"So far from doing this, Sir Edward Grey told Herr Bethmann-Hollweg that if the German government would make any reasonable proposals for the preservation of peace he would use his personal influence to persuade Russia and France to accept them, and if the powers refused 'the British government would have nothing more to do with the consequences.'

"Germany's reply was to make a proposal, dishonoring to us, that we should stand aside while it invaded Belgium and crushed France, and then, when this offer was rejected with scorn, it moved its armies across the frontier. To-day the world is told that Germany was forced into war by rivals of her progress in the arts of peace. Seeking peace, we have been driven into war in defense of principles which, if they are no longer to be recognized, would make Europe a congeries of brigand nations recognizing might as the only right.

"The justice of our cause has set the whole empire aflame with patriotism and raised in our great colonies and in India,

with its 300,000,000 people of different races and languages, a unity and enthusiasm which will make our ultimate victory assured."

---

A WAR FOR COMMERCIAL SUPREMACY—ENGLAND VS. GERMANY

By Guglielmo Ferrero, the noted Italian Historian and Authority on Militarism.

In this gigantic war the combatants are actuated by different motives and for different interests. Each is acting with different means of offense and defense: each, in a word, occupies a position peculiar to itself.

Let us examine this important point: For what reason has England taken the field on the side of France?

In the speech he delivered in the house of commons on August 3, Sir Edward Grey clearly defined England's position among the belligerents. It was then still free from any obligations. The French and English general staffs had for some time been working out the plans of the eventual military operations that the two governments might have to carry out, if they should some day find themselves fighting side by side.

Everything was ready for an offensive and defensive alliance; but the two governments had not yet assumed reciprocal obligations of any kind.

On the evening of August 3, England could still declare itself neutral, and it would seem that Germany was still that very day trying to persuade it not to take up arms.

For what reason did England declare war on Germany on the day following?

The dominant reason was Belgium. On that very day the chancellor of the German empire announced in the Reichstag "that Germany would violate the neutrality of Belgium, because he who is fighting cannot heed international law." And the next day England sent to Germany the ultimatum: "Respect Belgium or go to war."



## AMERICANS IN EUROPE

*Thousands Stranded in Belligerent Countries When War Came—General Shortage of Funds—Much Suffering and Hardship—Exciting Scenes in London, Paris and Berlin—Uncle Sam Sends Relief Ships With Funds.*

THE outbreak of war at the beginning of the month of August found Europe literally overrun, as usual at that season, by thousands of American tourists—gay and festive throngs of sightseers in all the show-places of the Continent and in every nook and corner of the British Isles.

Suddenly as a thunderclap from a clear sky came the shock of war! London, Paris, Berlin, Vienna, Munich, Geneva, and all the host of minor cities, towns and villages frequented by American visitors in the tourist season, shut up shop! All means of transportation were closed to civilians; gold and silver money became scarce because needed for war, and went to a premium; hotels closed down for lack of the male help that had been called to the colors; transatlantic travel was paralyzed; travelers' checks and letters of credit lost their value; all foreigners were regarded with suspicion in a frenzied hunt for spies; and all Americans in Europe found themselves in a pandemonium of military activity in which they were given plainly to understand that their room was preferred to their company.

The change came in a day and dated from August 1, when hitherto courteous and even obsequious European hotel, inn and shop keepers were transformed into monuments of anxiety and suspicion. From being honored and much-sought visitors in Continental countries, Americans found themselves of a sudden in the rôle of unwelcome guests. For awhile many

thousands of them were absolutely helpless and their plight was pitiable in the extreme. The universal problem among them all was, how to get home. The ordinary means were useless.

"America must help her stranded children," wrote Sterling Heilig from neutral Switzerland on August 16. "A hundred thousand of us are in debt, difficulty, humiliation and danger."

#### GOLD OBTAINED WITH DIFFICULTY

"For a few days," said Charles A. Conant, the New York banker, "it looked as though the entire machinery of banking and credit built up in Europe during forty years of peace had been brought to a standstill, and as if the American market would be compelled also to suspend its activities.

"The New York Stock Exchange, under a torrent of orders from Europe to sell American securities held abroad, remained open until the close of business on Thursday, July 30, but was closed the next morning after a consultation between the governing board and big banking interests. In the meantime, the usual mechanism of foreign exchange had broken down, partly because shipping was threatened by the war, and insurance rates for the shipment of gold had become prohibitive. Even such credits as were possessed by American banks abroad were in a state of suspense and drafts on England, which should have been sold at the highest at \$4.90 to the pound sterling, rose to \$5.25 and even in some cases to \$6.

"The seriousness of the situation abroad was manifested by almost every cable message which came from the great centers of finance—London, Paris, Berlin, Amsterdam, Brussels and Petrograd. The French and English governments promptly declared a *moratorium*, which means that the holder of documentary obligations, like bills of exchange and promissory notes, cannot enforce payment according to the terms of the obligation until the delay granted has expired. In France, the payment of specie at the Bank of France was promptly suspended; in Germany, gold was gotten only with difficulty and in trifling amounts from any of the banks; in Belgium specie suspension occurred, and in Holland similar action was accompanied by authority to the National Bank of the Nether-

lands to issue additional notes to the amount of \$200,000,000. In France, also, the limit of circulation of the Bank of France was increased at one jump from \$1,300,000,000 to \$2,300,000,000.

“Even the rock-ribbed Bank of England was subjected to a run for gold in exchange for its notes, which cut down its reserve by more than \$50,000,000 in less than a week and led ultimately to the suspension of the bank act of 1844, which limits the amount of notes that can be issued without gold. London has long prided herself on being the clearing-house of the world, and on being the only market where obligations were payable promptly for their full value in gold. The very fact, however, that the London market was a clearing-house for obligations from all over the European continent and from Africa, Asia, and Latin America, which could not be collected promptly, naturally deprived her of the means of making her usual settlements and made it necessary to allow a breathing-spell in order to reconstruct the machinery of exchange.”

#### DETAINED IN EUROPEAN CITIES

Just how many American citizens were caught in Europe by the war and suffered from the war conditions of finance and travel, will probably never be known. Millionaires found their paper money and their wealth of no avail; some were only too glad to return to the United States in the steerage of second-class ships. A Vanderbilt and four hundred other wealthy Americans esteemed themselves fortunate when they succeeded in chartering a small Italian steamer, the *Principe di Udini*, in which to sail from Genoa for home. Others, by the thousands, were detained in European capitals for several weeks before the situation was relieved and they were able to secure passage across the Atlantic.

In all the capitals and at various other points congested by the stranded visitors, American committees were formed to aid their compatriots in every way possible. These committees, amid exciting scenes in London, Paris, Berlin and elsewhere, did an immense amount of good in straightening out the situation and earned the gratitude of thousands whose immediate wants they relieved.

## CHAPTER II

### HOW WAR WAS DECLARED

*Ultimatum by Austria to Serbia—War Declared by Austria—Russia Mobilizes—Germany Declares War on Russia August 1—France and England Involved—Germans Enter Belgium—Scenes in European Capitals.*

ON SUNDAY, June 28, 1914, a Servian student named Prinzep shot and killed the Archduke Francis Ferdinand, heir to the thrones of Austria-Hungary, and his morganatic wife, the Duchess of Hohenberg, in the streets of Serajevo, a town in Bosnia which the royal couple were visiting.

Nearly four weeks later, on July 23, the Austro-Hungarian government, fixing responsibility for the assassination upon Servian intrigues, presented to Servia a number of demands which formed a very drastic ultimatum, requiring compliance within forty-eight hours, with the alternative of war. Servia was required to condemn "the propaganda directed against Austria" and to take proceedings against all accessories to the plot against the Archduke Francis Ferdinand who were in Servia. Austrian delegates were to supervise the proceedings, and Servia was also to arrest certain Servian officials whose guilt was alleged. These exorbitant conditions made it quite obvious that no concessions on Servia's part would be accepted. It was a plain prelude to war.

Nevertheless, a virtual acceptance by Servia followed. Acting on the advice of Russia, Servia acceded to all that was required of her, making only two reservations of the most reasonable character. These reservations were found enough to serve as an excuse for war. Austria at once declared herself dissatisfied and though the actual declaration of war was



delayed for a brief period, a state of war practically existed between the two countries from Saturday evening, July 25.

#### EFFORTS TO LOCALIZE THE WAR

Then began efforts on the part of Great Britain to localize the war. Sir Edward Grey, the able foreign secretary in Mr. Asquith's cabinet, repeated solemn warnings in every chancellery of Europe. According to the English "white book," the very day that he was notified of the violent tone of Austria's note to Servia—the day it was presented—he warned the Austrian Ambassador in London that if as many as four of the Great Powers of Europe were to engage in war, it would involve the expenditure of such a vast sum of money and such interference with trade, that a complete collapse of European credit and industry would follow. The reply of Russia to this warning was quite conciliatory. The Russian foreign minister, M. Sazonoff, assured the British minister that Russia had no aggressive intentions, and would take no action unless forced. Austria's action, M. Sazonoff added, in reality aimed at overthrowing Russia's influence in the Balkans.

Thus, on Monday, July 27, Sir Edward Grey was able to state in the House of Commons that his suggestion of a joint conference, composed of the Ambassadors of Germany, France and Italy, and himself, with a view to mediation between Austria and Russia, had been accepted by all except Germany, which power had expressed its concurrence with the plan in principle, but opposed the details on the ground that there was a prospect of direct "conversations" (diplomatic exchanges) between Austria and Russia. This statement was believed in England to lack sincerity. On that Monday afternoon the Russian Ambassador at Vienna warned Austria that Russia would not give way and expressed his hope that some arrangement might be arrived at before Servia was invaded.

Austria's reply came next day in the shape of a formal declaration of war against Servia.

#### GERMANY'S ATTITUDE PRO-AUSTRIAN

On July 30 Sir M. de Bunsen, British Ambassador at Vienna, made the following statement to Sir Edward Grey regarding the attitude of Germany in the crisis:

"Although I am not able to verify it, I have private information that the German Ambassador (at Vienna) knew the text of the Austrian ultimatum to Servia before it was dispatched, and telegraphed it to the German Emperor. I know from the German Ambassador himself that he endorses every line of it."

Naturally enough the Russian foreign minister complained that "conversations" with Austria were useless in the face of such facts. Russia then declared that her forces would be mobilized the day that Austria crossed the Servian frontier. The attitude of Germany at once stiffened and it became evident that Germany meant to regard even the partial mobilization of Russia as a ground for war, not only against Russia, but also against the latter's ally, France.

In vain Russia protested that her partial mobilization was merely a precaution. In vain did the Czar himself offer to give his word that no use would be made of any of his forces. Germany was aware, as subsequent facts have proved, that her own state of mobilization was very much further advanced than that of Russia.

#### GERMAN ULTIMATUM TO RUSSIA

By Friday, July 31, Germany was ready for the fray and a final ultimatum to St. Petersburg was launched. On the same day Russia declared war against Austria. By six o'clock on Saturday evening, August 1, war between Germany and Russia began, when Germany dismissed the Russian Ambassador, and by Sunday morning Germany was invading France. The next day, August 3, the German Ambassador left Paris and the French Ambassador at Berlin was ordered to demand his passports.

At this point Great Britain passed from the position of general peacemaker to that of a principal. In the House of Commons on Monday, August 3, Sir Edward Grey stated that the question whether Austria or Russia should dominate the Southern Slav races was no concern of England, nor was she bound by any secret alliance to France. She was absolutely free to choose her course with regard to the crisis which had overtaken her. But there were two cardinal points in the situa-

tion which had arisen which ultimately concerned Great Britain. The first essential feature of British diplomacy, said Sir Edward, was that France should not be brought into such a condition in Europe that she became a species of vassal state to Germany. On the morning of July 31, therefore, he had informed the German Ambassador that if the efforts to maintain peace failed and France became involved Great Britain would be drawn into the conflict.

In his speech of August 3 the British foreign minister also stated that he had given France on the previous day the written assurance that if the German fleet came into the English Channel or through the North Sea to assail her, the British fleet would protect her to the uttermost.

#### TO PROTECT BELGIAN AUTONOMY

On the same afternoon, in the same place, Sir Edward Grey reiterated the other dominant principle of British foreign policy—that England can never look with indifference on the seizure by a great continental power of any portion of Belgium and Holland. More than a hundred years ago it was declared by Napoleon, who was a master of political geography, that Antwerp was “a pistol leveled at the head of London.”

When on July 31 the British foreign minister inquired by telegraph both at Paris and Berlin whether the two governments would engage to respect the neutrality of Belgium, France replied with an assurance that she was resolved to do so unless compelled to act otherwise by reason of the violation of Belgium's neutrality at the hands of another power. The German secretary of state, Herr von Jagow, replied that he could give no such assurance until he had consulted the Emperor and Chancellor, and doubted whether he could give any answer without revealing the German plan of campaign. He furthermore alleged the commission of hostile acts by Belgium.

Developments quickly followed. The German government proposed that Belgium should grant its armies free passage through Belgian territory. The proposal was accompanied by an intimation that Belgium would be crushed out of existence if it refused to comply. In fact, it was an ultimatum presented

at 7 o'clock on Sunday evening, August 2, to expire within twelve hours.

Then came Sir Edward Grey's speech in parliament on August 3, when it was fully realized that Germany and England were on the verge of war. What followed was related in the House of Commons next day.

#### SCENES IN PARLIAMENT

Germany's reply to the speech by Sir Edward Grey, the British foreign secretary, indicating the attitude of Great Britain in regard to the contemplated violation of Belgian territory by Germany was a second ultimatum from Berlin to Brussels, saying Germany was prepared to carry through her plans by force of arms if necessary.

The British government was officially informed by Belgium on August 4 that German troops had invaded Belgium and that the violation of that country's neutrality, which the British foreign secretary had intimated must be followed by action on the part of the British, had become an accomplished fact.

Definite announcement of Great Britain's intentions under these circumstances was expected in the house of commons that afternoon.

#### TELEGRAM SENT TO BERLIN

On the assembly of the house the premier, Mr. Asquith, said that a telegram had been sent early in the morning to Sir Edward Goschen, British ambassador in Berlin, to the following effect:

"The king of the Belgians has appealed to His Britannic Majesty's government for diplomatic intervention on behalf of Belgium. The British government is also informed that the German government has delivered to the Belgian government a note proposing friendly neutrality pending a free passage of German troops through Belgium and promising to maintain the independence and integrity of the kingdom and its possessions on the conclusion of peace, threatening in case of refusal to treat Belgium as an enemy."



Sir Edward Grey, the British foreign secretary, had requested an answer within twelve hours.

Premier Asquith then read a telegram from the German foreign minister, which the German ambassador in London had sent to Sir Edward Grey. It was as follows:

"Please dispel any distrust that may subsist on the part of the British government with regard to our intentions by repeating most positively the formal assurance that even in case of armed conflict with Belgium, Germany will under no pretensions whatever annex Belgian territory."

The reading of this telegram was greeted with derisive laughter by the members of the house.

Premier Asquith continued:

"We understand that Belgium categorically refused to assent to a flagrant violation of the law of nations.

"His majesty's government was bound to protest against this violation of a treaty to which Germany was a party in common with England and must request an assurance that the demand made upon Belgium by Germany be not proceeded with and that Belgium's neutrality be respected by Germany and we have asked for an immediate reply.

"We received this morning from our minister in Brussels the following telegram:

"The German minister has this morning addressed a note to the Belgian minister for foreign affairs stating that as the Belgian government has declined a well intentioned proposal submitted to it by the imperial German government the latter, deeply to its regret, will be compelled to carry out, if necessary by force of arms, the measures considered indispensable in view of the French menace.' "

#### ENGLAND AND GERMANY AT WAR

By 11 o'clock that evening England and Germany were at war. Their respective ambassadors were handed their passports and Great Britain braced herself for a conflict that was felt to threaten her very existence as a nation.

In defence of the violation of Belgian neutrality by the invasion of the little state, the Kaiser's government claimed to

have received authentic news that France meant to attack Germany through this neutral territory. But in the Reichstag on August 4 the German Chancellor, Von Bethmann-Hollweg, said:

“Gentlemen, we are now in a state of necessity, and necessity knows no law! Our troops have occupied Luxemburg [an independent state] and are already on Belgian soil. Gentlemen, that is contrary to the dictates of international law. It is true that the French Government has declared at Brussels that France is willing to respect the neutrality of Belgium as long as her opponent respects it. We knew, however, that France stood ready for the invasion. France could wait, but we could not wait. A French movement upon our flank upon the lower Rhine might have been disastrous. So we were compelled to override the protest of the Luxemburg and Belgian governments. The wrong—I speak openly—that we are committing we will endeavor to make good as soon as our military goal has been reached. Anybody who is threatened, as we are threatened, and is fighting for his highest possessions, can have only one thought—how he is to hack his way through.”

---

GERMAN VERSION OF EVENTS IMMEDIATELY PRECEDING WAR WITH  
FRANCE AND RUSSIA

In an official “white book” issued by the German government, on August 4, a few hours prior to the entrance of England into the arena, responsibility for the war in which Germany, Russia and France had engaged was placed squarely upon the shoulders of the Czar.

While negotiations looking to a peaceful way out of the difficulties were pending, Russia, it was charged, invaded Germany, and a few hours later France opened hostilities.

The German Emperor, it was set forth, in response to a suggestion from London and the appeal of the Russian monarch, was using his influence at Vienna to satisfy Russia regarding the intention of Austria in Serbia, but in that very hour Russia was mobilizing her army.

After a fruitless appeal to Emperor Nicholas to abandon his warlike preparations and so avert a peril to civilization,

the German government on the afternoon of July 31 instructed its ambassador at St. Petersburg to give notice that Germany would mobilize unless Russia suspended her military measures inside of twelve hours.

At the same time France was given eighteen hours in which to declare whether she would remain neutral in a war between Russia and Germany. The white book continued as follows:

"The imperial ambassador in St. Petersburg made the communication intrusted to him to M. Sazonoff (the Russian minister of foreign affairs) at midnight on July 31. After the term set for Russia had expired without the receipt of an answer to our question, his majesty the emperor at 5 p. m. on August 1, ordered the mobilization of the whole German army and the imperial navy.

"The imperial ambassador in St. Petersburg had meanwhile received a commission to communicate to the Russian government a declaration of war in the event that the Russian government should not give a satisfactory answer within the period allotted it. But before a report of the execution of this commission had arrived Russian troops crossed our frontier on the afternoon of August 1 and advanced on German territory. From this time on Russia has furthered the war against us.

"In the meantime the imperial ambassador in Paris had placed the inquiry with which he was commissioned before the French cabinet at 7 p. m. on July 31. On August 1, at 1 o'clock in the afternoon, the French prime minister communicated an ambiguous and unsatisfactory answer, which gave no clear idea regarding the attitude of France, as the author confined himself to declaring that France would do what her interests bade her to do.

"A few hours later, at 5 p. m., the mobilization of the entire French army and navy was ordered. On the morning of the next day France opened hostilities."

#### TELEGRAMS EXCHANGED

On July 31 the Russian Emperor sent the following telegram to the German Emperor:

"I thank thee from my heart for thy mediation, which

leaves a gleam of hope that even now all may end peacefully. It is technically impossible to discontinue our military operation, which has been rendered necessary by Austrian mobilization. We are far from wishing for war, and so long as negotiations with Austria regarding Serbia continue, my troops will not undertake any provocative action.

"I give thee my word upon it and I trust with my strength in God's grace and hope for the success of thy mediation at Vienna and for our countries' and the peace of Europe.

(Signed) "THY DEVOTED NICHOLAS."

THE KAISER'S REPLY

To this the German Emperor replied:

"In answer to thy appeal to my friendship and thy prayer for my help, I undertook mediatory action between the Austro-Hungarian government and thine. While this action was in progress, thy troops were mobilized against my ally, Austria-Hungary, in consequence of which, as I have already informed thee, my mediation was rendered nearly illusory. Nevertheless, it is continued. But now I am in possession of trustworthy advices concerning the serious war preparations on my eastern frontier, as well.

"My responsibility for the safety of my empire compels me to counter-measures of defense. In my endeavors for the maintenance of the peace of the world I have gone to the extreme limit of the possible. It is not I that shall bear the responsibility for the peril which now threatens the civilized world. I lay it to thy hand to avert it, even at this moment.

"No one menaces the honor and might of Russia, which all could have waited upon the result of my mediation. The friendship for thee and thy empire bequeathed to me by my grandfather on his deathbed has always been sacred to me, and I have remained true to Russia when it was in grave distress, especially in your last war. The peace of Europe can yet be conserved by thee if Russia decides to discontinue her military measures, which threaten Germany and Austria-Hungary.

(Signed) "WILLIAM."



## THE RUSSIAN VIEW

At St. Petersburg on August 4 Emperor Nicholas issued a manifesto in which he outlined the events leading up to the declaration of war by Germany, and then said that "Russians will rise like one man and repulse the insolent attack of the enemy."

The text of the manifesto follows:

"By the grace of God, we, Nicholas II., emperor and autocrat of all the Russias, king of Poland and grand duke of Finland, etc., to all our faithful subjects make known that Russia, related by faith and blood to the Slav peoples and faithful to her historical traditions, has never regarded her fates with indifference.

"But the fraternal sentiments of the Russian people for the Slavs have been awakened with perfect unanimity and extraordinary force in these last few days when Austria-Hungary knowingly addressed to Servia claims unacceptable for an independent state.

"Having paid no attention to the pacific and conciliatory reply of the Servian government and having rejected the benevolent intervention of Russia, Austria-Hungary made haste to proceed to an armed attack and began to bombard Belgrade, an open place.

"Forced by the situation thus created to take necessary measures of precaution, we ordered the army and the navy put on war footing, at the same time using every endeavor to obtain a peaceful solution.

"Pourparlers were begun amid friendly relations with Germany and her ally, Austria, for the blood and the property of our subjects were dear to us.

"Contrary to our hopes in our good neighborly relations of long date, and disregarding our assurances that the mobilization measures taken were in pursuance of no object hostile to her, Germany demanded their immediate cessation. Being rebuffed in this demand, Germany suddenly declared war on Russia.

"Today it is not only the protection of a country related to us and unjustly attacked that must be accorded, but we

must safeguard the honor, the dignity and the integrity of Russia, and her position among the great powers.

"We believe unshakably that all our faithful subjects will rise with unanimity and devotion for the defense of Russian soil; that internal discord will be forgotten in this threatening hour; that the unity of the emperor with his people will become still more close and that Russia, rising like one man, will repulse the insolent attack of the enemy.

"With a profound faith in the justice of our work and with a humble hope in omnipotent providence, in prayer we call God's blessing on holy Russia and her valiant troops.

(Signed) "NICHOLAS."

---

GERMAN CHANCELLOR MAKES ADDRESS

The German Imperial Chancellor, Dr. von Bethmann-Hollweg, on August 1 addressed a great procession of demonstrators from the window of his official residence in Berlin, making a stirring speech. He said:

"At this serious hour, in order to give expression to your feeling for your fatherland, you have come to the house of Bismarck, who, with Emperor William the Great and Field Marshal von Moltke, welded the German empire for us.

"We wished to go on living in peace in the empire which we have developed in forty-four years of peaceful labor.

"The whole work of Emperor William has been devoted to the maintenance of peace. To the last hour he has worked for peace in Europe and he is still working for it.

"Should all his efforts prove vain and should the sword be forced into our hands we will take the field with a clear conscience in the knowledge that we did not seek war. We shall then wage war for our existence and for the national honor to the last drop of our blood.

"In the gravity of the hour I remind you of the words of Prince Frederick Charles to the men of Brandenburg: 'Let your hearts beat for God and your fists on the enemy.' "

Enthusiastic cheers and the singing of the national anthem greeted the close of the imperial chancellor's speech.

## LECTURER ARRESTED AS A SPY

E. M. Newman of Chicago, the noted travel lecturer, was arrested and imprisoned as a spy in Berlin during the German mobilization. Mr. Newman reached Chicago on September 2, having landed at Boston two days previously from the steamship *Franconia*. He recounted his experiences as follows:

"On the night the English declaration of war was announced Berlin went stark mad. Every English signboard in the city within the crowd's reach was torn down. I witnessed the demonstrations until 11 o'clock and then went to my hotel and to bed. At midnight I was awakened. When I opened the door two military officers confronted me and informed me that I was arrested as a spy. I had been seen making moving pictures for several days and officers suspected they were for hostile purposes. I protested without avail. One of the officers took an unexposed film from the dresser and said:

" 'At least you'll never show this.' "

"The exposed film remained unharmed in my hand baggage, which was not disturbed, and came home with me.

"I was taken to the military prison, placed in the hospital and held four days. They gave me rye bread, sausage and coffee. There was no limit on the amount of rye bread I could eat. Half a dozen times I heard volleys in the neighboring court yard, signaling the end of some poor victim who had been suspected as I was. Finally with a bribe of 40 marks I persuaded the guard to send his wife to the American embassy with my story. Ambassador Gerard immediately interceded and my release was promised. The next morning I was put on a troop train with a load of horses and a few guards, and rode from 8 o'clock until 11 that night.

"A request that I be permitted to alight for food was met with the threat that I would be bayoneted if I set foot out of the car. I was unloaded at the Belgian frontier with my baggage and ordered to walk to the nearest village. This I did, and with some hardships got thence to Paris, London and home. My assistant with my best pictures I had sent from Berlin several days before. He reached London with all his things safe."

## PROCLAMATION BY THE KAISER

A proclamation by Emperor William addressed to the German nation was published in the Official Gazette, August 7. The text was as follows:

"Since the foundation of the German empire, it has been for forty-three years the object of the efforts of myself and my ancestors to preserve the peace of the world and to advance by peaceful means vigorous development.

"Our adversaries, however, are jealous of the successes of our work and there has been latent hostility to the east and to the west and beyond the sea.

"This has been borne by us till now, as we were aware of our responsibility and our power.

"Now, however, these adversaries wish to humiliate us, asking that we should look on with folded arms and watch our enemies preparing themselves for the coming attack.

"They will not suffer that we maintain our resolute fidelity to our ally, who is fighting for her position as a great power and with whose humiliation our power and honor would equally be lost.

"So the sword must decide.

"In the midst of perfect peace the enemy surprises us. Therefore, to arms!

"Any dallying and temporizing would be to betray the fatherland.

"To be or not to be, is the question for the empire which our fathers founded. To be or not to be, is the question for German power and German existence.

"We shall resist to the last breath of man and horse, and we shall fight out the struggle even against a world of enemies.

"Never has Germany been subdued when she was united.

"Forward, with God, who will be with us as he was with our ancestors."

## ADDRESS BY CZAR NICHOLAS

The Russian Emperor with Grand Duke Nicholas on August 8 received the members of the council of the empire and the *duma* (the Russian parliament) in audience at the Winter Palace, St. Petersburg. Addressing them, the Emperor said:



"In these days of alarm and anxiety, through which Russia is passing, I greet you! Germany, following Austria, has declared war on Russia.

"The enormous enthusiasm, the patriotic sentiments and the love and loyalty to the throne—an enthusiasm which has swept like a hurricane through the country—guarantee for me, as for you, I hope, that Russia will bring to a happy conclusion the war which the Almighty has sent it.

"It is also because of this unanimous enthusiasm, love and eagerness to make every sacrifice, even of life itself, that I am able to regard the future with calm firmness. It is not only the dignity and honor of our country that we are defending, but we are fighting for brother Slavs, coreligionists, blood brothers. I see also with joy the union of the Slavs with Russia progressing strongly and indissolubly.

"I am persuaded that all and each of you will be in your place to assist me to support the test and that all, beginning with myself, will do their duty. Great is the God of the Russian fatherland."

#### KING ALBERT TO THE BELGIANS

On the outbreak of hostilities in Belgium King Albert addressed a note to the Belgian army as follows:

"A neighbor, haughty in its strength, without the slightest provocation, has torn up the treaty bearing its signature and has violated the territory of our fathers because we refused to forfeit our honor. It has attacked us. Seeing its independence threatened, the nation trembled and its children sprang to the frontier, valiant soldiers in a sacred cause. I have confidence in your tenacious courage. I greet you in the name of Belgium, a fellow-citizen who is proud of you."

---

#### CAPITALS BLAZE WITH MARTIAL FEVER

There were scenes of patriotic fervor and martial ardor during the first few days of August in all the European capitals directly affected by the war. In London, Berlin, Paris, St. Petersburg and Vienna enthusiastic crowds filled the streets, singing national hymns and cheering their respective rulers and popular heroes.

It was the beginning of the world's greatest war, soon to involve more men in actual combat than Mother Earth had ever seen in arms before—a war of which only a few of the cheering thousands then realized the serious import, the prolonged duration, or the cost. But in the capitals of the nations involved there were a few, like Earl Kitchener in London, who knew that it must be a war to a finish and that nothing less than an Allied victory that would mean the downfall of German militarism would bring a peace that would be lasting.

## FOR ALL WE HAVE AND ARE

BY RUDYARD KIPLING

For all we have and are,  
For all our children's fate,  
Stand up and meet the war—  
The Hun is at the gate!  
Our world has passed away  
In wanton overthrow;  
There's nothing left to-day  
But steel and fire and woe.  
Though all we know depart,  
In courage keep your heart.

Once more we hear the word  
That sickened earth of old—  
No law except the sword  
Unsheathed and uncontrolled.  
Once more it knits mankind,  
Once more the nations go  
To meet and break and bind  
A crazed and riven foe.

Comfort, content, delight,  
The ages' slow-bought gain,  
They shriveled in a night—  
Only ourselves remain  
To face the naked days  
In silent fortitude,  
Through perils and dismays,  
Renewed and re-renewed.  
Though all we made depart  
The old commandments stand—  
In patience keep your heart,  
In strength lift up your hand.

No easy hopes or lies  
Shall bring us to our goal—  
But iron sacrifice  
Of body, will and soul.  
There's but one task for all,  
For each one life to give:  
Who stands if Freedom fall?  
If England dies, who live?

## CHAPTER III

### ARMED FORCES INVOLVED

*Strength of the Opposing Armies and Fleets—Millions of Men Under Arms—Attitude of Italy, Turkey and Greece—Organization of An Army—Heavy Artillery Used in the War.*

#### THE ARMIES OF EUROPE

Country	Peace Strength	Reserves	Total War Strength	Unorganized, But available For Duty
*Great Britain .....	254,500	476,000	730,000	2,000,000
Germany .....	870,000	4,430,000	5,200,000	1,000,000
*France .....	720,000	3,230,000	4,000,000	1,000,000
Austria-Hungary .....	390,000	1,610,000	2,000,000	3,000,000
Russia .....	1,290,000	3,300,000	5,500,000	5,200,000
Italy .....	250,000	950,000	1,200,000	1,200,000
Belgium .....	42,000	180,000	222,000	400,000
*Netherlands .....	35,000	145,000	180,000	150,000
Denmark .....	14,000	56,000	70,000	125,000
Sweden .....	50,000	400,000	450,000	200,000
Norway .....	35,000	80,000	115,000	100,000
Bulgaria .....	60,500	320,000	380,000	100,000
Servia .....	32,000	208,000	240,000	60,000
Rumania .....	95,000	100,000	500,000	175,000
Switzerland .....	22,300	252,000	275,000	50,000
Turkey .....	400,000	300,000	700,000	2,000,000

\* In the case of Great Britain, "Peace strength" excludes the native Indian army of 175,000.

In the case of France, "Peace strength" includes colonial troops.

In the case of Netherlands, "Peace strength" is exclusive of the colonial army of 36,000.

#### THE NAVIES OF EUROPE

Country	Modern Battleships	Cruiser Battleships	Older Battleships	First-class Cruisers	Other Cruisers	Destroyers	Torpedo Boats	Submarines	Officers and Men
Great Britain .....	29	10	38	42	70	227	58	85	137,500
Germany .....	19	7	20	9	45	141	47	30	66,783
France .....	17	0	15	18	13	87	173	90	60,621
Russia .....	9	4	8	6	9	105	23	48	52,463
Italy .....	8	0	8	7	13	35	73	20	33,095
Austria-Hungary .....	4	0	9	3	9	18	53	15	17,581
Sweden .....	0	0	0	1	0	8	51	7	5,715
Netherlands .....	0	0	6	0	11	8	33	8	11,164
Norway .....	0	0	0	1	4	3	26	5	1,003
Denmark .....	0	0	1	0	1	0	15	3	4,000



## NINETEEN MILLIONS IN THE FIELD

It will be seen by a perusal of the foregoing table that the forces of the nations actually engaged in the war in Europe had a total war strength at the outbreak of hostilities of 18,226,948 men of all arms.

To this almost incredible number must be added the additional troops raised by Great Britain and bringing up her total army to over 1,500,000 men. The number of these was nearly 800,000, still further increased by about 80,000 native troops from India and 50,000 from Canada, Australia and New Zealand. This brings the grand total of forces involved to 19,156,948 men, including the reserves, all of whom were called out until the "last line" of each of the warring nations was under arms.

When to this total we add the war strength of other nations that partially mobilized in August, 1914, for self-defense and the preservation of their neutrality, including the Netherlands, Switzerland, Bulgaria and Roumania, to say nothing of Italy, Turkey, the Scandinavian countries and the large and effective army of Japan, we arrive at the enormous aggregate of nearly 20,500,000 men called to the colors in this European conflict—a staggering total which dwarfs all previous records of war.

In the enumeration, too, it is probable that the war strength of the leading countries engaged is underestimated. Thus it is claimed that instead of only 5,200,000 men, Germany was prepared to place under arms a total of nearly 9,000,000. For days at a time, along the far-flung battle lines near the French border, armies aggregating not less than 3,000,000 men have been confronting each other, while other millions have been engaged in Eastern Prussia and Galicia.

## ITALY REMAINS NEUTRAL

The attitude of Italy was a subject of international curiosity at the outbreak of war, but the Italian government soon made it plain that its policy was one of absolute neutrality. In spite of the fact that Italy was a member of the Triple Alliance, her king and statesmen claimed that neither of her allies, Germany and Austria, was being attacked by a foreign

power, and that therefore, by the terms of the Triple Alliance, she was not obligated to take up arms on their behalf. There were besides two other good reasons for Italy's neutrality. On the one hand she had enjoyed long friendship with Great Britain, and felt under obligation for English support in obtaining Italian unity; and on the other hand the masses of the Italians were strongly opposed to lending aid and comfort to Austro-Hungary under the circumstances of the war.

Italian neutrality has therefore been maintained up to the present writing, and her army, with a total war strength of 1,200,000, although partially mobilized as a matter of precaution, has been kept out of the conflict. Strenuous efforts, however, have been made to drag Italy into the arena on the German-Austrian side, and it was reported in Paris on September 17 that the German Kaiser had sent a telegram to King Victor Emmanuel reading as follows:

"Conqueror or conquered, I shall never forget your treason."

The neutral attitude of their King, however, is believed to have had the practically unanimous support of the Italian people.

For some time early in September it was believed that Turkey would join in the war on the side of Germany. Two German war vessels in the Mediterranean sought refuge in the Dardanelles and were reported sold to Turkey. The incident created considerable interest and Greece was said to be preparing for war against Turkey in case the latter entered the conflict, but when the Franco-British troops succeeded in turning back the German advance on Paris, the Turkish government apparently concluded that discretion was the better part of valor and continued to maintain neutrality.

---

#### ORGANIZATION OF AN ARMY

Military service is compulsory in all the nations now at war, except in Great Britain, where the system is one of voluntary enlistment. Besides its regular army almost every great nation has one, two or three reserves. In time of peace the regular armies are kept on a reduced or peace footing. When war threatens they are enlarged to their war footing by in-

creasing them to full strength, either by additional men drawn from the reserves or by recruiting, and by organizing, equipping and supplying them for active operations in the field. This process is known as "mobilization."

There are two kinds of troops, namely, mobile and fixed, the latter being stationed in fortifications. The mobile troops are also of two kinds—those of the line, that is, the fighting men, including infantry, cavalry and artillery; and those of the staff.

Broadly speaking an army is organized for war as follows:

#### INFANTRY

A squad is 8 men under the command of a corporal.

A section is 16 men under the command of a sergeant.

A platoon is from 50 to 75 men under a lieutenant.

A company is 3 platoons, 200 to 250 men, under a captain.

A battalion is 4 or more companies under a major.

A regiment is 3 or more battalions under a colonel, or a lieutenant-colonel.

A brigade is 2 or 3 regiments under a brigadier-general.

A division is 2 or more brigades under a major-general.

An army corps is 2 or more brigades or divisions, supplemented by cavalry, artillery, engineers, etc., under a major-general or lieutenant-general.

#### CAVALRY

A section is 8 men under a corporal.

A platoon is 36 to 50 men under a lieutenant or junior captain.

A troop is 3 to 4 platoons under a senior captain, or a major.

A regiment is 4 to 6 squadrons under a colonel.

A brigade is 3 regiments under a brigadier-general.

A division is 2 or 3 brigades under a major-general.

#### ARTILLERY

A battery is 130 to 180 men, with 4 to 6 guns (8 in the Russian army), under a captain.

A group or battalion is 3 to 4 batteries under a major.

A regiment is 3 to 4 groups (battalions) under a colonel.

#### ARTILLERY USED IN THE WAR

The awful destruction wrought by modern artillery has been one of the features of the war; in fact, it may almost be

said to have been a war of artillery. Hence, a brief description of some of the guns used is given below.

Howitzers of calibers larger than 4.7 inches and mortars are limited to siege purposes only, as their weight renders them impractical for field uses. Being of large caliber, they fire a heavier projectile at a low muzzle velocity and at a great angle of elevation, which enables them to drop the shell behind breastworks or parapets of open gun emplacements of modern forts on a line of arc more nearly perpendicular than would be possible by guns of high muzzle velocity. The trajectory of the latter is too flat for any given effective range to attain the above results, the projectile striking the parapet or passing clear over it.

However, in fortifications of the first class, such as encircle Paris, heavy naval batteries are mounted, with an effective range of over twelve miles, and the city must be invested first before such cumbersome guns as mortars can be brought up and placed in position. As their range is less than that of the naval guns, it is quite evident that their mounting within the range of fire from the forts is a most critical, if not impossible, task, especially so when special roads have to be provided for their transportation across the terrain to the emplacements, which, in turn, require special concrete or other equally suitable foundations, with casemates, etc., before the piece can be put into action.

#### LIEGE NOT A CRITERION

Experiences with fortresses of the second class, like Liege and Namur, cannot be considered satisfactory evidence as to the importance or destructive efficiency of the new weapons. Liege held out longer than the most skeptical critics expected it would, while at Namur the Germans succeeded only in entrenching them within effective range, under cover of a dense fog.



## FRENCH HAVE ADVANTAGE

In the field artillery the French have a most decided advantage over the Germans, in a heavier projectile, a higher velocity and, consequently, a greater range. The rate of fire a minute is almost double that of the German gun. But the most important advantage on the French side is the "mechanical" timing of the bursting of the projectile instead of the fuse timing, as used in every other army. This has been a profound secret until this war began, and the terrible destructiveness of the piece is principally due to this never erring ingenious device.

As in rifle fire, where only the hits count, so in artillery fire it is the bursts of the projectiles at the exact range that count. With the fuse timer a variation of fifty yards is pretty close fire, and seldom attained, while with the mechanical timer a maximum variation of less than two yards was obtained in 500 rounds of fire, with ranges from 3,000 to 5,000 yards—while the vertical variations were less than 12 inches in the same number of rounds, without requiring any corrections in the laying (pointing) of the piece. The greatest execution is obtained by accurately timing the burst of projectiles "on graze," just passing over the skirmishers' cover or trenches, and, as an exploding projectile scatters 260 lead balls or shrapnel, each of which is effective enough to kill a man if it hits him, a fair idea can be had as to the destructiveness of these weapons. The bursting charge is called melinite, an explosive composition whose intensity of force is surpassed only by that of nitroglycerin.

## CHAPTER IV

### THE NATIONS AT WAR

*Rulers and Heirs Apparent of Countries Engaged—Areas and Populations—Their Exports and Imports, Principal Cities, Etc.—Europe's Map Often Changed—The Franco-Prussian War of 1870-71—Japan Enters the War.*

**R**ULERS of the principal countries engaged in the great war of 1914, with the latest statistics of their area, population, exports and imports, are as follows:

#### GREAT BRITAIN

GOVERNMENT—King, George V.; heir-apparent, Edward Albert, prince of Wales.

Prime Minister and First Lord of the Treasury—H. H. Asquith.

Secretary of War—Earl Kitchener.

The British parliament, in which the highest legislative authority is vested, consists of the house of lords and the house of commons. The former in 1913 had 636 members and the latter 670. The sessions usually last from February to August.

AREA AND POPULATION—The total area of England, Scotland, Ireland, Wales, the Isle of Man and the Channel Islands is 121,391 square miles; the total for the British Empire is 11,498,825 square miles. The total population of the empire in 1911 was 421,178,965. The population of the United Kingdom April 3, 1911, when the last census was taken, was: England, 34,045,290; Wales, 2,025,202; Scotland, 4,759,445; Ireland, 4,390,219; Isle of Man, 52,034; Channel Islands, 96,900. Total, 45,369,090.

The population of the inner or registration district of the city of London was 4,522,961 in 1911. Including the outer belt

of suburban towns, which are within the metropolitan police district, the population of "Greater London" April 3, 1911, was 7,251,358.

**EXPORTS AND IMPORTS.**—The total exports of the British Empire in 1912 were \$5,745,542,500; of the United Kingdom, \$2,996,339,000; total imports of the empire, \$6,528,065,000; of the United Kingdom, \$3,724,482,000.

The total exports of the United Kingdom to the United States in 1913 were \$295,564,940; imports, \$597,150,307.

#### AUSTRIA-HUNGARY

**GOVERNMENT.**—Emperor of Austria and king of Hungary, Francis Joseph I; heir apparent, Archduke Charles Francis Joseph.

The empire of Austria and the kingdom of Hungary are sovereign states, each with its own constitution, legislative bodies and systems of administration, co-ordinate in rank and mutually independent within the domain of home affairs. Foreign representation (embassies and consulates), the army and navy, customs (import and export duties), and the administration of the annexed provinces (Bosnia and Herzegovina) are, however, conducted in common. Legislation on matters affecting the interests of the dual monarchy as a whole is intrusted to the delegations—two bodies of sixty members each, chosen from among members of the two legislative chambers of Austria and Hungary respectively.

**AREA AND POPULATION.**—Area of Austria, 115,903 square miles; of Hungary, 125,395 square miles. The population of Austria in 1910 was 28,324,940. The population of Hungary in 1910 was 20,886,787. Total population for both countries in 1910 was 49,211,727.

**IMPORTS AND EXPORTS.**—The value of the imports into the Austro-Hungarian customs territory in 1912 was \$722,030,000; exports, \$554,973,000. Chief imports are cotton, coal, wool, maize, tobacco, coffee and wines; principal exports, lumber and wool manufactures, sugar, eggs, barley, lignite, malt, leather, gloves and shoes. Imports from the United States in 1913, \$23,320,690; exports to United States, \$19,192,414.

## GERMANY

GOVERNMENT.—Emperor and king of Prussia, Wilhelm II.; heir-apparent, Prince Friedrich Wilhelm. Cabinet officers:

Imperial Chancellor.—Dr. Theobald von Bethmann-Hollweg.

Foreign Affairs.—Herr Gottlieb von Jagow.

The Prussian minister of war, Gen. Josias O. O. von Heeringen, while nominally having jurisdiction over Prussian army affairs only, represents the imperial government in the reichstag in military matters and is, for all practical purposes, German secretary for war. Of the various independent states of Germany only the kingdoms of Prussia, Saxony, Bavaria and Wurttemberg have their own ministers of war.

Legislative authority is vested in a bundesrath, or senate, of 61 members, and a reichstag, or house, of 397 members. The latter are elected for five year terms on a popular franchise and the senators are appointed from the state governments for each session.

AREA AND POPULATION.—The area of the states in the empire is 208,780 square miles; area of dependencies about 1,027,820 square miles; grand total, 1,236,600 square miles.

The last federal census was taken Dec. 1, 1910. According to this the population of the empire was 64,925,993. The estimated population of the foreign dependencies is 13,946,200.

EXPORTS AND IMPORTS.—Total exports (1912), \$2,115,482,000; total imports, \$2,449,517,000.

During the fiscal year ended June 30, 1913, Germany exported \$188,963,071 worth of merchandise to the United States and imported merchandise valued at \$331,684,212.

## RUSSIA

GOVERNMENT—Czar, Nicholas II.; heir-apparent, Grand Duke Alexis.

Premier and Minister of Finance—F. Kokovtseff.

Foreign Affairs—M. Sazonoff.



Legislative authority is vested in the czar, duma and council of the empire.

AREA AND POPULATION—Area, 8,764,586 square miles. Total population in 1911, 167,003,400.

IMPORTS AND EXPORTS—The total value of the imports in 1911 was \$598,266,000; of the exports, \$819,577,000. The exports to the United States in 1913 amounted in value to \$26,958,690; imports from the United States, \$25,363,795. The chief exports are foodstuffs, timber, oil, furs and flax; imports, raw cotton, wool, metals, leather, hides, skins and machinery.

#### SERVIA

GOVERNMENT—King, Peter I. (Karageorgevitch); heir-apparent, Prince Alexander (second son). Legislative authority is vested in a single chamber, called “skupshtina,” of 160 elected members.

AREA AND POPULATION—Area, about 37,600 square miles. Population in 1910, 2,911,701; now about 4,550,000. The capital, Belgrade, has 90,890 inhabitants.

EXPORTS AND IMPORTS—Total value of exports in 1911, \$22,565,000; imports, \$22,277,000. Exports to the United States in 1913, \$694,393; imports, \$7,616. The exports are mainly agricultural products and animals and the imports cotton and woolen goods and metals.

#### BELGIUM

GOVERNMENT.—King, Albert I.

The legislative power is vested in the king, senate and chamber of representatives. The senate has 120 members and the chamber 186, or one for every 40,000 inhabitants.

AREA AND POPULATION.—Total area, 11,373 square miles. Total population, 1910, 7,423,784; estimated population, 1911, 7,490,411. Population of the largest cities December 31, 1911:

Antwerp . . . . .	308,618	Liege . . . . .	167,676
Brussels (capital) .	646,400	Ghent . . . . .	166,719

IMPORTS AND EXPORTS.—The imports in 1912 amounted to \$899,722,000 and the exports to \$753,001,000. The trade with the United States in 1913 was: Imports, \$66,845,462; exports, \$41,941,014. Chief imports are cereals, textiles and metal goods; chief exports, cereals, raw textiles, tissues, iron, glass, hides, chemicals and machinery.

## FRANCE

GOVERNMENT.—President, Raymond Poincaré; term expires 1920.

Legislative authority is vested in the chamber of deputies and the senate. The former has 597 members, each of whom is elected for four years. The senate has 300 members elected for nine years. The presidential term is seven years.

AREA AND POPULATION.—France has a total area of 207,054 square miles. The area of the French colonies and dependencies throughout the world is 4,367,746 square miles. Total population (1911) of France proper, 39,601,509.

IMPORTS AND EXPORTS.—The total imports in 1912 amounted to \$1,534,515,000; exports, \$1,280,816,000. Exports to the United States in 1913, \$136,877,990; imports from, \$146,100,201. The chief exports are textiles, wine, raw silk, wool, small wares and leather; imports, wine, raw wool, raw silk, timber and wood, leather, skins and linen.

---

EUROPE'S MAP OFTEN CHANGED

Whatever the final outcome of the war of 1914, it is more than probable that the map of Europe will once more be changed. From the earliest days the story of the nations at war is one of never-ending shifting of dominion. The boundary lines of European countries have been like the desert sands.

The greatest of military authorities has made an analysis of the history of mankind, showing that in 3,357 years—from 1496 B. C. to 1861 A. D.—there were 227 years of peace and 3,130 years of war, or more than a dozen years of war for every one which was without strife. The peace of Europe has always been a myth.

In the last 250 years, which is historically a comparatively short time, one great nation, Poland, has been lost; two others, Germany and Italy, have come to their present national unity, and numerous other lesser States—Holland, Belgium, Switzerland, Portugal and the Slav and Latin States of the Balkan peninsula—have been battlegrounds, losing and gaining their independence as if with the throw of the dice.

In point of numbers involved, no other war can be compared to the present terrible conflict enshrouding the greater part of Europe, but in one year 1,300,000 men were called out and most of them perished, in the campaign of 1814. Between 1804 and 1815 Napoleon sent to their death more than 1,700,000 Frenchmen, to whom must be added probably 2,000,000 men born outside of France. Napoleon changed more boundary lines than any other man.

#### THE THIRTY YEARS' WAR

Europe was devastated by the Thirty Years' War of Germany, the last great combat between Catholicism and Protestantism early in the seventeenth century. Germany, a federation of States, was then called the Holy Roman Empire. The House of Hapsburg ruled the empire. Richelieu, the great French statesman, who had no religious prejudices and desired to crush the Hapsburgs, aided the Protestants. The war swept over Germany, Sweden, France and the Netherlands. When it ended Switzerland and the United Netherlands were freed from German dominion, and the States of what is now Germany were conceded to be separate from the Hapsburg rule and to be autonomous, or having the right of self-government. France penetrated to the east by the cession of the bishoprics of Metz, Toul and Verdun. Alsace went from Austrian hands to France. Sweden, great on the sea, received enough territory in North Germany to command the mouths of the three German rivers, the Oder, Elbe and Weser.

The largest territory received by any of the German States was by Brandenburg, which later became Prussia and finally Germany. In 1701 the Elector Frederick of Brandenburg took the title of King of Prussia, and Prussia came to be the exponent of German nationalism and enmity to Hapsburg domi-

nation. Frederick the Great, ancestor of the present Kaiser, Wilhelm II, reigned in Prussia from 1740 to 1786 and found his opportunity to lead his nation to greater power in the War of the Austrian Succession.

The "Succession Wars" were five in number. The result of the first one—of the Spanish Succession—early in the eighteenth century, was to give Austria the Spanish Netherlands, and the duchies of Milan, Naples and Sardinia. Savoy, a leader in Italian affairs, exchanged Sardinia for Sicily. England gained Gibraltar and Arcadia in America from the French. The War of the Polish Succession, ending in 1738, brought France to guarantee it would not interfere with the ascendancy of Maria Theresa to the throne of Austria.

#### FREDERICK MADE A NEW MAP

It was at this point that Frederick the Great interfered. He reasserted an old claim to Austria's throne and invaded Silesia, adding it to Prussia's territory.

The growth of Russia is closely related to the history of Sweden, even as it is now through Russia's suzerainty over Finland. Sweden had come into power when Charles XII crushed a coalition of Denmark, Poland and Russia. In 1709 he invaded Russia and was defeated. Peter the Great then seized Sweden east of the Baltic and built St. Petersburg.

The history of Poland is one of gradual decline in power from the middle of the eighteenth century, due in large part to the loose system of government and weak rulers. In 1772 Prussia, Austria and Russia got parts of Poland. Kosciuszko drove the Russians from Warsaw, but internal dissension ruined the Polish cause, and the final partition came in 1795.

The wars of Napoleon Bonaparte from the first brilliant Italian campaign to their end at Waterloo, are records of territorial aggrandizement for France and the house of Bonaparte. In the first campaign Italy became the Cisalpine Republic, and Genoa the Ligurian Republic. This was in the time of Napoleon's democratic sympathies. Austria was forced to give up the lower Netherlands—Belgium and Lombardy.

Napoleon became First Consul of France in 1799. Piedmont and Parma were annexed in 1802. When his ideas of



democracy grew dim and he became Emperor in 1804 he made himself King of Italy and annexed his Ligurian Republic.

#### THE EFFECT OF AUSTERLITZ

The next campaign was against the Russian, Austrian and English coalition. Vienna was occupied and the battle of Austerlitz again made a new map necessary. Francis I of Austria ceded Tyrol and Venetia. His successor gave up the title of Emperor and the Holy Roman Empire dissolved into history.

In 1806 Napoleon formed the Confederation of the Rhine, made his brothers, Joseph, King of Naples, and Louis, King of Holland. Prussia entered the war and Napoleon entered Berlin. He made a treaty with Russia to crush England. Portugal, an English ally, was dismembered. Spain was conquered and Joseph Bonaparte became its King. The Swedish revolution in 1809 brought Marshal Bernadotte, a brother-in-law of Joseph, to the Swedish throne. Jerome Bonaparte got the Kingdom of Westphalia. Tuscany was annexed in 1807, the Papal States in 1809 and Holland and part of the German coast in 1810. Austria gave up its Illyrian provinces.

The tide turned with the Russian invasion, after Russia went over to England in 1812. In swift succession came the terrible reverses of the Franco-Russian campaign, the defensive campaign of 1814, the abdication, the One Hundred Days and Waterloo. The Congress of Vienna rearranged the map of Europe and France went back to its place west of the Rhine. Belgium was annexed by Holland, and was freed only when the Catholics of Belgium revolted against Protestant Holland in 1830.

The Congress of Vienna also prepared the way for Italian unity. Seven principal States were mapped out and only two left under foreign rule, French Corsica and Austrian Lombardy and Venetia. Unification came under Victor Emmanuel II.

The loosening of Turkish rule in Eastern Europe came in 1829, when Greece won its independence, aided by Russia. Bulgaria, Herzegovina, now one of Austria's troublesome Slavic States, Serbia and Montenegro became independent in

1875. Roumania was freed two years later. In the treaty of Berlin, 1879, Bosnia and Herzegovina went to Austria.

---

#### THE FRANCO-PRUSSIAN WAR OF 1870-71

The war of France with Prussia in 1870-71, in which the latter was joined by the South German States, contrary to the expectation of France, was due largely to the action of the great Prussian statesman, Bismarck. It resulted in the complete defeat and downfall of Napoleon III, the establishment of the French Republic, and the unification of the German States under Wilhelm I, King of Prussia. The immediate cause of France's declaration of war, July 12, 1870, was the attempt of Bismarck to place Prince Leopold of Hohenzollern on the throne of Spain, in succession to Queen Isabella, who had been driven from the throne.

Paris clamored for war and the streets of the French capital resounded with cries of "On to Berlin!" But a rude awakening was in store for the French. As the French army moved toward the Rhine, the old feeling of a unified Germany took firm hold in every German State and a solid front was presented to the common enemy's advance.

The German army, under the military genius, Von Moltke, was mobilized and on the border in a miraculously short time. The world was amazed at the rapidity displayed. England declared its neutrality, and Russia, Prussia's friend, then threatened Austria with invasion if that country offered France aid.

Meanwhile in Paris even the Emperor became aware that no nation so unprepared as his could ever hope to win against one already mobilized and on the frontier. There was not an arm of the French service fit for war at that time. Arms, ammunition, clothing, food, transportation, horses, medicine, all were inadequate or lacking. The ministry had grossly deceived the Emperor and involved the nation in a struggle, the end of which easily could be foreseen.

Alsace and Lorraine were invaded by the Germans, who defeated MacMahon August 6 at Wörth and sent his army in flight toward Paris. After one or two small reverses at the

beginning of the war, the success of the Germans was almost continuous. While MacMahon was retreating, another French army was beaten and pushed toward Metz, which was strongly fortified and under command of Bazaine. Metz was cut off and besieged. MacMahon was ordered back to relieve Bazaine, but he was met at Sedan September 2, and after a heavy battle was compelled to surrender. With him was the Emperor, Napoleon III. Nearly half the French army was killed.

#### THE SIEGE OF PARIS

When Paris learned the stunning news the empire came to an end. A Republic was declared and preparations made to defend the city. The French spirit now was aroused, and in spite of the humiliation of successive defeats in the past two months, it continued with a much smaller force to resist the German advance on Paris. The capital was invested by the German army September 19, 1870, and until the last of January the garrison made a heroic defense.

The seat of government had been transferred to Tours and Bordeaux, and the depleted nation raised armies in the provinces and continued resistance to the invaders. After holding out to the end of October, Metz surrendered, and by this and the fall of Strasburg, almost 200,000 Frenchmen became prisoners of war. These events sealed the fate of the capital, and it settled down to resist so long as its supplies lasted. At the point of starvation it gave up January 28, 1871. Peace was concluded at Versailles, and the vanquished nation promised to pay Germany \$1,000,000,000 in three years, support the German army until it was withdrawn, and give up Alsace and a part of Lorraine.

Another humiliation imposed by Bismarck upon the beaten country was his choice of Versailles as the place at which to seal German unity by the coronation of William I as Emperor. The South German States were taken into the confederation and the German Empire was established. This took place January 18, 1871.

#### GERMANS ENTER PARIS

On March 1, 1871, the Germans entered Paris through the Arc de Triomphe—the triumphal arch Napoleon had erected

in honor of France's conquests in Prussia and elsewhere. As the victorious Germans rode into the city a swarm of Paris street boys ran on every side of them, burning disinfectants in shovels, as though protecting the Parisians against some loathsome disease—an amazing insult that was not lost on the conquerors.

The war that had crushed France and that had paid the last fearful price of Napoleonism had also welded the many separate German States into one mighty empire, with the Prussian monarch at its head.

King William of Prussia, first Emperor of Germany, was the grandfather of the present Kaiser.

France was beaten. The old motto: "Vae Victis!" ("Woe to the Conquered") still holds good in European wars. And France was forced to settle. The patriotic French people eagerly subscribed to the war debt of a billion dollars and worked like mad to pay it off. But France paid heartbrokenly, and has ever since yearned and prayed for the hour of revenge.

Roughly speaking, the losses on both sides (in human life) were:

Germans, 28,000 killed, 101,000 wounded and disabled. French, 156,000 killed, 143,000 wounded and disabled, 720,000 surrendered.

#### ALSACE-LORRAINE A RICH PRIZE

German unity changed the map of Europe but very little. However, in that slight cession of Alsace and Lorraine to Germany after the war, were sown the seeds of hatred between the French and the Germans.

That corner of Europe known as Alsace-Lorraine covers about 5,000 square miles to the west of the River Rhine and has been one of the richest portions of the German Empire. It has 2,000,000 people, the population of Strasburg, the capital, being 160,000. Alsace-Lorraine is rich in coal and its cities are the seats of manufacturing industries. Muelhausen, the scene of recent battles, is the seat of cotton weaving. Alsace, rich and fertile, produces more wines than the rest of Germany. Wheat, rye and barley are large products.

Many of the people of Alsace-Lorraine removed to France



to escape the policy of Germany, which was to Teutonize it by enforced use of the German language. For the most part the military party enforced its policy of a rule by force and this kept alive rather than crushed the love for France.

The country is highly developed, is covered with a network of railroads, and, in addition, there is a system of canals which provides cheap transportation.

---

#### JAPAN ENTERS THE WAR

It became evident very early in the war that active steps would be taken by Japan to support the interests of its ally, England, in the Far East. On Saturday, August 15, an ultimatum was sent by Japan to Germany demanding the withdrawal of German warships from the Orient and the evacuation of Kiaochow, and giving Germany until Sunday, August 23, to comply with the demand. Otherwise, the ultimatum declared, Japan would take action. The text of the ultimatum follows:

"We consider it highly important and necessary in the present situation to take measures to remove the causes of all disturbances of the peace in the far east, and to safeguard the general interests as contemplated by the agreement of alliance between Japan and Great Britain.

#### DEMANDS WARSHIPS WITHDRAW

"In order to secure a firm and enduring peace in eastern Asia, the establishment of which is the aim of the said agreement, the imperial Japanese government sincerely believes it to be its duty to give the advice to the imperial German government to carry out the following two propositions:

"First. To withdraw immediately from Japanese and Chinese waters German men-of-war and armed vessels of all kinds and to disarm at once those which cannot be so withdrawn.

"Second. To deliver on a date not later than September 15 to the imperial Japanese authorities without condition or compensation the entire leased territory of Kiaochow with a view to the eventual restoration of the same to China.

“The imperial Japanese government announces at the same time that in the event of it not receiving by noon on August 23, 1914, an answer from the imperial German government signifying its unconditional acceptance of the above advice offered by the imperial Japanese government, Japan will be compelled to take such action as she may deem necessary to meet the situation.”

There being no answer from Germany when the time set by the ultimatum expired, Japan declared war and proceeded to send an expedition to operate against Kiaochow.

#### HOW GERMANY GOT KIAOCHOW

Germany's acquisition of Kiaochow, the evacuation of which Japan demanded, followed closely upon the acquisition of areas of interest and spheres of influence in China to foreign powers. Until 1895 no foreign power aside from the Portuguese and English had been allowed to hold possessions on or near the coast of China. Japan acquired Formosa by treaty in that year. Russia secured a concession for the Manchurian railway and France obtained a rectification of the frontier at Tongking.

Germany's seizure of Kiaochow in retaliation for the murder of German missionaries by Chinese followed in November, 1897, and in March the port with adjacent territory was leased by China to Germany for ninety-nine years. The district was declared a protectorate of the Germans to expire on April 27, 1898, and its administration was intrusted to the navy department with a naval officer as governor.

#### RUSSIA LEASES PORT ARTHUR

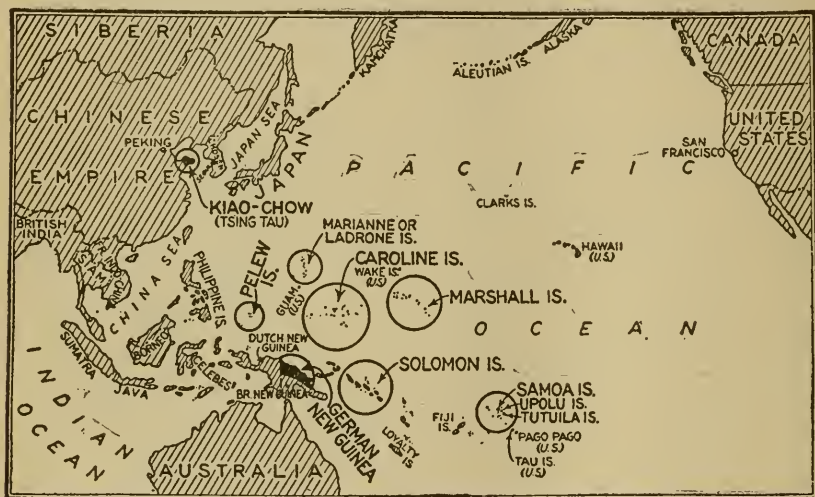
In November, 1897, Russia obtained a twenty-five year lease of Port Arthur and Talienwan with 800 square miles of territory, and secured a naval base and an ice free port. In the following May further concessions gave Russia virtual control of Manchuria and a little later Russian influence was extended into Mongolia.

The Russo-Japanese war, however, limited Russia's activities there and resulted in Japan's acquisition of Port Arthur. To preserve the balance of power Great Britain

April 2, 1898, leased Weihaiwei on the same terms as those in the Russian lease of Port Arthur.

#### ENGLISH INFLUENCE FELT

In February, 1898, Great Britain had established its influence without claiming exclusive privileges in the Yangtze valley. These concessions were followed by similar privileges for France, which on April 3, 1898, leased the port of



WHERE JAPAN ENTERED THE WAR  
The circles on this map surround Germany's Pacific possessions

Kwangchauwan on the southern coast for ninety-nine years. On June 9, following, Great Britain leased for ninety-nine years a 200 square mile extension of territory on the mainland opposite Hongkong and about the same time Japan secured nonalienation pledges concerning the province of Fukien. Italy demanded a lease of Sanmun Bay, but did not press it because of popular opposition as expressed at home to a policy of expansion.

#### LEADS TO "OPEN DOOR" DECLARATION

All these territorial negotiations led up to the celebrated international "open door" declaration. While England had

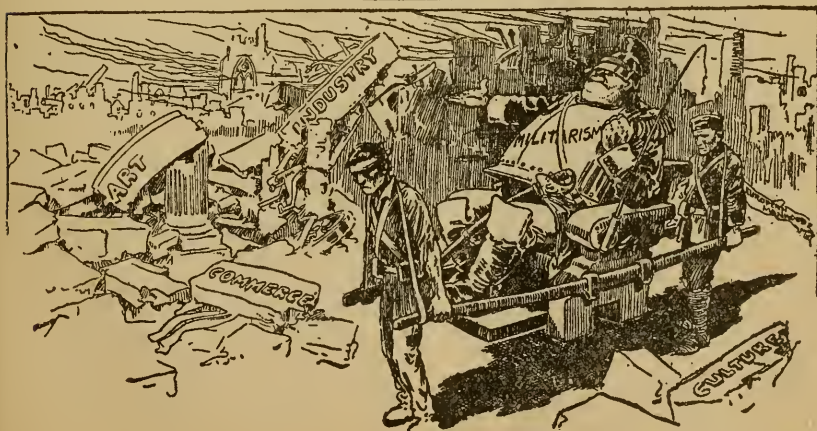
long urged the policy of equality of opportunity for all nations in Chinese trade the United States accomplished the first broad recognition of that principle.

As a result of negotiations by John Hay, the American secretary of state, Great Britain, Germany, France, Italy, Russia and Japan early in 1900 agreed in guaranteeing the treaty rights of the United States and thus, through the most favored nation clause, the treaty rights of other nations in China should remain unimpaired in the territory except military or naval stations acquired or leased by each power, and that goods of the treaty powers should continue to be admitted there on equal terms with those of the nation newly in possession.

Great Britain and Germany supplemented this on October 16, 1900, by a definite agreement between them to uphold the policy of an open door in China, to abstain from seizure of territory themselves and to influence other governments, as far as possible, to the same end.

The Anglo-Japanese alliance of February, 1902, for the protection of their respective interests in China and Korea was another factor of great importance. The immediate object of the alliance was understood to be the limitation of Russian expansion in Korea and Manchuria.

THE AGE OF "EFFICIENCY."



—Chicago Daily News





### THE FRANCO-GERMAN BORDER

At the north, a German Army from Luxembourg took Longwy after a long siege and advanced toward Paris via Verdun, while another German Army was overrunning Belgium. Lunéville, further south, was also taken by a German force advancing eastward on the road to Paris. At the extreme south the French crossed through the passes of the Vosges (the mountain range between France and Alsace), and took Mulhausen and Altkirch. This invasion, however, was checked and the French forces were compelled to retire.

## CHAPTER V

### THE INVASION OF BELGIUM

*Belgians Rush to Defense of Their Frontier—Towns Bombarded and Burned—The Defense of Liège—A German Officer's Experience—An Englishman's Story—The Terrible Krupp Siege Guns—Destruction of Louvain—Fall of Namur—German Proclamation to Inhabitants.*

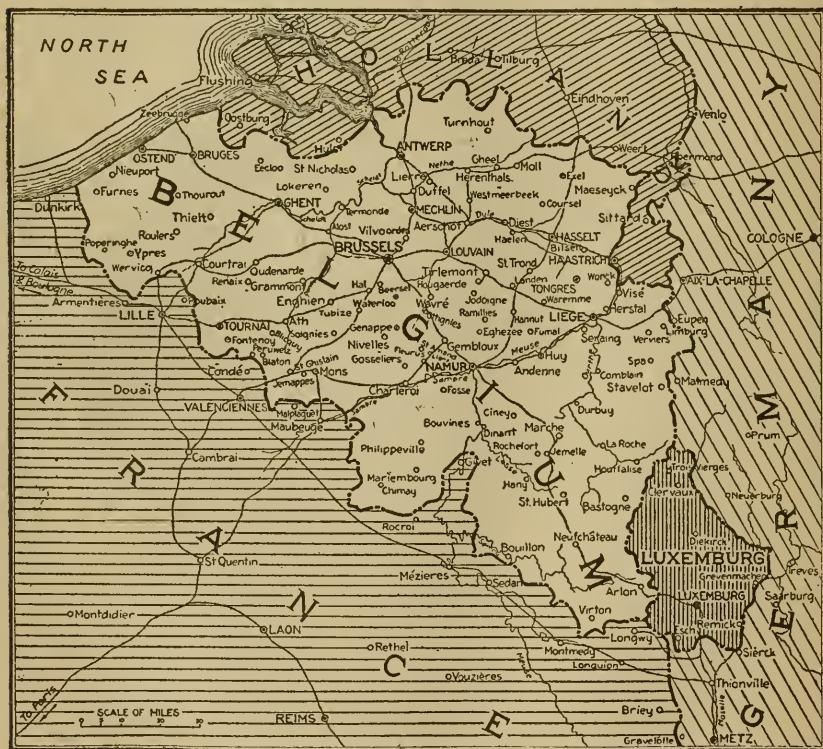
AT 10 o'clock on the night of August 2 German troops crossed the Belgian frontier, coming from Aix-la-Chapelle, or Aachen, temporary headquarters of the general staff, and the bloody invasion of Belgium, involving the violation of its neutral treaty rights, began. Simultaneously the German forces entered the independent duchy of Luxemburg to the south, en route to the French border, and also came in touch with French outposts in the provinces of Alsace and Lorraine.

The events that followed in Belgium furnished a genuine surprise to the world. Instead of finding the Belgian people indifferent to the violation of their territory and the Belgian army only a slight obstacle in the road to Paris, as was probably expected by the German general staff, a most gallant and determined resistance was offered to the progress of the German hosts. The army of the little State was quickly mobilized for defense and its operations, while ineffectual in stopping the Kaiser's irresistible force, delayed its advance for three invaluable weeks, giving time for the complete mobilization of the French and for the landing of a British expeditionary force to co-operate with the latter in resisting the German approach to Paris.

Just across the Belgian border lay the little towns of Visé and Verviers, and these were the first objects of German attack and Belgian defense. Both were occupied after desperate resistance by the Belgians and Visé was partly demolished by

## INVASION OF BELGIUM

fire in reprisal, it was claimed, for the firing by civilians on the German invaders. The subsequent bombardment and burning of towns and villages by the Germans were explained in every case as measures of revenge for hostile acts on the part of non-combatants and intended to prevent their occurrence elsewhere by striking terror into the hearts of the Belgian populace. Whatever the pretext or the excuse, the historical fact remains that the result of the German progress



—From the Literary Digest—Copyright, 1914, by Funk & Wagnalls Company.

## BELGIUM—THE FIRST BATTLEFIELD OF THE WAR

The map shows the more important railroad lines connecting the cities of Brussels, Antwerp and Namur and those of Northern France. Paris is 200 miles by rail from Brussels and 190 from Namur.

toward the Franco-Belgian frontier constituted a martyrdom for Belgium and gained for the plucky little kingdom the fullest sympathy of the civilized world.

#### THE ATTACK ON LIÈGE

The ancient city of Liège was attacked by the German artillery on August 4. The town itself was occupied five days later, but the modern forts surrounding it continued for some time longer to hold out against the fierce German attack. It became necessary to bring up the heaviest modern Krupp siege guns in order to reduce them.

Amidst all the plethora of events which crowded themselves into the first few days following the outbreak of the war, none was more remarkable than the Belgian stand at Liège against the German advance.

The struggle round Liège bids fair to become historic, and the garrisons of the Liège forts when they looked out fearlessly from the banks of the Meuse on the vanguard of the German host, and took decision to block its further progress, proved their claim once again to Julius Cæsar's description of their ancestors, "The Belgians are the bravest of the Gauls."

#### THE FALL OF LIÈGE

News of the fall of Liège and the occupation of the city by German troops was received with great rejoicing in Berlin on August 8th. Dispatches received at Amsterdam from the German capital said:

The news of the fall of Liège spread with lightning rapidity throughout Berlin and created boundless enthusiasm. The Emperor sent an aide-de-camp to announce the capture of the city to crowds that assembled outside the palace.

Policemen on bicycles dashed along Unter den Linden proclaiming the joyful tidings. Imperial Chancellor Bethmann-Hollweg drove to the castle to congratulate the Emperor on the victory and was enthusiastically cheered along the way.

The newspapers declared that false reports which were known to have been circulated in foreign countries, that the Germans suffered a severe reverse before Liège, would no longer serve to conceal Germany's triumphs. The *Lokal Anzeiger* said of the reported victory:



"It confirms our confidence that we can calmly await coming events. It was the prelude to deeds which will be spoken of as long as men live on earth."

Another paper said: "When our soldiers in the field learn of the surrender of Liege they will rejoice not only for the victory of our arms, but because of the assurance it gives that our march through Northern France cannot be stayed."

#### GERMAN OFFICER'S EXPERIENCE AT LIEGE

A vivid description of the fighting before Liège was given by a German officer who was seriously wounded in the battle. He described his experiences and feelings in a letter which read, in part, as follows:

"Our trip to the Belgian border was a triumphal procession. It was pouring rain as we marched through the Ardennes. The towns seemed deserted. We had no rest and during the night were fired upon.

"At 5 a. m. August 6 we marched through the Ourthe valley, meeting obstacles everywhere. It was an awful march; the roads were blocked by felled trees and bowlders; of bridges there were only remnants. In the afternoon we took up quarters in a village south of Liège.

"Seven o'clock. An alarm is sounded; the captain shouts 'Storm Liège!' It is impossible. We cannot go farther; the forts are thirty-five kilometers away, but we press on.

"Thirty minutes pass and we are fired upon from the heights. Now shots are fired directly at us from nearer points. We draw our revolvers and rush forward.

"The field is alive with troops of all arms. It is raining in torrents; a thunderstorm is roaring and the night is pitch dark. We press on. We see soldiers fall. Now they fall in masses and do not rise. The sky clears, the moon shines; we hear cannonading.

"Suddenly we hear that our baggage has been attacked. One company turns back. The village has been burned down; all the people shot. Such are the atrocities of the franc-tireurs (guerrillas, or civilian 'snipers').

"Meanwhile we keep on, close to Liège, and turn off behind the wood. Four regiments lay down their knapsacks and 'iron

rations' are taken out. The last exhortation is given; we form in ranks for the charge.

"Shells whiz past, but without aim. We gallop by our artillery, stuck helplessly in the mud up to the hubs. A wild hail of bullets burst on us from a point directly opposite. Our own men are firing upon us, but just in time we are recognized.

"Now we are directly in front of the firing line of the forts. There is wild clamoring. The parole 'Woerth' is given. Friend and enemy look alike.

#### COMRADES SLAIN BY HIS SIDE

"I am lying before a barricade of trees and barbed wire, with my comrade, Lieut. G., on my left and the captain on my right. Shells explode all around; everywhere is the infernal noise of musketry fire.

"The air is hot. A few yards ahead we may get better cover. I nudge Lieut. G. and ask, 'Shall we go forward?' No answer. He is dead. The captain jumps to his feet and falls back; he is shot in the breast. I raise my arm, the company responds to my word of command.

"I rush forward. A terrible blow throws me back three feet. I have received a shell in the left thigh. The pain is terrible. Before me an officer calls out his name, holds out his hand to me and then falls back—dead.

"In front of me there is a flag and I try to crawl up to it. The bearer is dead. A second shot strikes me in the left arm; a third in the right arm; I bite the earth with pain.

"A few steps in front are the Belgian rifle pits. Our men advance. I lie in one place nearly twelve hours, yet, despite the hail of bullets, nothing happens to me.

"A doctor comes with bandages. At noon I am carried away. Shivering with fever, I meet our regiment. Its losses are terrible—three captains, six lieutenants, nearly all from my battalion.

"I am taken to a field hospital. During the first few days I suffer terribly, but now I am much better. There are others who have to suffer greater pain than I; that makes one keep quiet.

"I have lost everything. The clothes I wore were so soaked with blood that they were burned. A Russian brought me some underwear and a sympathetic little woman is washing and mending a uniform for me."

#### AN ENGLISH STOCKBROKER'S STORY

Another story is told by Guy Menzies, an English stockbroker, who has a residence in Belgium and came through Liège after the German occupation. He said that the Germans, although they had gained the city, were not very joyful over their success, as they had before them the problem of getting out of the city again, the forts outside being capable of a cross-fire that would leave them little chance of making an exit save with heavy losses. He speaks of boulevards lined with Maxims, and of being astonished at the small amount of damage that had been done in the town. Two bridges had been blown up, and the other two were heavily guarded by the Germans. From Liège Mr. Menzies managed to make his way, with various narrow escapes both from the French and Germans, towards Verviers. His story follows:

"After I had passed Vaux-sous-Chevremont I began to see some of the terrible ravages which the German advance had brought about. At Romsée village, with about five hundred inhabitants, every house had been burned down by the Germans.

"At this point three corps were firing, and I had some marvelous escapes from their shells. The Germans were advancing from Hervé through Soumagne and Zhendelesse and were pillaging the village of Maquee. As I passed through, women and children were flying away from their homes with terror-stricken cries, not knowing where to go.

"When I reached Fléron the people were so terrified no one would take me in for the night or give me any food. I had to push on as far as Berne. I started again at 4 a. m. on Monday, but I lost my way and got to Soiron.

#### RESULTS OF BELGIAN FIRE

"There I saw more terrible traces of the fire of the forts of Liège. The German field guns were lying by the side of the road disabled, with dead horses still in their harness. The

ground was littered with hundreds of corpses of German soldiers that had not been buried. The men were lying very close together, indicating that they were being put forward in close order. The wounds inflicted by the shell fire were terrible, and I hurried away from the scene as quickly as I could.

"I got to my house at Petit Rochain at 8:30 Monday (August 9), having passed through Verviers. My friends were very scared and begged me to leave again as soon as possible.

"Leaving Petit Rochain Wednesday, August 11, still on foot, I made my way for the Dutch frontier through Berneau and Moland. At Berneau, as I passed through, a great German army was encamped. There must have been nearly 100,000 men of all arms, among them the Death's Head Hussars, of which the Crown Prince is the colonel.

"Near Verviers I saw two huge guns nine meters long being drawn along a road by thirty horses attached to each. At Magnée they were bringing up howitzers. The Germans were trying to make pontoon bridges over the Meuse at Visé, but as soon as they were completed I saw them destroyed by shot from Fort Pontisie. I was told this had happened twenty times before.

"At Louvain we found King Albert in consultation with the general staff, his majesty dressed in a general's field uniform. He looked smiling and confident. The roads leading into Brussels were crowded with mournful processions of Red Cross wagons bringing in the wounded, both Belgian and German; walking by the side of the carts and comforting the sufferers were numerous priests and monks bearing a Red Cross badge. The scene was piteous and moved all beholders to tears.

"Soldiers returning from the front were greeted along the road by innumerable women and children, who handed them bottles of wine, bread and meat, and did not forget to be repaid with a kiss."

---

#### A TERRIBLE GERMAN WEAPON USED AT LIEGE AND NAMUR

The monster siege guns or mortars used by the Germans against the forts of Liège and afterward at Namur appear to



have been a secret product of the Krupp gun factories and were described by an American correspondent at Berlin in September as follows:

"The pinnacle of German war science is the 42-centimeter (16.5 inch) Krupp mortar, the most miraculous and powerful weapon designed in the history of war.

"The Krupp mortar is the one unique and astonishing product of this month of fighting. It has smashed apparently impregnable fortifications like those of Liège and Namur, has been battering at the perfect defenses of Antwerp, and is expected by German artillerists to blow open a roadway to Paris.

"Mentioned by thousands, the Krupp mortar is known only by a few. The gun was invented eight years ago, but only those in the confidence of the Krupps know who the inventor is. He may be marooned with his secret, for he holds in his grasp the destiny of Germany.

"For eight years the Krupps worked at the secret while guarding it with most rigorous precautions. This year they perfected it. This mortar fires the largest and most dangerous projectile ever shot from a weapon. In making it no single workman worked on more than one small piece, and one vital part of the machinery was made in Austria.

#### KEPT SECRET FROM COMMITTEE

"Even the artillery subcommittee of the Bundesrath was not informed this year. It was merely asked to withhold debate on the artillery situation, as something 'extraordinary' was being provided. That something extraordinary was first seen when the Liège forts, which could withstand any artillery fire known to Belgian officers, collapsed like shanties, burying hundreds of the garrison under the wreckage.

"At Namur the same story was repeated. I have just read an account in an English newspaper of the capture of Namur, in which it is said that two French regiments coming to the relief of the garrison, found such carnage that they retired in awe. But the surprise of the Belgians was no greater than that of the German artillery officers themselves, who watched incredulously the miracle of the Krupp mortar. All that the official dispatches told the German public was that 'the enemy had not reckoned on the power of our artillery.'

## GUNNERS RETIRE TO A TUNNEL

“So far as I can learn, what was done at Liège was this:

“At some distance from a fort a space was cleared and a great mortar set in a concrete bed occupying a circle with a radius of 100 feet. Behind the mortar and outside this circle was a tunnel leading to a subterranean chamber. The great mortar was sighted, the projectile was set in place and then the gunners retired to their underground chamber, where they pressed a button and the mighty shot was fired.

“The concussion was terrible. Anything within fifty feet of the gun at the time of explosion would be injured. Even men in the neighboring armies complained of headaches and toothaches from the jar and the same complaints were made by the men in the forts where the projectiles exploded.

## PASSES THROUGH THREE WALLS

“The projectile pierced through one, two and three ordinarily impenetrable walls and buried itself in a fourth. Here it lay silent many seconds, then exploded like a volcano, bringing to the ground in ruins every stone which had stood upon another.

“A shot fired into the center of a fort buried itself deep in the ground and lay there as though gathering strength for its demoniacal eruption. Then, after twenty seconds, it exploded and razed the proudest walls in Belgium.

“Each shell costs \$2,500. What it contains nobody but the Krupps know. It is brought to the battlefield in pieces and assembled by the highest paid and most trusted of the Krupp engineers. It is aimed and loaded by them and not one member of the artillery corps in the Kaiser’s army has anything to do with it. The slogan of these men is ‘One shot for one fort.’

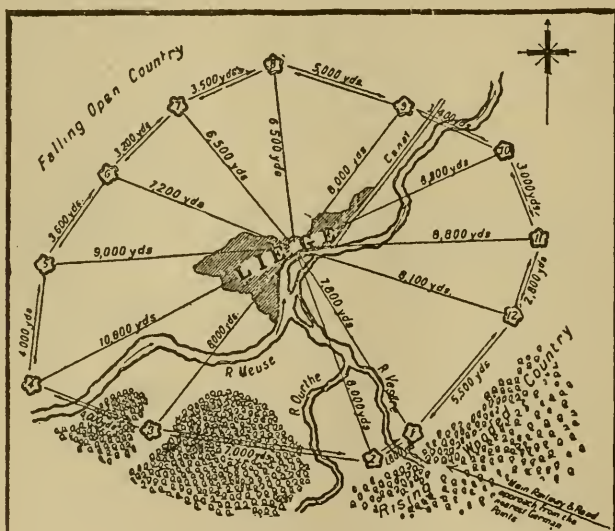
## KRUPPS RECENTLY IN DISGRACE

“Not a year ago the name of Krupp was disgraced throughout the world. Yet the Krupps in applying modern science at Essen at that time had built the most remarkable community of comfortable homes in existence and by modern science had provided for their men in a manner surpassed by no other concern. The same science working along different lines built the Krupp 42-centimeter mortar.

"There is something significant in this combination. This science is German and not the Krupps'. It is willing to work for peace and happiness, but it has proved that it can work for war. The Germans are working for the survival of the most scientific."

#### GENERAL LEMAN'S REPORT

General Leman, the Belgian commander who gained fame for himself by his defense of the Liège forts, was captured by the Germans. When made a prisoner, he sent a letter to King



LIEGE AND ITS RING OF FORTS

Albert in which he tells how he held the Liège forts after August 6, when only the temporary arrest of the foe seemed longer possible. The letter read as follows:

"After the honorable engagement of August 4, 5 and 6, I considered that the Liège forts could only play the role of forts of *arrete* (arrest or stoppage). I, nevertheless, maintained the military government in order to co-ordinate the defense as much as possible and to exercise a moral influence upon the garrison.

“Your Majesty is not ignorant that I was at Fort Loncin on August 6 at noon. You will learn with grief that the fort was blown up yesterday at 5:20 in the afternoon, the greater part of the garrison being buried under the ruins. That I did not lose my life in that catastrophe is due to my escort, who drew me from a stronghold whilst I was being suffocated by gas from exploded powder. I was conveyed to a trench, where I fell. A German captain gave me a drink and I was made a prisoner and taken to Liège.

“I am certain that I have shown carelessness in this letter, but I am physically shattered by the explosion of Fort Loncin. In honor of our arms I have surrendered neither the fortress nor the forts.

“I deign to ask your pardon, sire. In Germany, where I am proceeding, my thoughts will be, as they always have been, of Belgium and the King. I would willingly have given my life the better to serve them, but death was not granted to me.

“LIEUTENANT-GENERAL LEMAN.”

General Leman's letter furnishes direct confirmation of the effect of the new “Krupp mortar” (Germany's tremendous engine of death) at Liège.

#### BLEW UP HIS FORT

The French war office issued a report showing the valor of Major Nameche, the commanding officer of Fort Chaudfontaine, one of the Liège strongholds, which commanded the railroad to Aix-la-Chapelle by Verviers and the tunnel to Chaudfontaine.

A continual and extremely violent bombardment reduced the fort to a mere heap of ruins. Major Nameche judged that further resistance was impossible, blocked up the tunnel by running several locomotives into each other and set fire to the fuses leading to the mines surrounding the forts.

His mission then accomplished, Major Nameche, determined that the German flag should not fly even over the ruins of his fort, blew up the powder magazine, and perished.

#### PEASANTS AND TOWNSPEOPLE FLEE

Following the fall of Liège came a number of sanguinary engagements in northern Belgium; the unopposed occupation



of Brussels on August 20, and a four days' battle beginning on August 23, in which the Germans forced back the French and British allies to the line of Noyon-LaFère across the northern frontier of France. In the northern engagements the Belgians gave a good account of themselves, but were everywhere forced to give way before the innumerable hosts of the Kaiser, though not without inflicting tremendous losses on the invaders.

The retirement of the civilian population before the advancing masses of the German army was a pathetic spectacle. It was a flight in terror and distress.

On Tuesday, August 18, the German troops surged down upon Tirlemont, a town twenty miles southeast of Louvain, around which they had been massing for some days, presumably by rail and motor cars. The stories which had reached the inhabitants of Tirlemont of the happenings at surrounding towns and villages had not added to their peace of mind, and soon the moment for flight arrived. All kinds of civilians set out towards Brussels and Ghent for refuge. At times the road was full of carts bearing entire families, with pots and pans swaying and banging against the sides as the vehicles bumped over the roadway. The younger women, boys and menfolk who had been left in the towns and villages fled on foot. Priests, officials and Red Cross helpers mingled with the crowd. This stream of unfortunates uprooted from their homes was thus described by an eyewitness:

"These masses of broken-hearted people moved silently along, many weeping, few talking. With them they brought a few of their possessions, as pathetically miscellaneous as the effects one might seize in the panic haste of a hotel fire. Ox wagons, bundles and babies on dog-drawn carts or on men's backs, bicycles and handcarts laden with kitchen utensils, all mingled with the human stream. Here were to be seen sewing machines, beds, bedding, food, and there a little girl or boy with some toy clasped uncomprehendingly in a dirty hand; they also knew that danger threatened and that they must save what they held most dear. And even among these unhappy people there were some more unfortunate than the others—men and women who had no bundle, children who had no doll. All the way to Louvain there flowed this human

stream of misery. Back along the Tirlemont road rifle firing could be heard and entrenchments were to be seen in the town itself."

These scenes between Tirlemont and Louvain were typical of those on every road leading to the larger cities of Belgium as the inhabitants fled before the approach of the dreaded Uhlans.

#### FALL OF NAMUR

On the afternoon of Sunday, August 23, the fortress of Namur was evacuated by the Belgians, and the town was later occupied by the Germans.

The fortress was said to be as strong as Liège and it owed its importance in the present war to the fact that it was the apex of the two French flanks. One ran from Namur to Charleroi and the other by Givet to Mezieres.

Warned by their experiences at Liège, the Germans made most determined efforts against Namur. From the north, south and east they were able to bring up their big guns unhindered, and by assaults at Charleroi and Dinant they endeavored to break the sides of the French triangle. Namur finally collapsed but clever strategy enabled the French to fall back upon their main lines.

The fall of Namur, nevertheless, was a decided blow to the allies. This was admitted by the French minister of war, who said at midnight Monday, August 24, of the failure of the "Namur triangle":

"It is, of course, regrettable that owing to difficulties of execution which could not have been foreseen our plan of attack has not achieved its object. Had it done so it would have shortened the war, but in any case our defense remains intact in the face of an already weakened enemy. Our losses are severe. It will be premature to estimate them or to estimate those of the German army, which, however, has suffered so severely as to be compelled to halt in its counter-attack and establish itself in new positions."

The object of the French triangle, having its apex at Namur, was to break the German army in two. The British troops, as related in another chapter, were cooperating with the French at Mons.

When the Belgians evacuated Namur the Germans had knocked to pieces three of the forts to the northeast of the town with howitzer fire. Between these forts they advanced and bombarded the town, which was defended by the Belgian Fourth Division. Namur was evacuated when the defenders found themselves unable to support a heavy artillery fire.

The Germans attacked in a formation three ranks deep, the front rank lying down, the second kneeling, and the third standing. They afforded a target which was fully used by the men behind the Belgian machine guns. Some fifty or sixty howitzers were brought into action by the Germans, who concentrated several guns simultaneously on each fort and smothered it with fire.

#### DESTRUCTION OF LOUVAIN

At this stage of the war in Belgium an event occurred that riveted universal attention upon the German operations. On Tuesday, August 25, the beautiful, historic, scholastic city of Louvain, containing 42,000 inhabitants, was bombarded by the Germans and later put to the torch. The fire, which burned for several days, devastated the city. Many artistic and historical treasures, including the priceless library of Louvain University and several magnificent churches, centuries old, were totally destroyed. Only the Hotel de Ville (City Hall), one of the finest examples of Gothic architecture in Europe, was spared and left standing in the midst of ruins.

The Rotterdam Telegraf, a neutral newspaper, declared that in the devastation of Louvain "a wound that can never be healed" was inflicted "on the whole of civilized humanity." Frank Jewett Mather, the well-known American art critic, bitterly denounced the act as one of wanton destruction, saying that Louvain "contained more beautiful works of art than the Prussian nation has produced in its entire history."

Richard Harding Davis, the noted correspondent, witnessed part of the tragedy from the window of a car in which he was held prisoner by the Germans, and said in the New York Tribune:

"For two hours on Thursday night I was in what for six hundred years had been the city of Louvain. The Germans



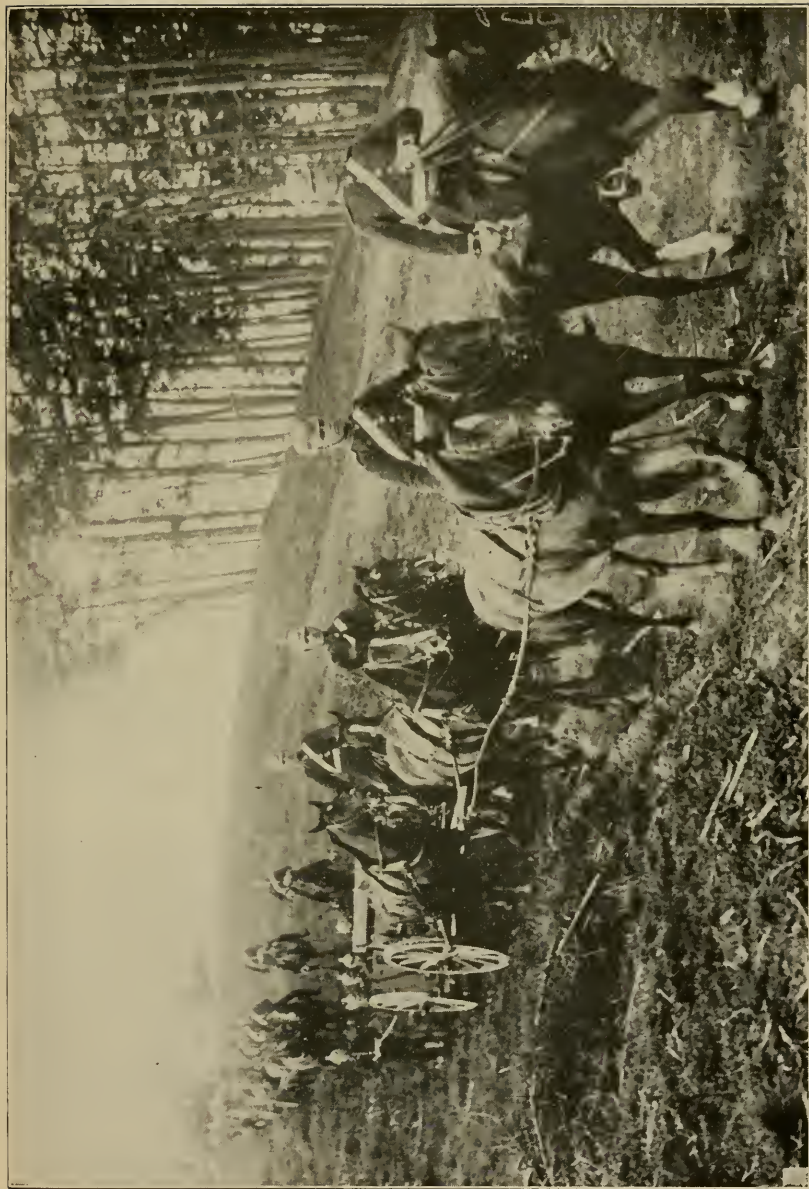
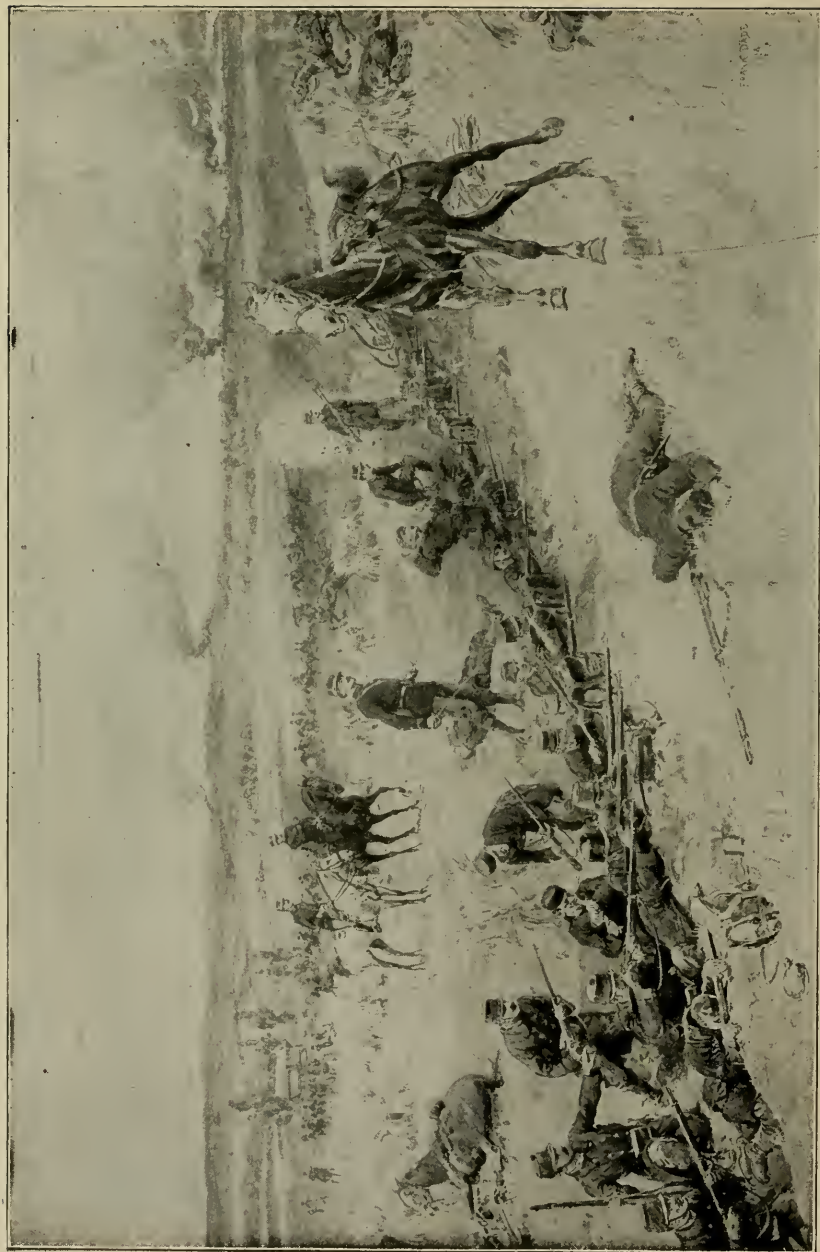


Photo by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.  
German Field Artillery on the March—A Most Efficient Arm of the Kaiser's Mighty Force, which Contains  
Innumerable Batteries with Splendid Horses, Deadly Krupp Guns and Perfect Equipment





Drawn by Frank Dadd, R. I., for London Graphic, from sketches by an Eyewitness.

Belgians in Action at Tirmont, Desperately Resisting the German Advance. There were Similar Hard-fought Battles at Diest, Aerschot, Louvain, Namur and Dinant, the Belgians inflicting heavy losses on the German Enemy.



International News Service.

1. Belgian Riflemen on Road to Louvain, Awaiting Coming of Germans.
2. Mealtime for Belgian Defenders in the Field near Diest.



**EARL KITCHENER OF KHARTOUM**

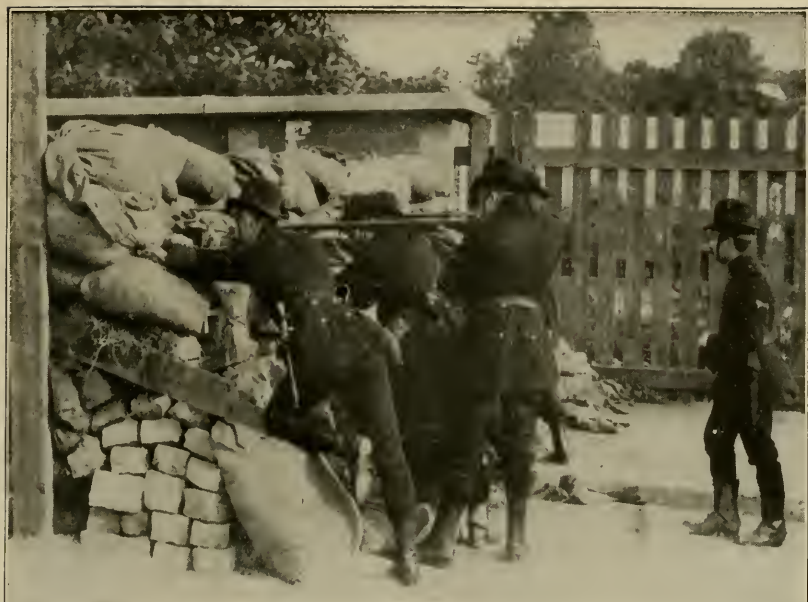
England's famous Field Marshal and Secretary of State  
for War, who lost his life at sea while on  
a military mission to Russia

---

**Born, June 24, 1850**

**Died, June 5, 1916**





International News Service.

1. Civic Guards Defending a Barricade in Suburbs of Brussels.
2. Belgian Soldiers Digging Trenches to Bury the Dead in a Harvest Field

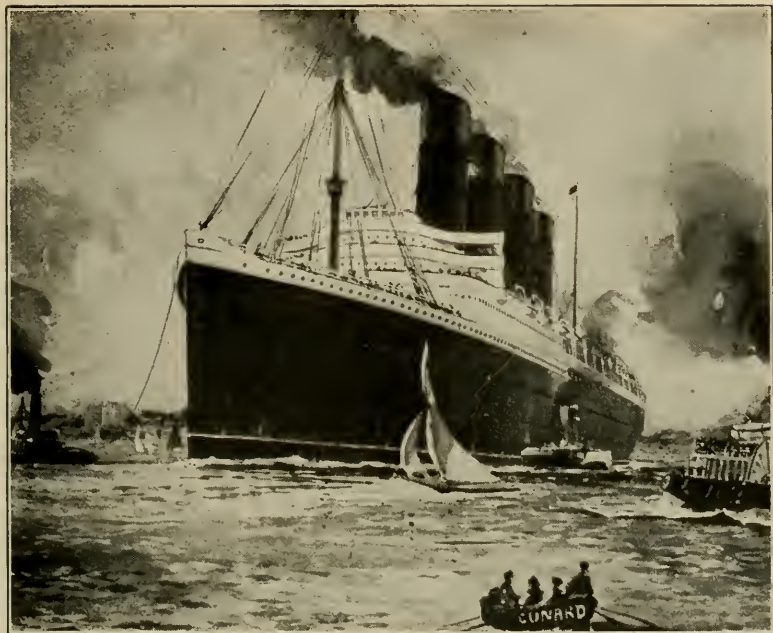




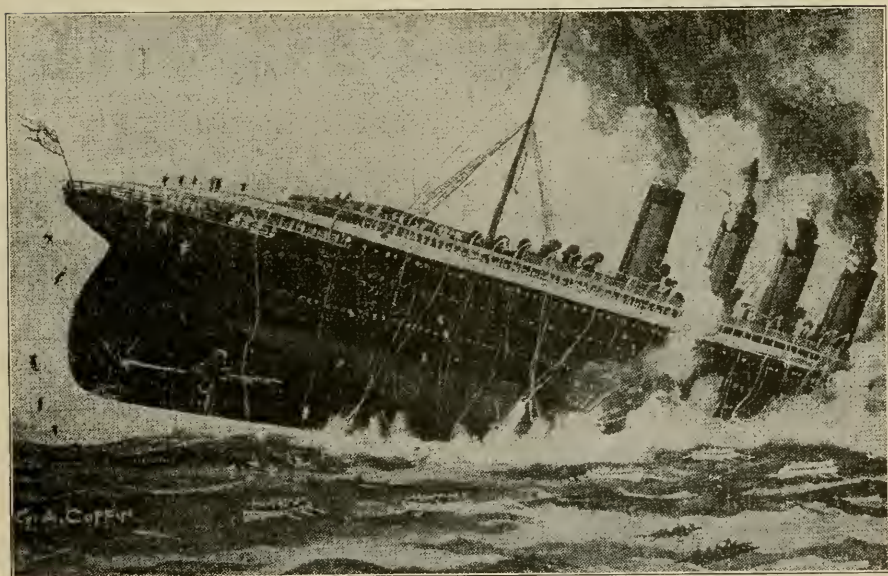
Copyr. Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

CAPTAIN WILLIAM T. TURNER, R. N. R.

Commander of the ill-fated Lusitania, who went down with his ship, but rose to the surface and was rescued.



The "Lusitania" entering Queenstown Harbor.



"With a thunderous roar, the giant liner disappeared."



Specially drawn by G. F. Morrell for The Graphic, London.

### War Map Showing Naval and Military Forces of





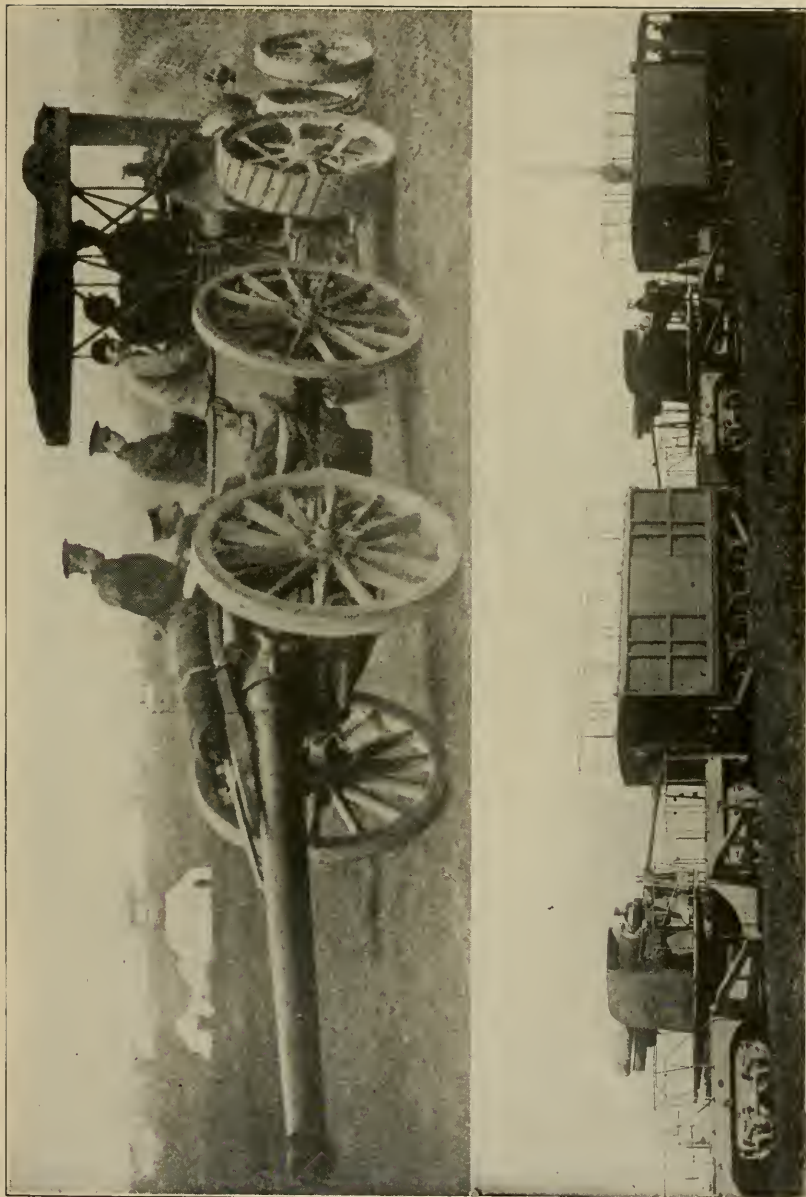
ence; Also All the Fortresses and Naval Bases.





Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

1. Motor-Propelled Field Kitchen in which the Meals of the Crown Prince of Germany were Prepared while Leading His Army.
2. Field Telegraph Outfit at a Brigade Headquarters of the French Army.



Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

1. A Heavy Field Gun of the British Artillery, Hauled into Action by Traction Engine.
2. New Armored Train Used by French Army, Equipped with Rapid Fire Guns, Conning Towers and Fighting Tops.



Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

1. French Air Scout Directing Movements of Field Artillery.

2. French Riflemen Ambushed to Fire on German Aeroplane.





Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

Red Cross Division of the German Army Preparing Food for the Wounded in a Field Hospital.—In this Respect, as in all Others, the Field Equipment of the Germans is Perfect





Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

1. Servian Red Cross Nurses Ministering to the Wounded.
2. German Ambulance Corps at Work After a Battle.



© International News Service.

1. French Cuirassier Being Fed by Belgian Woman.
2. Major Richardson of the British Army and Two of His Bloodhounds Used to Find Wounded Soldiers on Belgian Battlefields.





Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

**BELGIAN SOLDIERS IN DEEP TRENCHES AT HOFSTADE—MANY MILES OF SIMILAR TRENCHES WERE OCCUPIED BY THESE GALLANT DEFENDERS OF THEIR COUNTRY**



Sun Printing and Publishing Assn.

**HIGHLANDERS, HOLDING ON TO THE STIRRUPS OF THE SCOTS GREYS, CHARGING WITH THE CAVALRY IN THE BATTLE AT ST. QUENTIN**

were burning it, and to hide their work kept us locked in the railroad carriages. But the story was written against the sky, was told to us by German soldiers incoherent with excesses; and we could read it in the faces of women and children being led to concentration camps and of citizens on their way to be shot.

"The Germans sentenced Louvain on Wednesday to become a wilderness, and with the German system and love of thoroughness they left Louvain an empty, blackened shell. The reason for this appeal to the torch and the execution of non-combatants, as given to me on Thursday morning by General von Lutwitz, military governor of Brussels, was this: On Wednesday, while the German military commander of the troops in Louvain was at the Hotel de Ville talking to the burgomaster, a son of the burgomaster, with an automatic pistol, shot the chief of staff and German staff surgeons.

"Lutwitz claims this was the signal for the Civic Guard, in civilian clothes on roofs, to fire upon the German soldiers in the open square below. He said also the Belgians had quick-firing guns, brought from Antwerp. As for a week the Germans had occupied Louvain and closely guarded all approaches, the story that there was any gun-running is absurd.

"Fifty Germans were killed and wounded. For that, said Lutwitz, Louvain must be wiped out.

"No one defends the sniper. But because ignorant Mexicans, when their city was invaded, fired upon American sailors and marines, we did not destroy Vera Cruz. Even had Vera Cruz been bombarded, money could have restored it. Money can never restore Louvain. Great architects and artists, dead these six hundred years, made it beautiful, and their handiwork belonged to the world. With torch and dynamite the Germans have turned these masterpieces into ashes, and all the Kaiser's horses and all his men can not bring them back again."

#### AMERICAN GIRL'S AWFUL EXPERIENCE

Here is the story of Marguerite Uyttebroeck, who lived through the sacking of Louvain and reached London September 11 en route to the town where she was born—Assumption, Illinois—the youngest child of a family numbering nine.



Marguerite, aged 19, was sure that only her aged mother, who was with her, is alive. Three weeks before all her brothers and sisters were together with their parents in a farmhouse on the outskirts of Louvain.

"My mother and father," the girl began, "went to the United States from Belgium twenty-five years ago and settled at Assumption. We farmed there, but a year ago we all moved back to Louvain, where father bought a farm outside the city and renewed old acquaintances.

"There was fighting beyond Louvain the whole day and night before the Belgian soldiers began to run through the town with the Germans hot on the trail. We all hid at first and watched the pursuit between the shutters, but when the first scare was over we sat on the doorsteps and saw the parade of the German soldiers with their bands playing and their good order.

"Nobody had an idea they would harm us, and it was almost like going to a theater to see them march by. They didn't pay any attention to us for a time, but when the soldiers were dismissed they began getting drunk. Then things became bad.

"I was at a friend's house in the city, and the first thing I knew the house next door was on fire.

"When we tried to rush out into the street bullets came against the door like hail. My girl friend's father and mother were killed in their own vestibule. We turned around and ran upstairs to the attic and stayed there until flames began coming through the walls. Then we got on to the roof and climbed along over other roofs to the end of the street, got down through the house and out into the back garden over the wall, and began to run through the fields toward my house.

"It was dark. We ran almost into two Uhlans. One of them had an electric torch. He flashed it in my face and asked me where I was going.

"When I told him in English that I was going to my house, he asked if I was English. I told him I was an American, but he only laughed. He was going to dismount when his horse took fright at something, pitched him on the ground and stunned him. I fled while the other Uhlan was caring for his comrade.

"When I reached my house I found the Germans had taken father and my four brothers prisoners, and had taken them away — where, mother did not know.

"As we were trying to decide what to do another company of German soldiers came along, rode over the fence, and set fire to the house and barns. My two sisters told the soldiers what they thought of such wickedness and the last I saw of them they were being carried off by half a dozen soldiers, and never came back.

"While the fire was burning fiercely I suddenly remembered a piece of paper a priest gave my mother in Assumption, Illinois, when I was born. It was in my room and was my only proof that I was an American.

"So I ran around the house, climbed up over the trellis, and got into my room, already full of smoke. I took the paper, and then, with my mother, got back to the city and put her in a friend's house.

"I started looking for my father, brothers, and sisters. My hunt lasted five days and nights, and during that time I saw many terrible sights.

"On the sixth day it was announced that trains would take us to Germany, and when the soldiers came they told some old men to line up and march to the station. They obeyed gladly. When they got to the station they were lined up against a wall and shot.

"If the Belgian commission wants eyewitness proof of atrocities in Louvain I can tell them the names of women I saw outraged and then thrown into a fire, and other things even worse."

The girl, with her mother, sailed for New York September 12th on the *Megantic*.

#### GERMAN REPORT ON LOUVAIN

An official communication of the German general staff on the occurrences at Louvain, Belgium, dated August 30th and made public September 19, 1914, was as follows:

"The city of Loewen (Louvain) had surrendered and was given over to us by the Belgian authorities. On Monday, August 24th, some of our troops were shipped there and

intercourse with the inhabitants was developing quite friendly.

"On Tuesday afternoon, August 25th, our troops, hearing about an imminent Belgian sortie from Antwerp, left in that direction, the commanding general ahead in a motor car, leaving behind only a colonel with soldiers (landsturm battalion 'Neuss') to protect the railroad. As the rest of the commanding general's staff with the horses was going to follow and was collected on the market place, suddenly rifle fire opened from all the surrounding houses, all the horses being killed and five officers wounded, one of them seriously.

"Simultaneously fire opened at about ten different places in town, also on some of our troops just arrived and waiting on the square in front of the station and on incoming military trains. A designed cooperation with the Belgian sortie from Antwerp was established beyond a doubt.

#### PRIESTS SHOT PUBLICLY

"Two priests caught in handing out ammunition to the people were shot at once in front of the station.

"The fight lasted till Wednesday, the 26th, in the afternoon (twenty-four hours), when stronger forces, arrived in the meantime, succeeded in getting the upper hand. The town and northern suburb were burning at different places and by this time have probably burned down altogether.

"On the part of the Belgian Government a general rising of the population against the enemy had been organized for a long time. Depots of arms were found, where to each gun was attached the name of the citizen to be armed.

#### NOT WITHIN HAGUE AGREEMENTS

"A spontaneous rising of the people has been recognized at the request of the smaller states at the Hague conference as being within the law of nations, as far as weapons are carried openly and the laws of civilized warfare are being observed; but such rising was only admitted in order to fight the attacking enemy.

"In the case of Loewen the town already had surrendered without any resistance, the town being occupied by our troops. Nevertheless, the population attacked on all sides

and with a murderous fire the occupying forces and newly arriving troops, which came in trains and automobiles, knowing the hitherto peaceful attitude of the population.

"Therefore, there can be no question of means of defense allowed by the law of nations, nor a warlike *guetapens* (ambush), but only of a treacherous attempt of the civil population all along the line, and all the more to be condemned as it was apparently planned long beforehand with a simultaneous attack from Antwerp, as arms were not carried openly, and women and young girls took part in the fight and blinded our wounded, sticking their eyes out.

"SEVEREST MEASURES JUSTIFIED"

"The barbarous attitude of the Belgian population in all parts occupied by our troops has not only justified our severest measures, but forced them on us for the sake of self-preservation. The intensity of the resistance of the population is shown by the fact that in Loewen twenty-four hours were necessary to break down their attack.

"We, ourselves, regret deeply that during these fights the town of Loewen has been destroyed to a great extent. Needless to say that these consequences are not intentional on our part, but cannot be avoided in this infamous franc-tireur war being led against us.

"Whoever knows the good-natured character of our troops cannot seriously pretend that they are inclined to needless or frivolous destruction.

"The entire responsibility for these events rests with the Belgian Government, which with criminal frivolity has given to the Belgian people instructions contrary to the law of nations and incited their resistance, and which, in spite of our repeated warnings, even after the fall of Luettich (Liège), have done nothing to induce them to a peaceful attitude."

BELGIANS DENY CIVILIAN FIRING

The third section of the report of the Belgian commission appointed to inquire into alleged breaches of international law by the Germans was published September 20th and denied the German allegation that the inhabitants of Louvain



brought on the destruction of the town by firing on the Germans. It follows in part:

"The inhabitants of Louvain took no part in the fighting. Moreover, the destruction of the town came eleven days after the last Belgian troops had evacuated the district. Witnesses declare that the first shots were fired by intoxicated German soldiers at their own officers. Another fact established is as follows:

"A crowd of 6,000 to 8,000 men, women and children were taken by the One Hundred and Sixty-second Regiment of German Infantry August 28th to the Louvain Riding School, where they spent the night. The place of confinement was so small that all had to remain standing. The sufferings were so great that several children died in their mothers' arms and a number of women lost their reason."

#### PROCLAMATION TO CONQUERED TOWNS

The commanders of the German troops issued a proclamation to the inhabitants of every Belgian town they occupied, as follows:

"Citizens—A body of the German army under my command has occupied your city. Inasmuch as the war is carried on only between the armies, I guarantee in due form the life and private property of all the inhabitants under the following conditions:

"1. The inhabitants must strictly avoid every hostile act against the German troops.

"2. Food and forage for our men and horses are to be furnished by the inhabitants. Every such delivery will be paid for at once in coin, or a receipt will be issued, to be redeemed after the termination of the war.

"3. The inhabitants are to house our soldiers and horses in the best manner, and to keep their houses lighted at night.

"4. The inhabitants are to put the roads in a passable condition, to remove all obstacles erected by the enemy and to give the best support to our troops in order that they may be able to fulfill their task, doubly difficult in a hostile land. I shall adopt the most stringent measures as soon as the above conditions are not observed.

"Every citizen will be shot who is found with a weapon in his hands or committing any act whatever hostile to our troops."

#### DAMAGE TO VILLAGES NEAR NAMUR

The Namur newspaper, *L'Ami de l'Ordre*, which was for a time published under German censorship, gave a detailed summary of the buildings destroyed and the civilians killed in adjacent towns and villages, as follows:

Tamines, 100 houses and 80 killed; Gelbreesee, 19 houses; Franc-Waret, 16 killed; Wartel, 19 houses; Temploux, 18 houses and 2 killed; St. Gerard, 30 houses; Oret, 50 houses and the town hall; Bremer, 70 houses and 15 killed; Ermeton-Sur-Biert, 85 houses; Stare, 60 houses; Morialme, 15 houses; Cleriux, many houses and many persons; Boussulez-Walcourt, 54 houses; Gresnas les Courbin, almost destroyed; Mariembourg, almost destroyed; Baeswaever, many houses; Wavre, many houses.

#### GERMAN SUCCESSES IN BELGIUM

From the German standpoint, the invasion of Belgium as part of the planned march to Paris, though it met with unexpected resistance, was successful. The first round of the great international conflict ended with the honors on the German side, though the round was not decisive. The Anglo-French allies met with several serious reverses and the power and mobility of the German military machine was demonstrated. Though halted and perhaps seriously delayed at Liège and Namur, it "rolled back the allies' defense from Switzerland to the North Sea." The Belgian army, with French aid, kept the Germans from entering Brussels until August 20th and then retired behind the forts at Antwerp. The Kaiser's troops then overran practically all of Belgium, took Namur, fought back the British at Mons, forced the Allies south over the border at several points, and finally succeeded in occupying Lille, Roubaix and Valenciennes on the first line of French defense against invasion from the north. Simultaneously the French towns of Longwy and Luneville, to the east, were gained after severe fighting,

while the French invasion of Alsace-Lorraine, at first successful, was speedily checked.

Thus when the first month of war ended, the Germans had made good with their plan of seizing Belgium as a base of operations against France and had arrived in full force at the first line of French defenses, well on the way to the coveted goal, Paris.

But poor little Belgium, the "cockpit of Europe," ran red with blood.

## CHAPTER VI

### SURRENDER OF BRUSSELS

*Belgian Capital Occupied by the Germans Without Bloodshed—Important Part Played by American Minister Brand Whitlock—March of the Kaiser's Troops Through the City—Belgian Forces Retreat to Antwerp—Zeppelin Attacks on Antwerp—Dinant and Termonde Fall.*

AFTER the usual reconnoissances by Uhlans and motorcycle scouts, the van of the German army arrived at Brussels, the capital city of Belgium, on August 20. The seat of government had been removed three days before to Antwerp. The French and Russian ministers also moved to Antwerp, leaving the affairs of their respective countries in the hands of the Spanish legation. Brand Whitlock, United States minister to Belgium, remained at Brussels and played an important part in negotiations which led to the unresisted occupation and march through the city by the Germans in force on August 21 and the consequent escape of Brussels from bombardment and probable ruin.

At the approach of the German army the inhabitants of the capital were stricken with fear of the outcome. When the Belgian civic guards and refugees began pouring into the city from the direction of Louvain, they brought stories of unspeakable German atrocities, maltreatment of old men and children, and the violation of women.

"The Belgian capital reeled with apprehension," said an American resident. "Within an hour the gaiety, the vivacity, and brilliancy of the city went out like a broken arclight. The radiance of the cafés was exchanged for darkness; whispering groups of residents broke up hurriedly and locked themselves into their homes, where they put up the shutters and drew in their tricolored Belgian flags.



"The historic Belgian city went through a state of morbid consternation, remarkably like that from which it suffered on June 18, 1815, when it trembled with the fear of a French victory at Waterloo.

"In less than twenty-four hours the Belgian citizens were chatting comfortably with the German invaders and the allegations of German brutality and demoniacal torture dissolved into one of the myths which have accompanied all wars.

"Neither in Brussels nor in its environs was a single offensive act, so far as I know, committed by a German soldier. In a city of over half a million people, invaded by a hostile army of perhaps a quarter of a million soldiers, no act, sufficiently flagrant to demand punishment or to awaken protest came to my attention."

#### SURRENDER OF CITY DEMANDED

Prior to the occupation the German commander had sent forward a flag of truce demanding the surrender of the city. This was at midnight of Wednesday, August 19. The Belgian commandant replied that he was bound in honor to defend the town.

Brand Whitlock, the United States minister, then came to the fore. He recommended to the commandant and to Burgomaster Max the unconditional surrender of the city, pointing out how resistance might bring increased misfortune on the citizens. But the military commander remained adamant until orders arrived from King Albert consenting to the surrender of the city.

Mr. Whitlock was later congratulated officially by the king for his action. Undoubtedly he had a great deal to do with saving Brussels.

#### GERMAN MARCH A WONDERFUL SIGHT

The German entry into Brussels was a wonderful and impressive sight. Never, probably, was there a military spectacle on so vast a scale that went on without a hitch.

"It was impossible to believe," said an eyewitness, "that these men had been fighting continuously for ten days or that they had even been on active service. First of all came a few cyclists, then a detachment of cavalry; then a great mass of

infantry; then machine guns and field guns and more infantry; then huge howitzers; then a pontoon train and then more infantry from Thursday until Sunday morning without a break.

"The pontoon trains were impressive. The pontoons were carried upside down on trolleys drawn by six horses. All cavalry horses, as well as the horses of the artillery and commissary, were in wonderful condition.

"The men also were very fresh and keen. Each company was accompanied by a traveling stove, the fire of which was never out. There always was some hot drink ready for the troops, and the German soldiers told me that it is only this hot coffee and soup which keeps them going on long forced marches.

"The inhabitants of Brussels turned out by thousands to watch this endless procession of Germans as they marched, singing all sorts of songs and national airs. They sang in excellent tune, one company taking up the refrain as soon as another stopped. Like everything else, their singing is organized perfectly.

"An aeroplane kept its station ahead of the advancing host and it signaled both day and night by dropping various colored stars. What these signals meant we did not know, but all movements of the troops were regulated by them.

"I became overwhelmed after watching this immense mass of men marching by without a hitch for three days. I never believed such a perfect machine could exist.

"In all about 250,000 men passed through and thousands more never entered the city, but marched south direct from Louvain. These German soldiers, many of them, marched thirty miles daily for six successive days. Some were so weary that they slept as they walked and occasionally one fell exhausted, whereupon an officer would kick and prod until he awoke him. The man was then given hot coffee. The men are slaves of discipline and routine."

#### THRILLING PICTURE OF THE SCENE

An even more vivid picture of the march of the mighty German host through Brussels was given by Richard Harding

Davis, who in the New York Tribune described his impressions of the stream of armed men, rolling like fog through the echoing streets continuously for three days. It bore no resemblance to a parade or review, for these are human things, and as Mr. Davis said:

"The entrance of the German army into Brussels soon lost the human quality. It was lost as soon as the three soldiers who led the army bicycled into the Boulevard du Regent, and asked the way to the Gare du Nord. When they passed, the human note passed with them.

"What came after them, and twenty-four hours later was still coming, was not men marching, but a force of nature like a tidal wave, an avalanche, or a river flooding its banks. At this minute it is rolling through Brussels as the swollen waters of the Conemaugh Valley swept through Johnstown.

"At the sight of the first few regiments of the enemy we were thrilled with interest. After, for three hours, they had passed in one unbroken steel-gray column, we were bored. But when hour after hour passed and there was no halt, no breathing time, no open spaces in the ranks, the thing became uncanny, unhuman. You returned to watch it, fascinated. It held the mystery and menace of fog rolling toward you across the sea.

#### THE DISGUIISING GRAY-GREEN UNIFORMS

"The gray of the uniforms worn by both officers and men helped this air of mystery. Only the sharpest eye could detect, among the thousands that passed, the slightest difference. All moved under a cloak of invisibility. Only after the most numerous and severe tests at all distances, with all materials and combinations of colors that give forth no color, could this gray have been discovered. That it was selected to clothe and disguise the German when he fights is typical of the German staff in striving for efficiency to leave nothing to chance, to neglect no detail.

"After you have seen this service uniform under conditions entirely opposite, you are convinced that for the German soldier it is his strongest weapon. Even the most expert marksman can not hit a target he can not see. It is a gray-green, not the blue-gray of the American Confederates. It is

the gray of the hour just before daybreak, the gray of unpolished steel, of mist among green trees.

"I saw it first in the Grand Place in front of the Hotel de Ville. It was impossible to tell if in that noble square there was a regiment or a brigade. You saw only a fog that melted into the stones, blended with the ancient house fronts; that shifted and drifted, but left you nothing at which you could point.

"Later, as the army passed below my window, under the trees of the Botanical Park, it merged and was lost against the green leaves. It is no exaggeration to say that at a hundred yards you can see the horses on which the Uhlans ride, but can not see the men who ride them.

"If I appear to overemphasize this disguising uniform it is because, of all the details of the German outfit, it appealed to me as one of the most remarkable. The other day, when I was with the rear guard of the French Dragoons and Cuirassiers and they threw out pickets, we could distinguish them against the yellow wheat or green corn at half a mile, while these men passing in the street, when they have reached the next crossing, become merged into the gray of the paving-stones and the earth swallows them. In comparison, the yellow khaki of our own American army is about as invisible as the flag of Spain.

#### GERMAN EQUIPMENT MOST THOROUGH

"Yesterday Major-General von Jarotzky, the newly-appointed German military governor of Brussels, assured Burgomaster Max that the German army would not occupy the city, but would pass through it. It is still passing. I have followed, in campaigns, six armies, but, excepting not even the American army, the Japanese, or the British, I have not seen one so thoroughly equipped. I am not speaking of the fighting qualities of any army, only of the equipment and organization. The German army moved into this city as smoothly and as compactly as an Empire State Express. There were no halts, no open places, no stragglers.

"This army has been on active service three weeks, and so far there is not apparently a chin-strap or a horseshoe missing. It came in with the smoke pouring from cook-stoves



on wheels, and in an hour had set up post-office wagons, from which mounted messengers galloped along the line of column, distributing letters, and at which soldiers posted picture post-cards.

"The infantry came in in files of five, two hundred men to each company; the Lancers in columns of four, with not a pennant missing. The quick-firing guns and field-pieces were one hour at a time in passing, each gun with its caisson and ammunition-wagon taking twenty seconds in which to pass.

"The men of the infantry sang 'Fatherland, My Fatherland.' Between each line of song they took three steps. At times two thousand men were singing together in absolute rhythm and beat. When the melody gave way, the silence was broken only by the stamp of iron-shod boots, and then again the song rose. When the singing ceased the bands played marches. They were followed by the rumble of siege-guns, the creaking of wheels, and of chains clanking against the cobblestones, and the sharp, bell-like voices of the bugles.

"For seven hours the army passed in such solid column that not once might taxicab or trolley-car pass through the city. Like a river of steel it flowed, gray and ghostlike. Then, as dusk came and as thousands of horses' hoofs and thousands of iron boots continued to tramp forward, they struck tiny sparks from the stones, but the horses and the men who beat out the sparks were invisible.

"At midnight pack-wagons and siege-guns were still passing. At 7 this morning I was awakened by the tramp of men and bands playing jauntily. Whether they marched all night or not I do not know; but now for twenty-six hours the gray army has rumbled by with the mystery of fog and the pertinacity of a steam-roller."

#### HISTORIC TREASURES OF BRUSSELS

The city of Brussels, thus occupied by the Germans, contains art treasures that are priceless. The museum and public galleries are filled with masterpieces of the Flemish and old Dutch school, while the royal library comprises 600,000 volumes, 100,000 manuscripts and 50,000 rare coins. Unquestionably the Brussels Museum is one of the most complete on the Continent.

A prominent historic landmark of Brussels is the King's House (also called the Dreadhouse), an ancient structure, recently renovated. Within its walls both the Counts Egmont and Hoorn spent the last night before their execution, in 1567, by the hirelings of the Duke of Alva, the Spanish Philip II's tyrannical governor of the Netherlands, who, by means of the sword and the Inquisition, sought to establish the Catholic religion in those countries. Brussels boasts another historic relic known the world over—the equestrian statue of Godfrey of Bouillon, who led the Crusaders to the Holy Land. It stands upon the Place Royale, and was unveiled in 1848.

The magnificent Town Hall of Brussels would probably have suffered destruction, together with the city's other beautiful buildings, had not the government yielded without a struggle.

#### HEAVY WAR TAX LEVIED

General von der Goltz, appointed by the Kaiser military governor of Belgium, levied a war tax of \$40,000,000 on the capture of the capital. Other cities occupied by the Germans were also assessed for large sums, which in several instances had to be paid immediately on pain of bombardment. It was announced September 1 that the four richest men in Belgium had guaranteed the payment to Germany of the war tax. The four men were Ernest Solvay, the alkali king; Baron Lambert, the Belgian representative of the Rothschilds; Raoul Warocque, the mine owner, and Baron Empain, the railway magnate.

#### BELGIANS RETREAT TO ANTWERP

After the German occupation almost normal conditions were soon restored in Brussels, so far as civic life was concerned. It was speedily announced that the Germans intended to regard the whole of Belgium as a German province and to administer it as such, at least during the continuance of the war. The Belgian army retired to the north within the fortifications of Antwerp, where they were joined by French troops, but desultory fighting against the German invader continued at many points and the Franco-British allies soon came into contact with the advancing German army and dis-

puted its progress along the Mons-Charleroi line to the south of Brussels, as related in a subsequent chapter.

The retreat of the Belgian forces to Antwerp has been pronounced by military experts to have been a masterly piece of precaution and strategy. It is said that nothing could have been wiser than to forsake the unfortified town of Brussels, and to become intrenched in a city like that of Antwerp, which was surrounded by a strong series of almost unassailable redoubts. Moreover, with the establishment of the Belgian headquarters at this point of defense the people of Holland are said to have felt their neutrality was more than ever safeguarded and assured. The *Paris Figaro* said:

“By the encampment of a large force of European allies on the northwest of Belgium the safety of Holland is more than ever assured. Holland is a country which depends altogether upon the support and the neutral policy of adjacent monarchies, hence the relief which was experienced by the Queen of Holland when forces of France and Belgium took up their position as a kind of outpost in Antwerp. Antwerp is very well protected by fortifications, against which the German cavalry will throw themselves in vain.”

#### ZEPPELIN ATTACK ON ANTWERP

The first German demonstration against Antwerp took the form of a night attack on the sleeping city, August 24-25, by a Zeppelin airship, which dropped eight bombs. The result, according to the dispatches, was the killing of seven civilians, four of whom were women, the wounding of eight others, and the damaging of many buildings. Much indignation was expressed over this slaughter of non-combatants in their sleep, and the Belgian Government determined to make it an international issue on the ground that the attack constituted a violation of Article XXVI of the Fourth Convention of The Hague. This article provides that “the officer in command of an attacking force must, before commencing a bombardment, except in cases of assault, do all in his power to warn the authorities.” The *New York Staats-Zeitung*, however, maintained that this was “a hypocritical cry of protest,” and declared that, if the bombs had fallen on Berlin or Strasburg

instead of Antwerp, "the matter would be dismissed with the statement that such is war."

## ANOTHER ZEPPELIN ATTACK

The night of September 2 was signalized by a second Zeppelin attack on Antwerp. Several bombs were thrown and considerable damage done.

William G. Shepherd, staff correspondent of the United Press at Antwerp, forwarded an interesting description of the attack. He said:

"Before this war, experts used to say perfection of terrible instruments of killing would only tend to make war impossible. It doesn't do that, though. I watched the Zeppelin dropping bombs upon Antwerp last night, and such perfection only makes war more terrible, with a refinement of barbarism. As I saw the Zeppelin depart it seemed that the best argument against war was that it turned men into such merciless demons as these Zeppelin murderers.

"The wildest flights of imagination couldn't approach what happened in Antwerp twelve hours ago. Early in the evening a Belgian captain took me the rounds of his company stationed in the center of the city. His men were divided into small squads in a dozen streets.

"They were sitting on the sidewalks with their backs against the building walls, drinking hot coffee, which had been brought to them in an automobile. It seemed that his men were pretty well spread out in case of an attack by the Germans, but the captain said there were 30,000 soldiers scattered over the city in the same way. Later the reason was apparent.

"Not until 1 o'clock in the morning did the big red harvest moon begin to sink. It left the streets in pitch darkness. The city was so tranquil and still that the crackle of the dry autumn leaves which had fallen from the elms in the public square seemed noise. It was chilly, too, and the soldiers on the sidewalks were wrapped up in their big overcoats, and too drowsy or too comfortable to challenge.

## AWAKENED BY SOLDIERS

"An hour and a half later I was awakened by soldiers talking excitedly in the street beneath my window. But above



the sound of their voices was another noise, a terrific whirling, high in the air. I jumped from bed, rushed to the window and looked upward. There was a terrific explosion, far away, a deep booming roar. A moment later a spark came whirling and circling through the air like a shooting star gone mad. It sank into the skyline of roofs and another explosion boomed out.

"And then up against the stars I saw the Zeppelin, perhaps a mile high and out over the outskirts of the town.

"Another spark fell and there was a third explosion. Then a new sound filled the air. It began far away. It was the rattle of rifles—thousands of them. The firing grew nearer and louder. There were sharp orders. Under my window the soldiers began to shoot, the flashes lighting my room. They held their rifles straight upward. The sound grew louder and louder. Within a minute the din was indescribable.

#### 30,000 MEN SHOOTING

"Thirty thousand soldiers were shooting, each as fast as he could fire with his magazine rifle. The orders were not to try to hit the Zeppelin unless it was overhead. Every man's duty was to shoot straight up.

"They were filling the air with steel. They were putting up a fence of metal a mile high around the city and palace. They filled the air with death to anything that entered the zone above Antwerp. The big guns in the forts around the city began to boom. Aeroplane machine guns mounted on automobiles dashed about the streets, adding their burring, rattling sound to the din.

"In the midst of it all there were eight more of the big bass booms, the voice of the Zeppelin bombs, in quick succession. To the last, in the midst of the bullets and superhuman confusion, the Germans in the Zeppelin had tried to stick to the job. Two of the eight bombs fell within twenty and thirty meters of the Red Cross hospitals; the other six beat a Gargantuan tattoo on the field around the wireless station, which the airmen were evidently trying to destroy. The holes in the earth about the station were each the size and shape of a cistern.

"Ten minutes of firing had made the Antwerp sky unhealthy.

"As the last batch of bombs went over the sides of the car the balloon arose and sped away from the city.

"The firing died out slowly. Half an hour later the Zeppelin was reported at a point twelve miles away. Two children, three women and five men had been injured—though none seriously—and three houses destroyed. Nearly all the terrified families of the city had taken refuge in the cellars, for a week before the same Zeppelin had bombarded the town and killed several persons. The bullets fired by the soldiers came falling from the sky, but aside from breaking skylights they caused no injury. Folks going to work this morning picked them up for souvenirs."

During the month of September there were also several cavalry and artillery attacks on Antwerp, but these were as a rule easily repulsed by the forts and their Belgian defenders.

---

#### THE CITY AND PORT OF ANTWERP

Antwerp is one of the largest, most modernly equipped and efficient ports in Europe. It is only a short distance across the English Channel, and is the head of 1,200 miles of canals in Belgium which connect with the canal systems of Holland, France and Germany. On the harbor alone over \$100,000,000 has been spent and extensions are in progress which will cost \$15,000,000 more.

For the prosperity of Belgium, Antwerp is many times more important than Brussels, the capital. While the country has an enormous amount of coal and many factories and other industries, these would be of little value without the imports which enter through Antwerp.

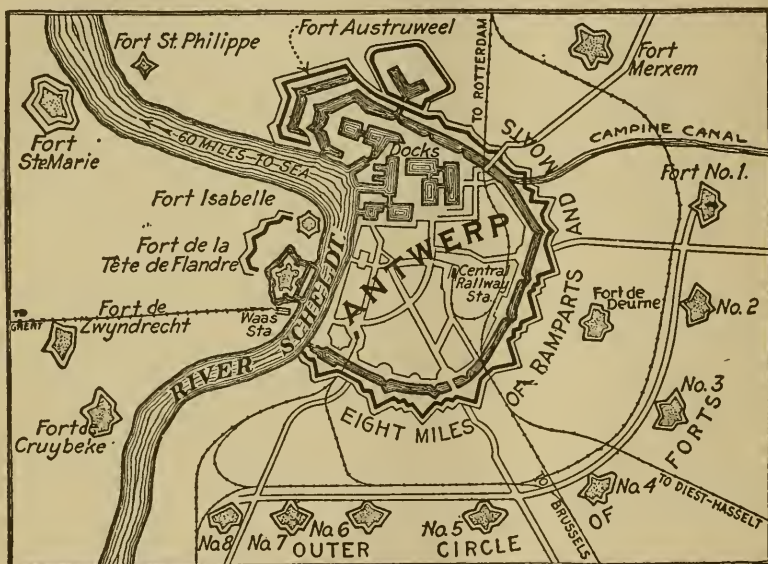
The city has about 360,000 inhabitants. Although located fifty-three miles inland on the Scheldt River, it has natural advantages for harbor purposes which have been recognized since the seventh century. Napoleon looked over the spot and started large harbor construction.

#### LEGEND OF THE GIANT

The origin of the first inhabitants of the city is unknown, but their commercial nature makes itself manifest in the se-

lection of the city site, and this nature seems to have been transmitted to those who now operate the port.

In all of the jewelry shops of Antwerp can be found souvenir spoons of the hand of a man. The legend goes that long years ago a terrible giant levied a tax on all goods going up or coming down the river, to half the value of the goods. He cut off and threw into the River Scheldt the right hand of any person who infringed this tariff. The souvenir spoons relate



ANTWERP AND ITS FORTIFICATIONS

to this old yarn. In addition the Flemish word "antwerpen" is supposed to have originated in the word for hand and the word "werpen," to throw.

A lieutenant under Julius Cæsar is said to have gone to Antwerp and engaged the terrible giant in a battle. The giant's head was ordered severed from his body, and his hand was cut off and thrown into the river. This fable is incorporated in a statue that stands opposite the town hall in Antwerp.

Ever since that time, according to popular belief, Antwerp has encouraged commerce. Over eighty different steamboat lines use the docks and quays. The passenger lines include boats to New York and Boston, New Orleans, London, Liverpool, Manchester, Grimsby, South American ports, Cuba, the Congo, East and South Africa and the far East.

In 1912 a total of 6,973 ocean-going vessels entered the port, and 41,000 other vessels.

Antwerp in 1870 ranked fifth in the ports of the world. Today it is believed to be second or third. Ten years ago the freight received from the inland was principally by the canals. Approximately 2,300,000 tons were received by rail and 5,500,000 tons by canal boats.

This ratio has not been maintained, but the canal traffic now is much larger than the rail tonnage. This gives an idea of the extensive use to which the European countries put their canals, and the reader may guess the value of the city at the head of the canal system to the Germans.

---

#### BLOODLESS CAPITULATION OF GHENT

Historic Ghent, with its quarter of a million inhabitants, was also surrendered peaceably to the Germans, and again the energy and initiative of an American, United States Vice-Consul J. A. Van Hee, had much to do with the avoidance of tragedy and destruction.

Learning that the advance guard of the German army was only a few miles outside the city, the burgomaster went out on the morning of September 8 to parley with Gen. von Boehn—in the hope of arranging for the German forces not to enter. An agreement finally was reached whereby the Germans should go around Ghent on condition that all Belgian troops should evacuate the city, the civic guard be disarmed, their weapons surrendered, and the municipal authorities should supply the Germans with specified quantities of provisions and other supplies.

The burgomaster was not back an hour when a motor car driven by two armed German soldiers appeared in the streets.

At almost the same moment that the German car entered



the city from the south a Belgian armored car, armed with a machine gun, with a crew of three men, entered from the east on a scouting expedition.

The two cars, both speeding, encountered each other at the head of the Rue Agneau, directly in front of the American consulate. Vice-consul Van Hee, standing in the doorway, was an eyewitness to what followed.

The Germans, taken completely by surprise at the sight of the foe's grim war car in its coat of elephant gray, bearing down upon them, attempted to escape, firing with their carbines as they fled. Notwithstanding the fact that the sidewalks were lined with onlookers, the Belgians opened on the fleeing Germans with their machine guns, which spurted lead as a garden hose spurts water.

The driver, fearing the Germans might escape, swerved his powerful car against the German motor precisely as a polo player "rides off" his opponent. The machine gun never ceased its angry snarl.

The Germans surrendered, both being wounded.

Appreciating that Ghent stood in imminent danger of meeting the terrible fate of its sister cities, Aerschot and Louvain, sacked and burned for far less cause, Mr. Van Hee hurriedly found the burgomaster and urged him to go along instantly to German headquarters.

They found General von Boehn and his staff at a chateau a few miles outside the city. The German commander at first was furious with anger and threatened Ghent with the same punishment he had meted out to the other places where Germans were fired on. Van Hee took a very firm stand, however. He told the general the burning of Ghent would do more than anything else to lose the Germans all American sympathy. He reminded him that Americans have a great sentimental interest in Ghent because the treaty of peace between England and the United States was signed there just a century ago.

The general finally said: "If you will give me your word that there will be no further attacks upon Germans in Ghent, and that the wounded soldiers will be taken under American protection and returned to Brussels by the consular authori-

ties when they have recovered, I will agree to spare Ghent and will not even demand a money indemnity."

The news that Mr. Van Hee had succeeded in his mission spread through the city like fire in dry grass and when he returned he was acclaimed by cheering crowds as the saviour of Ghent.

#### THE BURGOMASTER'S APPEAL

Blazoned on the front of the Town Hall suddenly appeared a great black-lettered document. It was a manly and inspiring proclamation by the burgomaster, similar to the splendid proclamation issued by M. Adolphe Max, burgomaster of Brussels, just before the German entry. He assured the inhabitants that he and all the town officials were remaining in their places, and that so long as life and liberty remained to him he would do all in his power to protect their honor and their interests. He reminded them that under the laws of war they had the right to refuse all information and help to the invaders; and called upon each citizen, or his wife, to refuse such information and help. Finally, he urged the citizens to remain calm, and stay in their homes.

"Vive la Belgique! Vive Ghent!" The proclamation ended in great capitals with this patriotic cry.

#### DINANT AND TERMONDE FALL

But other cities and towns of Belgium were not as fortunate as Brussels and Ghent in escaping damage and destruction.

Dinant, a town of 8,000 inhabitants, fifteen miles south of Namur, and dating back to the sixth century, was partially destroyed by the Germans in their advance on September 3 and 4. Early reports stated that a number of the most prominent citizens had been executed, including Mr. Humbert, owner of a large factory, who was slain in the presence of his wife and children.

The Germans alleged that citizens had fired on them from the heights about the city. They then drove all of the inhabitants out, shot some of the men as examples, took the gold from the branch of the National Bank and burned the business section.

On September 4 the town of Termonde met a similar fate. This town, 16 miles from Ghent, was fired in several places before the Kaiser's troops passed on. They also blew up a bridge over the River Escaut to the north, seeming to renounce for the moment their intrusion into the country of the Waes district. Afterward they directed an attack against the southwest front position of the Antwerp army and were repulsed with great losses.

Describing the burning of Termonde by the Germans, a Ghent correspondent said:

"By midday Sunday the blaze had assumed gigantic proportions and by Sunday evening not a house stood upright. This was verified at Zele, where there were thousands of refugees from Termonde. The Germans also pillaged Zele. The suburb of St. Giles also suffered from bombardment and fire."

A courier who knew Termonde as a flourishing town with fine shops, an ancient town hall of singular beauty and a number of churches of historic interest, found the place on September 11 a smoldering ruin, except for the town hall and one church, on a stone of which he saw the inscription "1311." These two structures were left intact, without so much as a broken window.

Termonde was burned for much the same reason as Louvain. On September 4 a German force came back from the field after having been severely handled by the Belgians, and the German commander, it is said, exclaimed:

"It is our duty to burn them down!"

The inhabitants were given two hours' grace, and German soldiers filed through the town, breaking windows with their rifles. They were followed by other files of troops, who sprayed kerosene into the houses, others applied lighted fuses and the town was systematically destroyed.

#### BOMBARDMENT OF MALINES

On Thursday night, August 27, the German artillery bombarded the ancient Belgian town of Malines. During the bombardment many of the monuments in the town were hit by shells and destroyed. When the artillery had ceased firing the inhabitants of Malines were advised to leave the town,

and many of the refugees, including a number of priests in civilian dress, spent the night in the church at Duffel. Amongst the damaged buildings were the Hôtel de Ville, the Courts of Justice, the Church of St. Pierre, and the Cathedral of St. Rombold. The Church of St. Pierre was totally destroyed, but the tower of the cathedral remained intact. The famous peal of bells, however, was destroyed during the earlier stages of the bombardment.

The town of Malines had a population of 55,000 inhabitants. Its history goes back a very long way. In 915 it came under the rule of the Bishops of Liège, and it is still regarded as the ecclesiastical capital of Belgium; in 1332 it was purchased by the Count of Flanders. Malines is well known to all tourists for its ancient buildings, some of them of the utmost beauty and dignity. The Cathedral of St. Rombold is a cruciform Gothic church with a tower 324 feet in height.

#### SCENES AT CARTENBARG, BELGIUM

Mr. A. J. Dawe, a prisoner of war and eyewitness of scenes at Cartenbarg, just north of Brussels, thus described the sights he saw there on August 28:

“For three terrible hours we had to stand watching the destruction. The Germans who were guarding us told us that from certain houses shots had been fired by the civilians during the morning upon a passing German troop, and that several Uhlans had been killed. They began upon the houses from which the shots were supposed to have been fired. These houses were soon spitting with fire and shooting up great flames. Here and there the fire soon spread along the whole street. The women and children were herded together and set aside. We heard the quick sounds of rifleshots as the escaping civilians were picked off. It was a terrible and brutal business—we had not yet seen Louvain, and to us it was our first experience of the real horrors of war.”

#### DESOLATION IN BELGIUM

Cardinal Mercier, Archbishop of Malines, Belgium, when in Rome attending the conclave that elected Pope Benedict XV as successor to the lamented Pius X, whose death on August 19 was partly due to grief over the war, gave out an in-



terview in which his eminence painted a terrible picture of the miseries suffered by his unhappy country as a result of the German invasion.

"I can't shut my eyes without seeing again the bodies of the Belgians," said the cardinal. "Desolated towns, villages and blood everywhere. I wanted to stay among my priests and remain with the holocaust of innocent victims of the savagery of the Germans.

"As I traveled through Belgium the spectacle of its unhappiness seemed to bear me back to my devastated Malines, to the side of my king and my suffragan of Liege, today a hostage, tomorrow, perhaps, a martyr. All along the roads I could see unburied bodies mingled with the carcasses of horses, and I could recognize some of the faces.

"What has taken place in Belgium is not war, but the outcome of hate. The Germans are taking their revenge for the stigma attached to them as violators of neutral territory.

"In undefended towns, after having bombarded the houses they have given the churches to the flames and have used the wooden statues on the altars as torches to light them to their deeds of blood. In Malines, a peaceable and undefended town, they made a target of the Church of St. Rombold.

"These bomb-carrying Germans wanted to strike at the head of Belgium; they wished to raze to the ground the Belgians' intellectual capital, throwing into flames alike the contents of laboratories and libraries. Ought not the word 'Droit,' ('Right') standing out in letters of gold on the old buildings, to have made them shudder?

"German deeds in Belgium have nothing to do with war either in the old days of chivalry or in its modern and historic form.

"When the lake of blood left by the Germans in Belgium has dried up it will be necessary to look for a slab of stone large enough to be a record of these crimes against the rights alike of Heaven and humanity."

## CHAPTER VII

### AT THE GERMAN FRONT

*Remarkable Story by American War Correspondent of His Visit to Gen. von Boehn's Headquarters in the Field—The German Fighting Machine—The General's Version of Alleged German Atrocities.*

ONE of the most vivid descriptions of the German army in the field was sent from the headquarters of the Ninth Imperial army at Chateau Lafère, near Renaix, Belgium, by Mr. E. Alexander Powell, war correspondent of the New York World, whose facile pen presented not only a remarkable panoramic picture of the German fighting machine as it rolled before his eyes, but also gave General von Boehn's version of the atrocities alleged to have been committed by the German troops in several of the smaller towns and cities of Belgium. Mr. Powell's thrilling story is of historic interest and read as follows:

Three weeks ago the government of Belgium requested me to place before the American people a list of specific and authenticated atrocities committed by the German armies upon Belgian noncombatants.

Today (September 9) General von Boehn, commanding the Ninth Imperial Field Army, acting mouthpiece of the German general staff, has asked me to place before the American people the German version of the incidents in question.

So far as I am aware I am the only correspondent in the present war who has motored for an entire day through the ranks of the advancing German army, who has dined as a guest of the German army commander and his staff, and who

has had the progress of the army on the march arrested in order to obtain photographs of the German troops.

This unusual experience came about in a curious and roundabout way. After an encounter in the streets of Ghent last Tuesday between a German military automobile and a Belgian armored car, in which two German soldiers were wounded [as described in the preceding chapter], American Vice Consul Van Hee persuaded the burgomaster to accompany him immediately to the headquarters of General von Boehn to explain the circumstances and ask that the city should not be held responsible for the unfortunate affair.

In the course of the conversation with Mr. Van Hee, General von Boehn remarked that copies of papers containing articles written by Alexander Powell criticizing the German treatment of the Belgian civil population had come to his attention and said he regretted he could not have an opportunity to talk with Powell and give him the German version.

Mr. Van Hee said that by a fortunate coincidence I happened to be in Ghent, whereupon the general asked him to bring me out to dinner the following day, and issued a safe conduct through the German lines.

#### TAKES AN AMERICAN PHOTOGRAPHER

Though nothing was said about a photographer, I took with me Photographer Donald Thompson. As there was some doubt regarding the propriety of taking a Belgian military driver into the German lines, I drove the car myself.

Before we passed the city limits of Ghent things began to happen. Entering a street, which leads through a section inhabited by the working classes, we found ourselves in the midst of a mob of several thousand excited Flemings. Above the sea of threatening arms, brandished sticks, and angry faces rose the figures of two German soldiers with carbines slung across their backs, mounted on work horses. It seems they had strayed into the city by mistake.

As we approached a burly Belgian raised a cane and the crowd made a concerted rush for the Germans. A blast from my siren opened a lane through the crowd and I drove the car alongside the terrified Germans.

"Quick," shouted Van Hee in German, "off your horses. Into the car. Hide your rifles. Sit on the floor. Keep out of sight."

The crowd, seeing its prey escaping, surged around us with a roar. For an instant things looked ticklish indeed.

Van Hee jumped on the seat.

"I am American consul," he shouted. "These men are under my protection. You civilians are attacking German soldiers in uniform. If a hair of these men's heads is harmed your city will be burned about your ears."

At that moment a Belgian shouldered his way through the crowd and leaped on the running board. Quick as a thought Thompson knocked up the man's hand and the same instant I threw on the power. The big car leaped forward like a startled horse, the mob scattering like autumn leaves before it.

It was a close call for every one concerned, but a much closer call for Ghent, for had those German soldiers been murdered by the civilians in the city streets no power on earth could have saved the city from vengeance. General von Boehn told me so himself.

#### HELP FOR U. S. REFUGEES

A few minutes later, as playlets follow each other in quick succession on the stage, the scene changed from tragedy to a screaming farce. As we came thundering into the little town of Sotteghem in a sleepy hollow of Belgium, we saw in the center of the town square a pyramid at least ten feet high of wardrobe trunks, steamer trunks, and suitcases. From the summit of this extraordinary monument floated an American flag.

As our car came to a sudden halt there was a chorus of exclamations in all dialects from Maine to Southern California and from the door of a nearby café there came pouring a flood of Americans. They proved to be a lost detachment of that great army of tourists which at the beginning of hostilities started its mad retreat for the coast, leaving Europe strewn with baggage.

This particular detachment had been caught at Brussels and as food supplies were running short they determined to



make a dash for Ostend. Perhaps "crawl" would be a better word, for they made the journey as far as Sotteghem in two cumbersome farm wagons. Upon reaching Sotteghem the Belgian drivers, hearing that the German army was approaching, refused to go farther and unceremoniously dumped their passengers in the town square.

When we arrived they had been there twenty-four hours. It was a mixed assemblage. Two school teachers, women of fashion, a Pennsylvania farmer, and a quartet of professional tango dancers from San Francisco, who had been doing a turn at the Palais du Danse in Brussels, were in the crowd.

Van Hee and I skirmished about, and after much argument succeeded in getting two farm carts to transport the fugitives into Ghent. For the thirty-mile journey the thrifty peasants demanded \$80.

The last I saw of the refugees they were perched on top of the luggage, piled on two creaking carts, rumbling down the road to Ghent, with their huge American flag flying above them, and singing at the top of their voices, "We'll never go there any more."

#### MILES OF GERMAN SOLDIERS

Half a mile out of Sotteghem our road debouched into the great highway which leads through Lille to Paris. We suddenly found ourselves in the midst of the German army. It was a sight never to be forgotten. Far as the eye could see stretched solid columns of marching men, pressing westward, ever westward.

The army was advancing in three mighty columns along three parallel roads. These dense masses of moving men in their elusive blue-gray uniforms looked for all the world like three monstrous serpents crawling across the countryside.

American flags which fluttered from our windshield proved a passport in themselves and as we approached the close-locked ranks they parted to let us through.

For five solid hours, traveling always at express train speed, we motored between the walls of the marching men. In time the constant shuffle of boots and the rhythmic swing of gray-clad arms and shoulders grew maddening and I be-

came obsessed with the fear that I would send the car plowing into the human wedge on either side.

It seemed that the ranks never would end, and as far as we were concerned they never did, for we never saw or heard the end of that mighty column.

We passed regiment after regiment, brigade after brigade, of infantry, and after them hussars, Uhlans, cuirassiers, field batteries, more infantry, more field guns, ambulances, then siege guns, each drawn by thirty horses, engineers, telephone corps, pontoon wagons, armored motor cars, more Uhlans, the sunlight gleaming on their forest of lances, more infantry in spiked helmets, all sweeping by as irresistible as a mighty river, with their faces turned toward France.

This was the Ninth field army and composed the very flower of the empire, including the magnificent troops of the Imperial Guard. It was first and last a fighting army. The men were all young. They struck me as being keen as razors and as hard as nails. The horses were magnificent. They could not have been better. The field guns of the Imperial Guard were almost twice the size of any used by our army.

#### THIRTY-TWO HORSES DRAW ONE GIANT HOWITZER

But the most interesting of all, of course, were the five gigantic howitzers, each drawn by sixteen pairs of horses. These howitzers can tear a city to pieces at a distance of a dozen miles.

Every contingency seems to have been foreseen. Nothing was left to chance or overlooked. Maps of Belgium, with which every soldier is provided, are the finest examples of topography I have ever seen. Every path, every farm building, every clump of trees, and every twig is shown.

At one place a huge army wagon containing a complete printing press was drawn up beside the road and a morning edition of the *Deutsche Krieger Zeitung* (German War News) was being printed and distributed to the passing men. It contained nothing but accounts of German victories of which I never had heard, but it seemed greatly to cheer the men.

Field kitchens with smoke pouring from their stovepipe funnels rumbled down the lines, serving steaming soup and

coffee to the marching men, who held out tin cups and had them filled without once breaking step.

There were wagons filled with army cobblers, sitting cross-legged on the floor, who were mending soldiers' shoes just as if they were back in their little shops in the Fatherland. Other wagons, to all appearances ordinary two-wheeled farm carts, hid under their arched canvas covers machine guns which could instantly be brought into action.

The medical corps was as magnificent as businesslike. It was as perfectly equipped and as efficient as a great city hospital.

Men on bicycles with a coil of insulated wire slung between them strung a field telephone from tree to tree so the general commanding could converse with any part of the fifty-mile-long column.

The whole army never sleeps. When half is resting the other half is advancing. The soldiers are treated as if they were valuable machines which must be speeded up to the highest possible efficiency. Therefore, they are well fed, well shod, well clothed, and worked as a negro teamster works mules.

#### SOLDIER GIVEN TERRIFIC BEATING

Only men who are well cared for can march thirty-five miles a day week in and week out. Only once did I see a man mistreated. A sentry on duty in front of the general headquarters failed to salute an officer with sufficient promptness, whereupon the officer lashed him again and again across the face with a riding whip. Though welts rose with every blow, the soldier stood rigidly at attention and never quivered.

As we were passing a German outpost a sentry ran out and signaled us:

"Are you Americans?"

"We are," I said.

"Then I have orders to take you to the commandant," he said.

"But I am on my way to see General von Boehn. I have a pass signed by the general himself," I said.

"No matter," the man stubbornly insisted, "you must come with me to the commander. He has so ordered."

So there was nothing for it but to go with the soldier. He had a most compelling way about him. We had visions of prison cells, courts-martial, and firing parties, though we tried to laugh it off. We found the commandant and his officers quartered at a farmhouse a few rods down the road. He proved to be a stout, florid faced, boisterous captain of infantry.

"I'm sorry to delay you," he said, "but I ordered the sentries to stop the first American car that passed along the road. I have a brother in America and I want to send a letter to him to let him know that all is well with me. You will send it to him?"

[Of course the promise was made and Mr. Powell was then permitted to proceed.]

#### FINALLY REACHES GENERAL VON BOEHN

It was considerably past midday and we were within a few miles of the French frontier when we saw a guidon, which signifies the presence of the head of the army, planted at the entrance of a splendid old chateau. As we passed through the iron gates and whirled up the stately tree-lined drive and drew up in front of the terrace, a dozen officers in staff uniform came running out to meet us. For a few minutes it felt as if we were being welcomed at a country house in America instead of at the headquarters of the German army in the field. So perfect was the field telephone service that the staff had been able to keep in touch with our progress along the lines and were waiting dinner for us.

General von Boehn I found to be a red-faced, gray-mustached, jovial old warrior who seemed much worried for fear we were not getting enough to eat, particularly not enough to drink. He explained that the Belgian owners of the chateau had displayed bad taste to run away and take their servants with them, leaving only one bottle of champagne in the cellar. That bottle was good as far as it went, however.

Nearly all of the officers spoke English and during the meal the conversation was all of the United States, for one of them had been attached to the embassy at Washington and another had attended the army school at Fort Riley, Kansas.



After dinner we grouped ourselves on the terrace in the self-conscious attitude people always assume when having their pictures taken, and Thompson made some photographs. They probably are the only ones of a German general and an American war correspondent who was not under arrest.

Then we gathered about the table, on which was spread a staff map of the war area, and got down to serious business. The general began by asserting that the stories of atrocities perpetrated on Belgian noncombatants were a tissue of lies.

"Look at these officers about you," he said. "They are gentlemen like yourself. Look at the soldiers marching past in the road out there. Most of them are fathers of families. Surely you don't believe they would do the things they have been accused of."

#### EXPLAINS AERSCHOT CRIMES

"Three days ago, general," I said, "I was in Aerschot. The whole town now is but a ghastly, blackened, blood-stained ruin."

"When we entered Aerschot the son of the burgomaster came into the room, drew a revolver, and assassinated my chief of staff," the general said. "What followed was only retribution. The townspeople only got what they deserved."

"But why wreak your vengeance on women and children?"

"None has been killed," the general asserted positively.

"I am sorry to contradict you, general," I asserted with equal positiveness, "but I have myself seen their mutilated bodies. So has Mr. Ginson, secretary of the American legation at Brussels, who was present during the destruction of Louvain."

"Of course, there always is danger of women and children being killed during street fighting," said Gen. von Boehn, "if they insist on coming into the street. It is unfortunate, but it is war."

#### INFORMATION STARTLES THE GENERAL

"But how about a woman's body I saw, with her hands and feet cut off? How about a white-haired man and his son whom I helped bury outside Sempstad, who had been killed merely because a retreating Belgian had shot a German sol-

dier outside their house? There were twenty-two bayonet wounds on the old man's face. I counted them. How about the little girl 2 years old who was shot while in her mother's arms by a Uhlan, and whose funeral I attended at Beystopdenberg? How about the old man who was hung from the rafters in his house by his hands and roasted to death by a bonfire being built under him?"

The general seemed somewhat taken aback by the amount and exactness of my data.

"Such things are horrible, if true," he said. "Of course our soldiers, like soldiers of all armies, sometimes get out of hand and do things which we would never tolerate if we knew it. At Louvain, for example, I sentenced two soldiers to twelve years' penal servitude apiece for assaulting a woman."

#### THE LOUVAIN LIBRARY INCIDENT

"Apropos of Louvain," I remarked, "why did you destroy the library? It was one of the literary storehouses of the world."

"We regretted that as much as any one else," answered the general. "It caught fire from burning houses and we could not save it."

"But why did you burn Louvain at all?" I asked.

"Because the townspeople fired on our troops. We actually found machine guns in some of the houses." And smashing his fist down on the table, he continued: "Whenever civilians fire upon our troops we will teach them a lasting lesson. If women and children insist on getting in the way of bullets, so much the worse for the women and children."

"How do you explain the bombardment of Antwerp by Zeppelins?" I queried.

#### EXPLAINS THE ZEPPELIN BOMBS

"Zeppelins have orders to drop their bombs only on fortifications and soldiers," he answered.

"As a matter of fact," I remarked, "they only destroyed private houses and civilians, several of them women. If one of those bombs had dropped 200 yards nearer my hotel I wouldn't be smoking one of your excellent cigars today."

"That is a calamity which I thank God didn't happen."

"If you feel for my safety as deeply as that, general," I said earnestly, "you can make quite sure of my coming to no harm by sending no more Zeppelins."

"Well," he said, laughing, "we will think about it." He continued gravely:

"I trust you will tell the American people what I have told you today. Let them hear our side of this atrocity business. It is only justice that they should be made familiar with both sides of the question."

I have quoted my conversation with the general as nearly verbatim as I can remember it. I have no comment to make: I will leave it to my readers to decide for themselves just how convincing are the answers of the German general staff to the Belgian accusations.

#### PHOTOGRAPHS GERMAN ARMY

Before we began our conversation I asked the general if Mr. Thompson might be permitted to take photographs of the great army passing. Five minutes later Thompson was whirled away in a military motor car ciceroned by the army officer who had attended our army school at Fort Riley. It seems they stopped the car beside the road in a place where the light was good, and when Thompson saw approaching a regiment or battery of which he wished a picture he would tell the officer, whereupon the officer would blow his whistle, and the whole column would halt.

"Just wait a few minutes until the dust settles," Thompson would remark, nonchalantly lighting a cigaret, and the Ninth Imperial Army, whose columns stretched over the countryside as far as the eye could see, would stand in its tracks until the air was sufficiently clear to get a picture.

Thus far the only one who has succeeded in halting the German army is this little photographer from Kansas.

#### A SAMPLE OF GERMAN GUNNERY

As a field battery of the Imperial Guard rumbled past, Thompson made some remark about the accuracy of the American gunners at Vera Cruz.

"Let us show you what our gunners can do," said the officer, and gave an order. There were more orders, a per-

fect volley of them, a bugle shrilled harshly, the eight horses strained against their collars, the drivers cracked their whips, and the gun left the road, bounded across a ditch, and swung into position in an adjacent field.

On a knoll three miles away an ancient windmill was beating the air with its huge wings. The gun was fired, the shell hit the windmill fair and square and tore it into splinters.

"Good work!" Thompson observed critically. "If those fellows of yours keep on they'll be able to get a job in the American navy after the war."

In all the annals of modern war I do not believe there is a parallel to this American war photographer halting with an upraised, peremptory hand the advancing army, leisurely photographing regiment after regiment, and then having a field gun of the Imperial Guard go into action solely to gratify his curiosity.

#### OFFICERS PART OF A MACHINE

They were courteous and hospitable to me, these German officers, and I have been immensely interested in all I have seen. But when all is said and done they impress me, not as human beings who have weaknesses and virtues, likes and dislikes of their own, but rather as parts of a more or less important and mighty highly efficient machine directed and controlled by cold, calculating intelligence in faraway Berlin.

That machine has about as much of the human element in it as a meat chopper or the death chair at Sing Sing. Its mission is to crush, pulverize, obliterate, and destroy, and no considerations of civilization, chivalry, or humanity will affect it.

These Germans with their guns, set faces, their monotonous uniforms, and the ceaseless shuffle of their boots are getting on my nerves. My car is at the door. I am going back to my friends, the Belgians.



## HYMN BEFORE ACTION

BY RUDYARD KIPLING

*The earth is full of anger,  
The seas are dark with wrath,  
The Nations in their harness  
Go up against our path:  
Ere yet we loose the legions—  
Ere yet we draw the blade,  
Jehovah of the Thunders,  
Lord God of Battles, aid!*

*High lust and froward bearing,  
Proud heart, rebellious brow—  
Deaf ear and soul uncaring,  
We seek Thy mercy now!  
The sinner that forswore Thee,  
The fool that passed Thee by,  
Our times are known before Thee:  
Lord, grant us strength to die!*

*From panic, pride and terror,  
Revenge that knows no rein,  
Light haste and lawless error,  
Protect us yet again.  
Cloak Thou our undeserving,  
Make firm the shuddering breath,  
In silence and unswerving  
To haste Thy lesser death!*

*E'en now their vanguard gathers,  
E'en now we face the fray—  
As Thou didst help our fathers,  
Help Thou our host today!  
Fulfilled of signs and wonders  
In life, in death made clear—  
Jehovah of the Thunders,  
Lord God of Battles, hear!*

## CHAPTER VIII

### BRITAIN RAISES AN ARMY

*Earl Kitchener Appointed Secretary for War—A New Volunteer Army—Expeditionary Force Landed in France—Field Marshal Sir John French in Command—Colonies Rally to Britain's Aid—The Canadian Contingent—Indian Troops Called For—Native Princes Offer Aid.*

**A**FTER the declaration of war by Great Britain against Germany on August 4, the first important development in England was the appointment of Earl Kitchener of Khartoum as secretary of state for war. This portfolio had been previously held by the Rt. Hon. H. H. Asquith, premier and first lord of the treasury. Lord Kitchener being the idol of the British army and most highly esteemed by the nation generally for his powers of organization and administration, as well as for his military fame, the appointment increased the confidence of the British people in the Liberal Government and awakened their enthusiasm for war. Parliament unanimously passed a vote of credit for \$500,000,000 on August 6.

Lord Kitchener immediately realized the serious nature of the task confronting his country as an ally of France against the military power of Germany. His first step was to increase the regular army. The first call was for 100,000 additional men. This was soon increased to 500,000. Within a month there were 439,000 voluntary enlistments and then a further call was made for 500,000 more, bringing the strength of the British army up to 1,854,000 men, a figure unprecedented for Great Britain.

The war fever grew apace in England. All classes of society furnished their quota to the colors for service in Belgium and France. The period of enlistment was "for the war" and a wave of patriotic fervor swept over the British Isles and over

all the colonies of Britain beyond the seas. Political differences were forgotten and the empire presented a united front, as never before. If Germany had counted on internal dissension keeping England out of the fray, the expectation proved unfounded. Englishmen, Irishmen and Scotsmen stood shoulder to shoulder. The Irish Home Rule controversy was dropped by common consent. The men of Ulster and the Irish Nationalists struck hands and agreed to forget their differences in the presence of national danger.

#### MR. REDMOND'S PATRIOTIC SPEECH

In the House of Commons on August 3, when Sir Edward Grey, foreign secretary, made his momentous declaration as to Germany's intended attack on Belgium, William E. Redmond, the Irish Nationalist leader, uttered a memorable declaration of Irish loyalty, which practically marked the close of the long quarrel between Ireland and the English people. In words that will be remembered while the British race endures, he declared:

"I say that the coasts of Ireland will be defended from foreign invasion by her armed sons, and for this purpose armed Nationalist Catholics in the south will be only too glad to join arms with the armed Protestant Ulstermen in the north. Is it too much to hope that out of this situation there may spring a result which will be good, not merely for the Empire, but for the future welfare and integrity of the Irish nation? If the dire necessity is forced upon this country, we offer to the Government of the day that they may take their troops away, and that if it is allowed to us, in comradeship with our brethren in the north, we will ourselves defend the coasts of our country."

Sir Edward Carson, the Ulster leader, responded in similar vein and all danger of Irish disaffection in the hour of Britain's need had disappeared.

#### STEPS TO AVERT PANIC

Prompt steps were taken by the British Government to avert the dangers of a financial or commercial crisis. A Postponement of Payments bill was passed by Parliament and this

furnished the machinery for a general "moratorium," should such a measure be found necessary. This meant that, if need be, in view of the hardship of extraordinary times, honest debts would not be pressed for payment until the war was over. Public confidence was also restored by the decision of the Government to undertake the state insurance of merchant vessels, so as to secure the transportation of food to the British Isles. The issue of one-pound and ten-shilling notes helped to restore normal conditions and by Friday, August 7, satisfactory arrangements were made by the Government for the reopening of the banks, which had been temporarily closed, throughout the country. Trade resumed normal conditions and the Bank of England rate, which earlier in the week had mounted to 10 per cent, was reduced on August 8 to 5 per cent.

There were some panicky conditions and a disquieting collapse on the London Stock Exchange during the last days of feverish diplomacy, and it was due to the financial solidity of the British nation, no less than to its level-headedness and the promptness of government measures, that the declaration of war, instead of precipitating worse conditions, cleared the atmosphere.

#### **BRITISH TROOPS LAND IN FRANCE**

While the British army was being mobilized, the utmost secrecy was observed regarding all movements of troops. The newspapers refrained from publishing even the little they knew and an expeditionary force, composed of the flower of the British army and numbering approximately 94,000 men of all arms of the service, was assembled, transported across the English Channel and landed at Boulogne and other French ports behind a veil of deepest mystery, so far as the British public and the world at large were concerned.

The old town of Plymouth, on the Channel, was the chief port of embarkation for the troops and the main concentration point in England, but troops embarked also at Dublin, Ireland; Liverpool; Eastbourne; Southampton, and other cities. Not a mention of the midnight sailings of transports carrying troops, horses, automobiles, artillery, hospital and commissary equipment and supplies was allowed to be printed in the newspapers,



nor was it known how many troops were being sent across the Channel.

The landing in France was effected between the 10th and the 20th of August without the loss of a single man, and on the 23d, having joined forces with the French army under General Joffre, commander-in-chief, the British found themselves in touch with the German enemy at Mons in Belgium.

#### FIELD-MARSHAL FRENCH IN COMMAND

The expeditionary force was in supreme command of Field Marshal Sir John D. P. French, a veteran officer of high military repute, with Maj.-Gen. Sir A. Murray as chief of staff. Other noted officers were Lieut.-Gen. Sir Douglas Haig, commander of the First Corps; Lieut.-Gen. Sir James Grierson, commander of the Second Corps; Maj.-Gen. W. P. Pulteney, commander of the Third Corps, and Maj.-Gen. Edmund Allenby, in command of the Cavalry Division. The home army was left in command of Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton.

Hardly had the expedition landed in France when the death was reported of the commander of the Second Corps, Sir James Grierson, who succumbed to heart disease while on his way to the front, dropping dead on a train. He was given a notable military funeral in London. Gen. Sir H. L. Smith-Dorrien was appointed to succeed him in command of the Second Corps.

The British troops were received in France with loud acclaim and Field Marshal French, on visiting Paris for a conference at the French war office before proceeding to the front, was greeted by a popular demonstration that showed how welcome British aid was to the French in their critical hour.

The British field force was composed of three army corps, each comprising two divisions, and there was also an extra cavalry division.

Each army corps consists of twenty-four infantry battalions of about one thousand men each on a war footing; six cavalry regiments, eight batteries of horse artillery of six guns each, eighteen batteries of field artillery, two howitzer batteries, and troops of engineers, signal corps, army service corps and other details.

The number of men in each army corps was therefore approximately as follows:

Infantry .....	24,000
Cavalry .....	3,600
Horse artillery .....	800
Field artillery .....	1,800
Howitzer batteries .....	250
Signal, army service, commissary, etc.....	900

Thus the first British field force landed in France aggregated about 94,000 men, including the extra cavalry division. These were added to almost daily during the following weeks, until by September 20 the British had probably 200,000 men co-operating with the French army north and east of Paris.

---

#### COLONIES RALLY TO BRITAIN

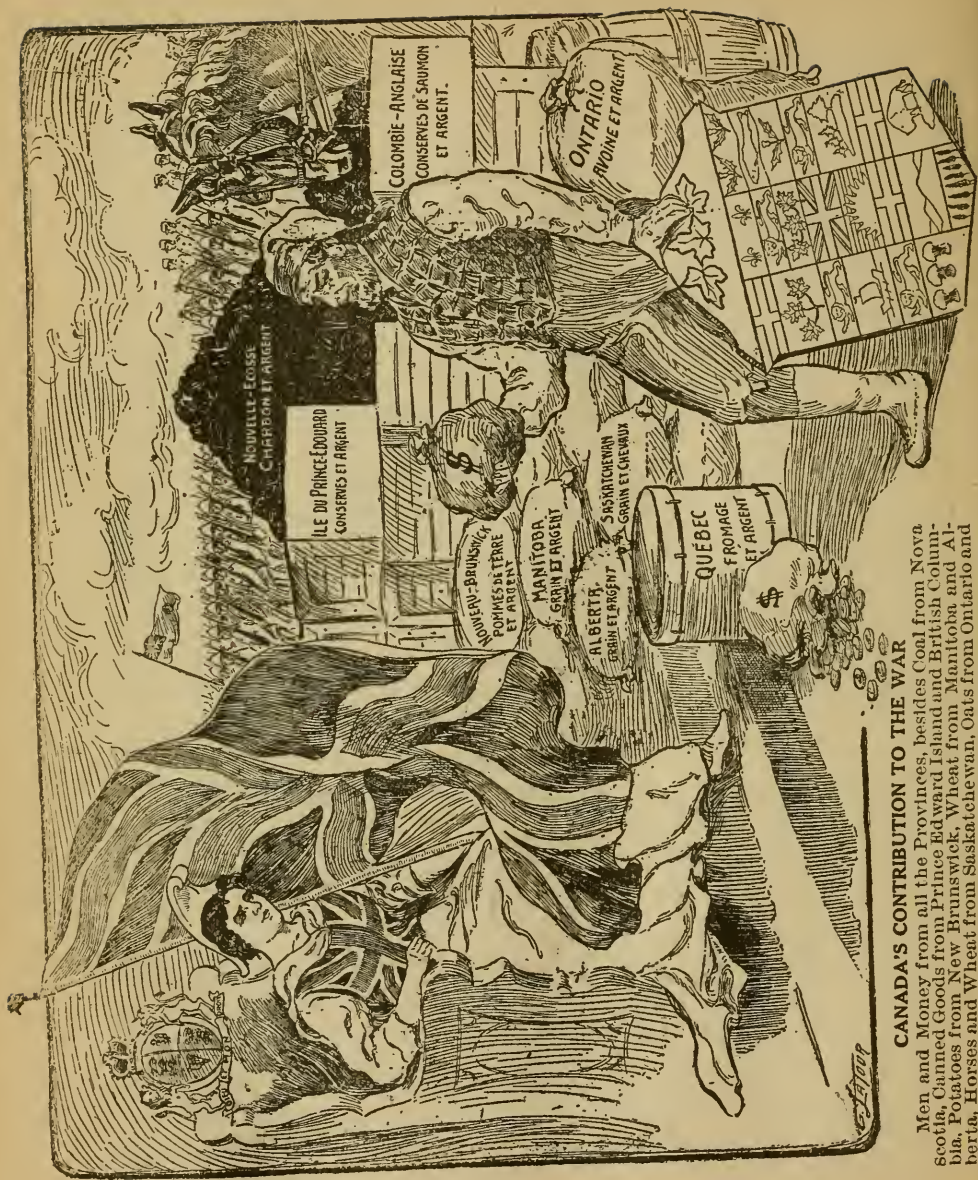
At the prospect of war with Germany the dominions of the British Empire overseas eagerly offered their aid. Canada, Australia, New Zealand, India, all came forward with offers of men, money, ships and supplies. The Australian premier issued a statement to the people in which he said: "We owe it to those who have gone before to preserve the great fabric of British freedom and hand it on to our children. Our duty is quite clear. Remember we are Britons."

#### CANADA OFFERS MEN

A formal offer of military contingents was cabled to England by the Canadian government August 1. A meeting of the cabinet was presided over by Premier Borden. It was called to deal with the situation in which Canada found herself as the result of the European war.

The government unanimously decided to make England an offer of men. Infantry, cavalry and artillery would be included in any force sent forward and it would number 20,000 men if transportation could be obtained for that number. It was estimated that within two weeks it would be possible to dispatch 10,000 efficient soldiers, and within three months this number could be increased to 50,000.

Many offers for foreign service arrived from the commandants of militia corps throughout the dominion. The war spirit apparently was growing in Canada and it appeared



### CANADA'S CONTRIBUTION TO THE WAR

Men and Money from all the Provinces, besides Coal from Nova Scotia, Canned Goods from Prince Edward and British Columbia, Potatoes from New Brunswick, Wheat from Manitoba and Alberta, Horses and Wheat from Saskatchewan, Oats from Ontario and Cheese from Quebec.

—La Presse, Montreal



that practically every corps would volunteer for foreign service.

A few days later the British Government decided to accept the offers of contingents of colonial troops, and the colonies were gratified to learn that the famous general, Lord Roberts—affectionally known in the British army as “Bobs”—had been appointed to the chief command of the men from overseas.

A war session of the Dominion Parliament was held later in August and was the briefest on record, lasting only five days. During that time the Senate and House of Commons voted \$50,000,000 for war expenses. Customs and excise rates on tobacco, liquor, sugar, coffee, and canned fruits were increased to provide additional revenue.

The Canadian contingent for European service was assembled at Valcartier Camp, sixteen miles from the City of Quebec. It was a splendid body of troops, characterized by the chief medical examining officer as “the finest body of men he had ever seen.” By September 11 there were 28,000 men ready for embarkation to join the allied forces in France. The great ocean liner *Lusitania* and other transatlantic craft were ordered to Quebec to transport them to Europe, and their patriotic progress was watched with intense interest by all the people of Canada.

The Canadian volunteers came from all the provinces of the great Dominion, from British Columbia to Prince Edward Island. In the week of August 23 fifteen special trains were used to carry nearly 8,000 Western Canadian troops from points in the vicinity of Winnipeg to Valcartier Camp. Detachments also were sent from Vancouver, Calgary, Red Deer, Edmonton, Moose Jaw, Regina, Saskatoon, Brandon, Portage la Prairie, Fort William, and Port Arthur. At all these points the men had been zealously drilling before leaving for the concentration camp.

The provinces of Ontario and Quebec, New Brunswick and Nova Scotia, all contributed of their brave sons to the expeditionary force. Every city and town had its representatives on the force, which was confidently relied upon to give a good account of itself, as Canadian contingents have always done before, when face to face with the enemy.



In all 40,000 Canadian troops were tendered to and accepted by the British Government in the early days of the war; also 20,000 men from Australia and 8,000 from New Zealand, a total of 68,000 men.

By the request of the Dominions in each case, the cost of the equipment, maintenance and pay of the forces was defrayed by the three governments—in itself a generous and patriotic additional offer. The Dominions at the same time declared their readiness to send additional contingents if required, as well as drafts from time to time to maintain their field forces at full strength.

#### TROOPSHIPS SAIL UNDER CONVOY

The first intimation that Canadian troops had been dispatched to the front from Valcartier Camp came on September 24, when the Hon. T. W. Crothers, the Dominion minister of labor, announced in a speech before the Canadian Trades and Labor Congress, assembled in convention at St. John, New Brunswick, that 32,000 Canadian volunteers “left for the front a day or two ago.” It was understood that the troops had sailed from Quebec in twenty armed transports, convoyed by a fleet of British warships, which had been collected at convenient ports for the purpose.

There were two army divisions in the force that sailed, each comprising three brigades of infantry (12,000 men), 27 guns, 500 cavalry, and 2,000 staff, signallers, medical corps and supernumeraries.

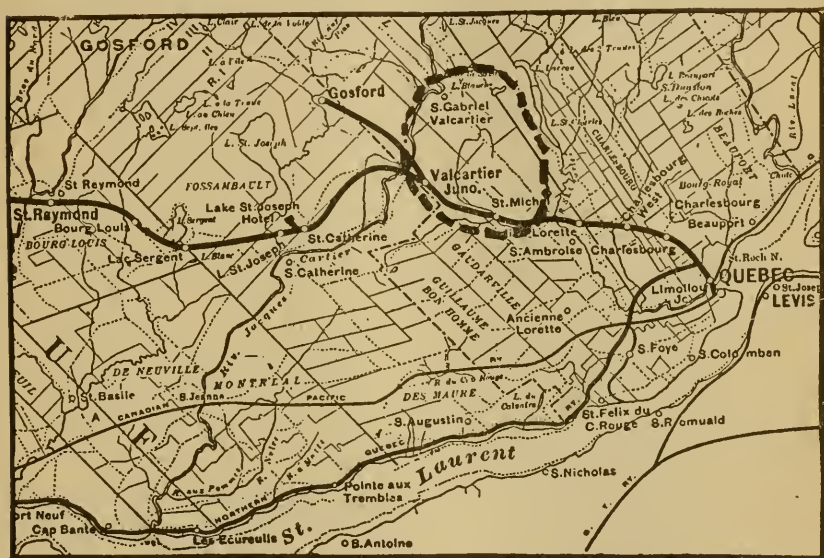
#### THE FINAL REVIEW AT VALCARTIER

Before they sailed away the Canadian army marched past the reviewing stand at the Valcartier Camp, Quebec, under the eyes of 10,000 civilians. There were 32,000 soldiers equipped for active service and everyone was impressed with the serious scene.

The Duke and Duchess of Connaught, the Princess Patricia, Col. Sam Hughes, the Canadian minister of militia, and Col. V. H. C. Williams, commandant of the camp, looked on with pride as the great parade, almost a full army corps, passed the royal standard. They marched in column of half battalions, and took a full hour to go by.

“Canada may well be proud of this first contingent,” said S. J. Duncan-Clark, who was an interested eyewitness of the scene. “It is a magnificent body of men, the pick of the Dominion’s soldiery. Probably 75 per cent of them have seen action, and every one of them is a marksman.

"And Canada may well be proud of the efficiency that has converted a wilderness into a splendidly equipped and orderly



THE CANADIAN CONCENTRATION CAMP, VALCARTIER, QUEBEC

military camp. It was only a year ago that the Government purchased the big tract of level land that is now known to the world as Valcartier. Nothing had been done to fit it for military use until war broke out. Canada determined at once to take her place side by side with the mother country in fighting the empire's battles.

## CAMP FACILITIES WERE IDEAL

“Since the 1st of August a railroad line has been built to the edge of the camp, which is sixteen miles from the City of

Quebec. Roads have been constructed running for six miles across the plain; electric lights have been installed that make the camp as brilliant as a city at night; water has been piped and distributed by hydrants, so that every group of tents has abundance of it easily available, and shower baths by the hundred have been erected for the men. There is a canteen, but it is limited strictly to soft drinks. In the more than four weeks that over 30,000 men have been living in this great canvas city there have been only four deaths—three from pneumonia and one from heart failure.

“As each batch of men arrived they were vaccinated for typhoid, and the utmost care has been taken to make the conditions healthful. For several weeks the weather was exceedingly inclement—cold and wet; but the minimum of discomfort was suffered owing to the excellence of the arrangements.

“I wandered over the camp without the least restraint while waiting for the review. It was most interesting to watch the men. Many of them looked well seasoned and mature in manhood, but there were not a few who are little more than boys. Every variety of accent could be heard—the broad English, the burring Scotch, the brogue of Ireland, the nasal quick-fire French, and the flat Canadian. I saw some in khaki who were manifestly Indians—not East Indians, but the real redskins of America; and some I saw whose features betrayed their Semitic race. It is said there are nearly 200 Jews in the contingent.

“About one-half of the contingent was recruited from highland regiments, and they will wear their kilts in action. The gay plaids, however, are covered with khaki aprons, and the tunics are of the same material. To the enemy at a distance they will look little different from their comrades who wear trousers.

#### PARADE WAS A BRAVE SIGHT

“It was an ideal field for military maneuvers. Behind it rose the purple hills of the Laurentian range. Down upon it beat an autumn sun. The day was perfect. Without an undulation the plain stretched for nearly three miles, and as I reached its edge the soldiers were extended in a long line

across its whole length. On the breeze came the sound of the bagpipes as the highlanders took up their position to my right. Except for an occasional bugle call it was the only music.

"It was 3 o'clock when the parade began. The artillery led, and there seemed to be an almost endless succession of guns, drawn by the finest horses in the Canadian West. They rattled by, quickening to a fast trot as they passed where I was standing. I am told there were 300 machine guns in addition to many other larger field pieces with this first contingent.

"Then came battalion after battalion of infantry, the greater part on foot. This section of the parade was in two divisions, the second consisting of kilties. The men marched without music, and except for an occasional clapping of hands as they broke into the double or changed their formation, the crowd that watched maintained an impressive silence.

"Some of the men marched with fixed bayonets, and I heard the comment around me: 'That's what the Germans are scared of.'

"There were a few companies of mounted infantry. More mounted men will probably be sent with the second contingent, of which the people are already talking.

"A small corps of cyclists followed the infantry, and the rear was brought up with the Red Cross detachment. The sacred emblem that speaks for the cause of humanity was displayed in bold enough form on the covered wagons to be visible to the enemy a mile away.

"When the last of the soldiers had left the parade ground I wandered back to the camp. In one of the tents a khaki-clad accompanist pounded out 'It's a Long, Long Way to Tipperary,' and I heard for the first time the rollicking Irish song to the measure of which the soldiers of the king have gone to war. It is well adapted to cheer the spirits of the men, and it has just enough of the simple sentiment of the soldier heart to appeal to those who have left home far behind in order to fight their country's foes in a foreign land."

#### · COMMANDERS OF THE CANADIAN FORCE

The list of brigade commanders of the Canadian expeditionary force was announced as follows:



Officers commanding the four infantry brigades: Lieut.-Col. R. E. W. Turner, V. C., D. S. O., of Quebec, a veteran of the South African war, mentioned in dispatches for especially gallant service; Lieut.-Col. S. M. Mercer, Toronto, Commanding Officer of the Queen's Own Rifles; Lieut.-Col. A. W. Currie of Victoria, Commanding Officer of the 50th Fusiliers; Lieut.-Col. J. E. Cohoe of St. Catharines, Commanding Officer of the 5th Militia Infantry Brigade.

The officer appointed to command the artillery brigade was Lieut.-Col. H. E. Burstall of Quebec, of the Artillery Headquarters Staff.

Officer in command of the Strathcona Horse, Lieut.-Col. A. C. Macdonnell, D. S. O., of Winnipeg, a South African veteran.

Officer in command of the Royal Canadian Dragoons, Lieut.-Col. C. M. Nelles of Toronto, Inspector of Cavalry for Militia Headquarters.

The commanding officer of the whole army division was an English general selected by the British War Office.

It was understood that the Canadian troops would land in the south of England and march through London to training quarters at Aldershot and Salisbury Plains, the infantry going to Aldershot and the artillery to Salisbury Plains, for several weeks' training under active service conditions before going to the firing line.

#### CANADA FIGHTS AGAINST AUTOCRACY

"Canada will spend its last dollar and shed its last drop of blood fighting for the principle of democracy, against that of autocracy, as exemplified in the present European conflict."

This was the emphatic statement made by Sir Douglas Cameron, lieutenant-governor—chief executive—of the province of Manitoba, passing through Chicago on September 28.

"Great Britain is not fighting for empire," he said. "It is not fighting for greater commercial gains. We are fighting for the annihilation of autocracy and it is the sentiment of the people of Canada that they will fight against Germany's domination to the bitter end.

"England does not want more commerce, except as it can be gained through the paths of peace. We would not draw

the sword to increase it, but we will fight to the last drop of blood to protect it.

"The men of Canada have responded nobly to the call to arms. We have sent about 31,800 provincial troops, every one a volunteer, and we have that many more already enlisted if they are needed. Our trouble is to equip them as fast as they enlist.

"In Canada we are turning our attention to agricultural pursuits. Wheat is at a premium; a farmer can get from \$1 to \$1.10 per bushel in cash for wheat on his wagon. All Europe will be in dire need of foodstuffs next year and for some years to come and we in Canada hope to profit by the opportunity.

"Economic conditions in the dominion received a terrible blow when the war came; we were shocked, staggered, and business has received a hard setback; finances are depressed. The government has offered help to the banks, but they do not need it yet.

"We want immigrants in our country—Germans or any other good, strong, virile nationality. We have no quarrel with the German people. We like them; they are used to a high standard of living and are the finest kind of citizens.

"To my mind, this war cannot be of long duration. Germany, with all its preparedness, could not lay by stores enough to support 65,000,000 people for any great length of time when there is no raw material coming in. The country will be starved out, if not beaten in the field, for I do not believe Germany can gain control of the high seas and cover the world with its merchantmen."

---

#### INDIAN TROOPS CALLED FOR

The announcement by Lord Kitchener in the House of Commons late in August that native troops from India were to be summoned to the aid of the British army in France "came like a crash of thunder and revealed a grim determination to fight the struggle out to a successful finish."

There was some talk in England of increasing the army by temporary conscription, but Premier Asquith declined to consider any such proposal.

In the House of Commons on September 9 a message was

read from the Viceroy of India, which said that the rulers of the Indian native states, nearly 700 in number, had with one accord rallied to the defense of the empire with personal offers of services as well as the resources of their states.

Many of the native rulers of India also sent cables to King George offering him their entire military and financial resources, while the people of India by thousands offered to volunteer.

Conditions in India were indeed so satisfactory, from the British standpoint, that Premier Asquith was able to announce that two divisions (40,000) of British (white) soldiers were to be removed from India.

The aid that India could offer was not lightly to be considered. The soldiery retained by the British and the rajahs, constituting India's standing army, amount to about 400,000, not taking into consideration the reserves and the volunteers. The rajahs maintain about 23,000 soldiers, who are named Imperial Service Troops, expressly for purposes of Imperial defense, and these have served in many wars. They served with British, German, French, and United States troops in China from September, 1900, to August, 1901, and gained the highest laurels for efficiency and good conduct.

The first Indian troops called for by Lord Kitchener included two divisions of infantry and a brigade of cavalry, adding about 70,000 combatants to the allied armies in France, with approximately 130 pieces of artillery, both light and heavy, and howitzers.

Twelve Indian potentates were selected to accompany this expeditionary force. These included the veteran Sir Pertab Singh, regent of Jodhpur; Sir Ganga Bahadur, Maharajah of Bikanir, and Sir Bhupindra Singh, Maharajah of Patiala.

The expeditionary force contained units of the regular army and contingents of the Imperial Service Troops in India. From twelve states the viceroy accepted contingents of cavalry, infantry, sappers and transport, besides a camel corps from Bikanir.

The Maharajah of Mysore placed \$1,600,000 at the disposal of the Government in connection with the expenditure for the expeditionary force. In addition to this gift, the Maharajahs of Gwalior and Bhopal contributed large sums of

money and provided thousands of horses as remounts. Maharajah Repa offered his troops and treasure, even his privately-owned jewelry, for the service of the British King and Emperor of India. Maharajah Holkar of Indore made a gift of all the horses in the army of his state.

A similar desire to help the British Government was shown by committees representing religious, political, and social associations of all classes and creeds in India.

In the House of Lords on August 28 Earl Kitchener announced that the first division of the troops from India was already on the way to the front in France. At the same time the Marquis of Crewe, secretary of state for India, said: "It has been deeply impressed upon us by what we have heard from India that the wonderful wave of enthusiasm and loyalty now passing over that country is to a great extent based upon the desire of the Indian people that Indian soldiers should stand side by side with their comrades of the British army in repelling the invasion of our friends' territory and the attack made upon Belgium. We shall find our army there reinforced by native Indian soldiers—high-souled men of first-rate training and representing an ancient civilization; and we feel certain that if they are called upon they will give the best possible account of themselves side by side with our British troops in encountering the enemy."

#### KING GEORGE PRAISES COLONIES

On September 9 a message from King George to the British colonies, thanking them for their aid in Britain's emergency, was published as follows:

"During the last few weeks the peoples of my whole empire at home and overseas have moved with one mind and purpose to confront and overthrow an unparalleled assault upon the continuity of civilization and the peace of mankind.

"The calamitous conflict is not of my seeking. My voice has been cast throughout on the side of peace. My ministers earnestly strove to allay the causes of the strife and to appease differences with which my empire was not concerned. Had I stood aside when in defiance of pledges to which my kingdom was a party, the soil of Belgium was violated and her cities made desolate, when the very life of the French nation was



threatened with extinction, I should have sacrificed my honor and given to destruction the liberties of my empire and of mankind.

"I rejoice that every part of the empire is with me in this decision.

"Paramount regard for a treaty of faith and the pledged word of rulers and peoples is the common heritage of Great Britain and of the empire. My peoples in the self-governing dominions have shown beyond all doubt that they whole-heartedly indorse the grave decision it was necessary to take, and I am proud to be able to show to the world that my peoples oversea are as determined as the people of the United Kingdom to prosecute a just cause to a successful end.

"The Dominion of Canada, the Commonwealth of Australia and the Dominion of New Zealand have placed at my disposal their naval forces, which have already rendered good service for the empire. Strong expeditionary forces are being prepared in Canada, Australia and New Zealand for service at the front, and the Union of South Africa has released all British troops and undertaken other important military responsibilities.

"Newfoundland has doubled the number of its branch of the royal naval reserve, and is sending a body of men to take part in the operations at the front. From the Dominion and Provincial governments of Canada, large and welcome gifts of supplies are on their way for use both by my naval and military forces.

"All parts of my oversea dominions have thus demonstrated in the most unmistakable manner the fundamental unity of the empire amidst all its diversity of situation and circumstance."

A message similar to the foregoing was addressed by King George to the princes and the people of India.

The King's eldest son, the young Prince of Wales, volunteered for active service at the outset of the war and was gazetted as a second lieutenant in the First Battalion, Grenadier Guards. He also inaugurated and acted as treasurer of a national fund for the relief of sufferers by the war. This fund soon grew to \$10,000,000 and steadily climbed beyond that amount.

## CHAPTER IX

### EARLY BATTLES OF THE WAR

*Belgian Resistance to the German Advance—The Fighting at Vise, Haelen, Diest, Aerschot and Tirlemont—Mons and Charleroi the First Great Battles of the War—Allies Make a Gallant Stand, but Forced to Retire Across the French Border.*

FROM the first day of the German entry into Belgium brief and hazy reports of battles between the patriotic Belgians and the invaders came across the Atlantic. Many absurd and mischievous reports of repeated Belgian "victories" were received throughout the month of August. These were for the most part rendered ridiculous by the steady advance of the German troops. The resistance of the Belgians was gallant and persistent, but availed only to hinder and delay the German advance which it was powerless to stop. Up to August 23, there were no "victories" possible for either side, because never until then were the opposing armies definitely pitted against each other in an engagement in which one or the other must be broken.

All the time these Belgian "victories," which were no more than resistances to German reconnoissances, were being reported, the German line was not touched, and behind that line the Germans were methodically massing.

When they were ready they came on. The Belgian army retired from the Diest-Tirlemont line, from Aerschot and Louvain, from Brussels, because to have held these positions against the overwhelming force opposed to them would have meant certain destruction. The rearguards held each of these

points with the greatest heroism so long as that was necessary, and then retired in good order on the main force.

#### VISÉ ATTACKED AND FIRED

The first fighting of any severity in Belgium occurred at Visé, near the frontier, early in the German advance. German troops crossed the frontier in motors, followed by large bodies of cavalry, but the Belgians put up a stubborn resistance. The chiefs of the Belgian staff had foreseen the invasion and had blown up the bridges of the River Meuse outside the town, as well as the railway tunnels. Time after time the Belgians foiled with their heavy fire the attempts of the Germans to cross by means of pontoons. Visé itself was stubbornly defended. Only after a protracted struggle did the Germans master the town, which they fired in several places on entering.

#### BATTLES OF HAELEN-DIEST

At the end of the first week of the Belgian invasion it was estimated that the Germans had concentrated most of their field troops, probably about 900,000 combatants, along a 75-mile line running from Liege to the entrance into Luxemburg at Treves. With this immense army it was said there were no less than 5,894 pieces of artillery. This was only the first-line strength of the Germans, the reserves being massed in the rear. Part of the right wing was swung northward and westward in the direction of Antwerp, and swept the whole of northern Belgium to the Dutch frontier.

On August 10 the Belgian defenders fought a heavy engagement with the Germans at Haelen, which was described in the dispatches as the first battle of the war. A Belgian victory was claimed as the result, the German losses, it was said, being very heavy, especially in cavalry, while the Belgian casualties were reported relatively small. But the German advance was merely checked. The covering troops were speedily reinforced from the main body of the army and the advance swept on.

The result of the Haelen engagement was thus described in the dispatches of August 13:

"The battle centered around Haelen, in the Belgian

province of Limbourg, extending to Diest, in the north of the province of Brabant, after passing round Zeelhem.

"At 7 o'clock last evening all the country between the three towns mentioned had been cleared of German troops, except the dead and wounded, who were thickly strewn about the fire zone. Upward of 200 dead German soldiers were counted in a space of fifty yards square.

"A church, a brewery and some houses in Haelen were set afire, and two bridges over the Demer were destroyed by Belgian engineers.

"Great quantities of booty were collected on the battlefield, and this has been stacked in front of the town hall of Diest. Many horses also were captured.

"The strength of the German column was about 5,000 men."

Another report said of the encounter:

"A division of Belgian cavalry, supported by a brigade of infantry and by artillery, engaged and defeated, near the fortress of Diest, eighteen miles northeast of Louvain, a division of German cavalry, also supported by infantry and by artillery.

"The fighting was extremely fierce and resulted in the Germans being thrown back toward Hasselt and St. Trond."

Meanwhile the forts at Liege, to the southeast, still held out, though fiercely bombarded by German siege guns. The fortress of Namur was also being attacked. The Germans had bridged the river Meuse and were moving their crack artillery against the Belgian lines. French troops had joined the Belgian defenders and the main battle line extended from Liege on the north to Metz on the south.

A visit to Haelen and other towns by a Brussels correspondent August 17, "showed the frightful devastation which the Germans perpetrated in Belgian territory.

"For instance, at Haelen itself houses belonging to the townspeople have been completely wrecked. Windows were broken, furniture destroyed, and the walls demolished by shell fire. Even the churches have not been respected. The parish church at Haelen has been damaged considerably from shrapnel fire.



"On the battlefield there are many graves of Germans marked by German lances erected in the form of a cross."

ON THE BATTLEFIELD OF DIEST

A correspondent of the New York Tribune said:

"Across the battlefield of Diest there is a brown stretch of harrowed ground half a furlong in length. It is the grave of twelve hundred Germans who fell in the fight of August 11. All over the field there are other graves, some of Germans, some of Belgians, some of horses. When I reached the place peasants with long mattocks and spades were turning in the soil. For two full days they had been at the work of burial and they were sick at heart. Their corn is ripe for cutting in the battlefield, but little of it will be harvested. Dark paths in their turnip fields are sodden with the blood of men and horses."

The Belgians, in contempt of German markmanship, had forced the enemy to the attack, which had been made from three points of the field simultaneously. The fighting had been fierce, but now that both sides had swept on, no one seemed to know how those in the fight had really fared. Only by the heaps of dead could one make estimate:

"At least, there were most dead on the side toward the bridge. A charge of 300 Uhlans, who were held in check for a short time by seventeen Belgians at a corner, seems, however, to have come near success. The derelict helmets and lances that covered the fields show that the charge pressed well up to the guns and to the trenches in the turnip fields where the Belgian soldiers lay. On the German left mitrailleuses got in their work behind, and in the houses on the outskirts of the villages. Five of these houses were burned to the ground, and two others farther out broken all to pieces and burned. In a shed was a peasant weeping over the dead bodies of his cows.

"It would be easy now at the beginning of this war to write of its tragedy. The villages have each a tale of loss to tell. All of the twelve hundred men in the long grave were men with wives, sweethearts, and parents. All the Belgian soldiers and others who were buried where they fell have mourners.

## A LETTER FROM THE GRAVE

"A letter which I picked up on the field and am endeavoring to have identified and sent her for whom it is intended will speak for all. It is written in ink on half a sheet of thin notepaper. There is no date and no place. It probably was written on the eve of battle in the hope that it would reach its destination if the writer died. This is the translation:

"'Sweetheart: Fate in this present war has treated us more cruelly than many others. If I have not lived to create for you the happiness of which both our hearts dreamed, remember my sole wish now is that you should be happy. Forget me and create for yourself some happy home that may restore to you some of the greater pleasures of life. For myself, I shall have died happy in the thought of your love. My last thought has been for you and for those I leave at home. Accept this, the last kiss from him who loved you.'

"Postcards from fathers with blessings to their gallant sons I found, too, on the field, little mementos of people and of places carried by men as mascots. Everywhere were broken lances of German and Belgian, side by side; scabbards and helmets, saddles and guns. These the peasants were collecting in a pile, to be removed by the military. High up over the graves of twelve hundred, as we stood there, a German biplane came and went, hovering like a carrion crow, seeking other victims for death.

"In the village itself death is still busy. A wounded German died as we stood by his side and a Belgian soldier placed his handkerchief over his face. Soldiers who filled the little market-place may be fighting for life now as I write. The enemy is in force not a mile away from them, and in a moment they may be attacked. It is significant that all German prisoners believed they were in France. The deception, it appears, was necessary to encourage them in their attack, and twelve hundred dead in the harrowed field died without knowing whom or what they were fighting."

## THOUGHT THEY WERE IN FRANCE

A number of German prisoners were taken by the Belgians during the fighting at Haelen-Diest. From these it was

learned that the German soldiers really believed they were fighting in France. At Diest it is said that 400 surrendered the moment they lost their officers and were surprised to learn that they were in Belgium.

King Albert of Belgium was constantly in the field during the early engagements of the war, moving from point to point inside the Belgian lines by means of a high-powered automobile, in which he was slightly wounded by the explosion of a shell. He was thus enabled to keep in touch with the field forces, as well as with his general staff, and speedily endeared himself to the Belgian soldiery by his personal disregard of danger.

The Belgians by their gallant fight against the trained legions of Germany quickly won the admiration even of their foes. The army of Belgium was brought up to its full strength of 300,000 men and everywhere the soldiers of the little country battled to halt the invaders. Often their efforts proved effective. The losses on both sides were truly appalling, the Germans suffering most on account of their open methods of attack in close order. But their forces were like the sands of the sea and every gap in the ranks of the onrushing host was promptly filled by more Germans.

#### TIRLEMONT AND LOUVAIN

The fighting at Tirlemont and Louvain was described by a citizen of Ostend, who says he witnessed it from a church tower at Tirlemont first and later proceeded to Louvain. He says:

"Until luncheon time Tuesday, August 18, Tirlemont was quiet and normal. Suddenly, about 1 o'clock, came the sound of the first German gun. The artillery had opened fire.

"From the church tower it was possible to see distinctly the position of the German guns and the bursting of their shells. The Belgians replied from their positions east of Louvain. It was a striking sight, to the accompaniment of the ceaseless thud-thud of bursting shells with their puffs of cottonlike smoke, tearing up the peaceful wheat fields not far away.

## BELGIANS RETIRE AT LOUVAIN

“Gradually working nearer, the shells began to strike the houses in Tirlemont. This was a signal for the populace, which had been confident that the Belgian army would protect them, to flee. All they knew was that the Germans were coming. From the tower the scene was like the rushing of rats from a disturbed nest. The people fled in every direction except one.

“I moved down to Louvain, where everything seemed quiet and peaceful. The people sat in the cafes drinking their evening beer and smoking. Meanwhile the Belgian troops were retiring in good order toward Louvain.

## TOWN IN PANIC WITH REFUGEES

“By midnight the town was in the throes of a panic. Long before midnight throngs of refugees had begun to arrive, followed later by soldiers. By 11 o’clock the Belgian rear guard was engaging the enemy at the railroad bridge at the entrance to the town.

“The firing was heavy. The wounded began to come in. Riderless horses came along, both German and Belgian. These were caught and mounted by civilians glad to have so rapid a mode of escape.

## TROOPS HINDERED BY CIVILIANS

“I remember watching a black clad Belgian woman running straight down the middle of a road away from the Germans. Behind her came the retiring Belgian troops, disheartened but valiant. This woman, clad in mourning, was the symbol of the Belgian populace.

“At some of the barricades along the route the refugees and soldiers arrived simultaneously, making the defense difficult. All about Tirlemont and Louvain the refugees interfered with the work of the troops. The road to Brussels always was crowded with refugees and many sorrowful sights were witnessed among them as they fled from the homes that had been peaceful and prosperous a few days before.



## BRUSSELS FILLED WITH REFUGEES

"Brussels is filled with refugees from surrounding towns, despite the large numbers who left the city for Ghent and Ostend during the last few days," said a correspondent, writing from Ghent on August 20.

"The plight of most of the refugees is pitiable. Many are camped in the public square whose homes in the suburbs have been fired by the Prussians. The roads leading into Brussels have been crowded all day with all kinds of conveyances, many drawn by dogs and others by girls, women and aged peasants.

"Most of these people have lost everything. Few of them have any money. The peasant is considered lucky who succeeded in saving a single horse or a cow.

"Military men characterize the German force which is moving across Belgium as overwhelming, saying it consists of at least two or three army corps. The advance of this huge force is covered over the entire thirty-mile front by a screen of cavalry. The Germans had no difficulty in taking Louvain, which was virtually undefended.

"In the high wooded country between Louvain and Brussels the Germans found an excellent defensive position. Having occupied Louvain, the Kaiser's troops pushed forward with great celerity, the cavalry opening out in fan-shaped formation, spreading across country.

"At one point they ran into a strong force of Belgian artillery, which punished them severely. Later in the day a Belgian scouting force reached Louvain and found it unoccupied, but received imperative orders to fall back, because of the danger of being outflanked and annihilated."

---

ALLIES MEET THE INVADERS

By August 20 the Germans were in touch with the French army that had advanced into Belgium and occupied the line Dinant-Charleroi-Mons, the right of the French resting on Dinant and the left on Mons, where they were reinforced by the British expeditionary force under Field Marshal French.

There was a heavy engagement at Charleroi, and a four days' battle was begun at Mons August 23. Slowly but surely the Franco-British army was forced back across the French border, to take up a new position on the line, Noyon-Chanula Fere, which constituted the second line of the French defense.

The German right, opposing the British, was under command of General von Kluck; General von Buelow and General von Hausen commanded the German center opposing the Franco-Belgian forces between the Sambre and Namur and the Meuse. The Grand Duke Albrecht of Wuerttemberg operated between Charleroi and the French border fortress of Maubeuge. The German Crown Prince led an army farther east, advancing toward the Meuse. The Crown Prince of Bavaria commanded the German forces farther south toward Nancy, and General von Heeringen was engaged in repulsing French attacks on Alsace-Lorraine, in the region of the Vosges mountains, where the French had met with early successes.

Meanwhile on August 18 the town of Aerschot had been the scene of a bloody engagement and was occupied and partly destroyed by the Germans. The occupation of Brussels followed on August 20-21 and the German line of communications was kept open by a line of occupied towns.

After overwhelming the Belgians the Kaiser's great advance army swept quickly into deadly conflict with the allies. The first mighty shock came at Charleroi, where the French were forced back, and on August 23 came the first battle with the British at Mons.

#### THE BATTLE OF MONS—FOUR DAYS OF FIGHTING—RETREAT OF THE ALLIES

All England was thrilled on the morning of September 10 when the British government permitted the newspapers to publish the first report from Field Marshal Sir John D. P. French, commander-in-chief of the British army allied with the French and Belgians on the continent, telling of the heroic fight made by the British troops, August 23-26, to keep from being annihilated by the Germans.

The withdrawal of the British army before the German advance was compared to the pursuit of a wildcat by hounds, the English force backing stubbornly toward the River Oise, constantly showing its teeth, but realizing that it must reach the river or perish. The report of Field Marshal French created much surprise in England, as it was not known until his statement was made public just how hard pressed the British army had been.

The communication was addressed to Earl Kitchener, the secretary for war, and its publication indicated that the government was responding to the public demand for fuller information on the progress of operations, so far as the British forces in France were concerned.

The report, as published in the London Gazette, the official organ, was as follows:

#### FIELD MARSHAL FRENCH'S REPORT

"The transportation of the troops from England by rail and sea was effected in the best order and without a check. Concentration was practically completed on the evening of Friday, August 21, and I was able to make dispositions to move the force during Saturday to positions I considered most favorable from which to commence the operations which General Joffre requested me to undertake. The line extended along the line of the canal from Condé on the west, through Mons and Binche on the east.

"During August 22 and 23 the advance squadrons did some excellent work, some of them penetrating as far as Soignies (a town of Belgium ten miles northeast of Mons) and several encounters took place in which our troops showed to great advantage.

"On Sunday, the 23d, reports began to come in to the effect that the enemy was commencing an attack on the Mons line, apparently in some strength, but that the right of the position from Mons was being particularly threatened.

"The commander of the First Corps had pushed his flank back to some high ground south of Bray and the Fifth Cavalry evacuated Binche, moving slightly south. The enemy thereupon occupied Binche.

"The right of the third division under General Hamilton was at Mons, which formed a somewhat dangerous salient and I directed the commander of the Second Corps if threatened seriously to draw back the center behind Mons.

"In the meantime, about five in the afternoon, I received a most unexpected message from General Joffre by telegraph, telling me that at least three German corps were moving on my position in front and that a second corps was engaged in a turning movement from the direction of Tournai. He also informed me that the two reserve French divisions and the Fifth French Army Corps on my right were retiring.

#### CHOSE A NEW POSITION

"In view of the possibility of my being driven from the Mons position, I had previously ordered a position in the rear to be reconnoitered.

"This position rested on the fortress of Maubeuge on the right and extended west to Jenlain, southeast of Valenciennes on the left. The position was reported difficult to hold because standing crops and buildings limited the fire in many important localities.

"When the news of the retirement of the French and the heavy German threatening on my front reached me, I endeavored to confirm it by aeroplane reconnoissance, and as a result of this I determined to effect a retirement to the Maubeuge position at daybreak on the 24th.

"A certain amount of fighting continued along the whole line throughout the night and at daybreak on the 24th the second division from the neighborhood of Harmignies made a powerful demonstration as if to retake Binche. This was supported by the artillery of both the first and the second divisions while the first division took up a supporting position in the neighborhood of Peissant. Under cover of this demonstration the Second Corps retired on the line of Dour, Quarouble and Frameries. The third division on the right of the corps suffered considerable loss in this operation from the enemy, who had retaken Mons.

"The Second Corps halted on this line, where they intrenched themselves, enabling Sir Douglas Haig, with the First Corps, to withdraw to the new position.



## NIGHT ATTACK ON THE LEFT

"Toward midnight the enemy appeared to be directing his principal effort against our left. I had previously ordered General Allenby with the cavalry to act vigorously in advance of my left front and endeavor to take the pressure off.

"About 7:30 in the morning General Allenby received a message from Sir Charles Fergusson, commanding the fifth division, saying he was very hard pressed and in urgent need of support. On receipt of this message General Allenby drew in his cavalry and endeavored to bring direct support to the fifth division.

"During the course of this operation General DeLisle of the Second Cavalry Brigade thought he saw a good opportunity to paralyze the further advance of the enemy's infantry by making a mounted attack on his flank. He formed up and advanced for this purpose, but was held up by wire about 500 yards from his objective.

## GENERAL SMITH-DORRIEN IN RETREAT

"The Nineteenth Infantry Brigade was brought by rail to Valenciennes on the 22d and 23d. On the morning of the 24th, they were moved out to a position south of Quarouble to support the left flank of the Second Corps. With the assistance of cavalry Sir Horace Smith-Dorrien was enabled to effect his retreat to a new position.

"At nightfall a position was occupied by the Second Corps to the west of Bavay, the First Corps to the right. The right was protected by the fortress of Maubeuge, the left by the Nineteenth Brigade in position between Jenlain and Bavay and cavalry on the outer flank. The French were still retiring and I had no support except such as was afforded by the fortress of Maubeuge.

## ARMY IN GREAT PERIL

"I felt that not a moment must be lost in retiring to another position. I had every reason to believe that the enemy's forces were somewhat exhausted and I knew that they had suffered heavy losses. The operation, however, was full of danger and difficulty, not only owing to the very superior forces in my front, but also to the exhaustion of the troops.

“The retirement was recommenced in the early morning of the 25th to a position in the neighborhood of Le Cateau and the rear guard were ordered to be clear of Maubeuge and Bavay by 5:30 a. m.

“The fourth division commenced its detrainment at Le Cateau on Sunday, August 23, and by the morning of the 25th eleven battalions and a brigade of artillery with the divisional staff were available for service. I ordered General Snow to move out to take up a position with his right south of Solesmes, his left resting on the Cambrai-Le Cateau road south of La Chapriz. In this position the division rendered great help.

“Although the troops had been ordered to occupy Cambrai-Le Cateau-Landrecies position and ground had, during the 25th, been partially prepared and entrenched, I had grave doubts as to the wisdom of standing there to fight.

“Having regard to the continued retirement of the French right, my exposed left flank, the tendency of the enemy’s western corps to envelop me, and, more than all, the exhausted condition of the troops, I determined to make a great effort to continue the retreat till I could put some substantial obstacle, such as the Somme or the Oise between my troops and the enemy.

#### RETREAT IS ORDERED

“Orders were therefore sent to the corps commanders to continue their retreat as soon as they possibly could toward the general line of Vermand, St. Quentin and Ribemont, and the cavalry under General Allenby were ordered to cover the retirement. Throughout the 25th and far into the evening the First Corps continued to march on Landrecies, following the road along the eastern border of the forest of Mormal, and arrived at Landrecies about 10 o’clock. I had intended that the corps should come further west so as to fill up the gap between Le Cateau and Landrecies, but the men were exhausted and could not get further in without a rest.

“The enemy, however, would not allow them this rest and about 9:30 that evening the report was received that the Fourth Guards brigade in Landrecies was heavily attacked

by troops of the Ninth German army corps, who were coming through the forest to the north of the town.

#### FRENCH AID IS GIVEN

"At the same time information reached me from Sir Douglas Haig that his first division was also heavily engaged south and east of Marilles. I sent urgent messages to the commander of two French reserve divisions on my right to come up to the assistance of the First Corps, which they eventually did.

"By about 6 in the afternoon the Second Corps had got into position, with their right on Le Cateau, their left in the neighborhood of Caudry, and the line of defense was continued thence by the fourth division toward Seranvillers.

"During the fighting on the 24th and 25th the cavalry became a good deal scattered, but by early morning of the 26th General Allenby had succeeded in concentrating two brigades to the south of Cambrai.

"On the 24th the French cavalry corps, consisting of three divisions under General Sordet, had been in billets, north of Avesnes. On my way back from Vavay, which was my *poste de commandement* during the fighting of the 23d and the 24th, I visited General Sordet and earnestly requested his cooperation and support. He promised to obtain sanction from his army commander to act on my left flank, but said that his horses were too tired to move before the next day.

"Although he rendered me valuable assistance later on in the course of the retirement, he was unable for the reasons given to afford me any support on the most critical day of all—namely, the 26th.

#### GERMANS USE HEAVY GUNS

"At daybreak it became apparent that the enemy was throwing the bulk of his strength against the left of the position occupied by the Second Corps and the fourth division. At this time the guns of four German army corps were in position against them, and Sir Horace Smith-Dorrien reported to me that he judged it impossible to continue his retirement at daybreak.

"I sent him orders to use his utmost endeavors to break

off the action and retire at the earliest possible moment, as it was impossible for me to send him support.

"The French cavalry corps under General Sordet was coming up on our left rear early in the morning, and I sent him an urgent message to do his utmost to come up and support the retirement of my left flank, but owing to the fatigue of his horses he found himself unable to intervene in any way.

"There had been no time to intrench the position properly, but the troops showed a magnificent front to the terrible fire which confronted them.

#### ARMY FACED ANNIHILATION

"At length it became apparent that if complete annihilation was to be avoided retirement must be attempted, and the order was given to commence it about 3:30 in the afternoon. The movement was covered with most devoted intrepidity and determination by the artillery, which had itself suffered heavily, and the fine work done by the cavalry in the further retreat from the position assisted materially the final completion of this most difficult and dangerous operation.

"I cannot close the brief account of this glorious stand of the British troops without putting on record my deep appreciation of the valuable services rendered by Sir Horace Smith-Dorrien. I say without hesitation that the saving of the left wing of the army under my command on the morning of the 26th could never have been accomplished unless a commander of rare and unusual coolness, intrepidity and determination had been present to personally conduct the operations.

"The retreat was continued far into the night of the 26th and through the 27th and the 28th, on which date the troops halted on the line from Noyon, Chauny and LeFere.

#### PRAISES SORDET'S HELP

"On the 27th and 28th I was much indebted to General Sordet and the French cavalry division which he commands for materially assisting my retirement and successfully driving back some of the enemy on Cambrai. General d'Amade also, with the Sixty-first and Sixty-second Reserve divisions, moved down from the neighborhood of Arras on the enemy's



right flank and took much pressure off the rear of the British forces.

"This closed the period covering the heavy fighting which commenced at Mons on Sunday afternoon, August 23, and which really constituted a four days' battle.

"I deeply deplore the very serious losses which the British forces suffered in this great battle, but they were inevitable, in view of the fact that the British army—only a few days after concentration by rail—was called upon to withstand the vigorous attack of five German army corps.

"It is impossible for me to speak too highly of the skill evinced by the two general officers commanding army corps, the self-sacrificing and devoted exertions of their staffs, the direction of troops by the divisional, brigade and regimental leaders, the command of small units by their officers and the magnificent fighting spirit displayed by the noncommissioned officers and men.

[Signed] "J. D. P. FRENCH,  
"Field Marshal."

TOLD BY A WOUNDED SOLDIER

A British soldier, who was wounded in the fight during the retreat from Mons, told the following story of the battle there:

"It was Sunday, August 23, and the British regiments at Mons were merry-making and enjoying themselves in leisure along the streets. Belgian ladies, returning from church, handed the soldiers their prayer books as souvenirs, while the Belgian men gave the men cigarettes and tobacco.

"About noon, when the men were beginning to think about dinner, a German aeroplane appeared overhead and began throwing out a cloud of black powder, which is one of their favorite methods of assisting batteries to get the range.

"No sooner had the powder cloud appeared than shrapnel began to burst overhead and in a moment all was confusion and uproar. But it didn't take the regiments long to get into fighting trim and race through the city to the scene of operations, which was on the other side of the small canal, in the suburbs.

"Here our outposts were engaging the enemy fiercely. The outposts lost very heavily, most of the damage being done by shells. The rifle fire was ineffective, although at times the lines of contenders were not more than 300 yards apart.

"The first reinforcements to arrive were posted in a glass factory, the walls of which were loop-holed, and we doggedly held that position until nightfall, when we fixed bayonets and lay in wait in case the enemy made an attempt to rush the position in the darkness.

#### DESTROY BRIDGES BEHIND THEM

"About midnight orders came to retire over the canal and two companies were left behind to keep the enemy in check temporarily. After the main body had crossed the bridge was blown up, leaving the two outpost companies to get across as best they could by boats or swimming. Most of them managed to reach the main body again.

"The main body retired from the town and fell back through open country, being kept moving all night. When daylight arrived it was apparent from higher ground that Mons had been practically blown away by the German artillery.

"Throughout the morning we continued to fight a rear-guard action, but the steady march in retreat did not stop until 6 o'clock in the evening, when the British found themselves well out of range of the German artillery in a quiet valley.

"Here all the troops were ordered to rest and eat. As they had been without food since the previous morning's breakfast it was rather amusing to see the soldiers going into the turnip fields and eating turnips as though they were apples.

"At 8 o'clock all lights were extinguished, the soldiers were ordered to make no noise and the pickets pushed a long distance backward. Long before dawn the troops were hastily started again and continued the retirement.

"By noon the enemy was again heard from and a large detachment was assigned the task of fighting to protect our rear.

## WATCH DUEL IN AIR

"During the afternoon both the German and British armies watched a duel in the air between French and German aeroplanes. The Frenchman was wonderfully clever, and succeeded in maneuvering himself to the upper position, which he gained after fifteen minutes of reckless effort. Then the Frenchman began blazing away at the German with a revolver.

"Finally he hit him, and the wounded German attempted to glide down into his own lines. The glide, however, ended in the British lines near my detachment, the West Kent Infantry. We found the aviator dead when we reached the machine. We buried him and burned the aeroplane.

"At dusk a halt was made for food, and as the Germans had fallen behind the English spent a quiet night. At dawn, however, we found the Germans close to our heels, and several regiments were ordered to prepare intrenchments. This is tedious and tiresome work, especially in the heat and without proper food, but we quickly put up fortifications which were sufficient to protect us somewhat from the artillery fire.

"It was not long before the German gunners found the range and began tearing up those rough fortifications, concentrating their fire on the British batteries, one of which was completely demolished. Another found itself with only six men. Both these disasters bore testimony to the excellent marksmanship of the German gunners.

## OFFICER SPIKES THE GUNS

"As it became evident that we must leave these guns behind and continue the retreat, an officer was seen going around putting the guns out of action, so that they would be of no use to the Germans. His action required cool bravery, because the Germans, having found the range, continued firing directly at these batteries.

"Things rapidly got hotter, and the commanding officer ordered a double-quick retreat. We were not long in doing the retiring movement to save our own skins.

"I was wounded at this time by a Maxim bullet. For a

moment I thought my head had been blown off, but I recovered and kept on running until I reached a trench, where I had an opportunity to bandage the wound. I rushed off to the ambulances, but found the doctors so busy with men worse off than I that I went back to my place in the line."

#### THE BATTLE AT CHARLEROI

The loss of life in the Franco-German battle near Charleroi was admittedly the greatest of any engagement up to that time. It was at Charleroi that the Germans struck their most terrific blow at the allies' lines in their determination to gain the French frontier. Though the tide of battle ebbed and flowed for awhile the French were finally forced to give way and to retreat behind their own frontier, while the British were being forced back from their position at Mons. The fighting along the line was of the fiercest kind. It was a titanic clash of armies in which the allies were compelled to yield ground before the superior numbers of the German host.

One of the wounded, who was taken to hospital at Dieppe, said of the fighting at Charleroi:

"Our army was engaging what we believed to be a section of the German forces commanded by the crown prince when I was wounded. The Germans at one stage of the battle seemed lost. They had been defending themselves almost entirely with howitzers from strongly intrenched positions. The Germans were seemingly surrounded and cut off and were summoned to surrender. The reply came back that so long as they had ammunition they would continue to fight.

"The howitzer shells of the Germans seemed enormous things and only exploded when they struck the earth. When one would descend it would dig a hole a yard deep and split into hundreds of pieces. Peculiarly enough the howitzer shells did much more wounding than killing. The other shells of the Germans, like cartridges, the supply of which they seemed to be short of, did only little damage.

#### AEROS CONSTANTLY ABOVE

"The German aeroplane service was perfect. An aircraft was always hovering over us out of range. We were certain within an hour after we sighted an aeroplane to get



the howitzers among us. Whenever we fired, however, we did terrific execution with our seventy-five pieces of artillery. I counted in one trench 185 dead. Many of them were killed as they were in the act of firing or loading.

"The ground occupied by the Germans was so thick with dead that I believe I saw one soldier to every two yards. You might have walked for a mile on bodies without ever putting foot to the ground. They buried their dead when they had time, piling fifteen or twenty in a shallow pit."

---

#### THE FRENCH IN ALSACE-LORRAINE

On August 9 the advance guard brigade of the French right wing, under General Pau, a veteran of the Franco-Prussian war of 1870-71, invaded Alsace, fought a victorious action with an intrenched German force of equal numbers and occupied Muelhausen and Kolmar. The news of the French entry into the province lost in 1871 was received all over France with wild enthusiasm. The mourning emblems on the Strasbourg monument in Paris were removed by the excited populace and replaced by the tricolor flag and flowers in token of their joy. Muelhausen was soon after retaken by the German forces, only to be recaptured later by the French and then evacuated once more.

On the day of the first French occupation of Muelhausen France declared war against Austria in consequence of the arrival of two Austrian army corps on the Rhine to assist the main German army.

After the French occupation of Muelhausen a large German army was sent to the front in Alsace-Lorraine and succeeded in dislodging the French from that city, but not without severe fighting.

Two weeks after the war began the French defeated a Bavarian corps in Alsace and for awhile General Pau more than held his own in that former province of France. On August 21 the Germans drove back the French who had invaded Lorraine, and occupied Lunéville, ten miles inside the French border.

About the same time the French reoccupied Muelhausen,

after three days' fighting around the city. Another French army was reported to be within nineteen miles of Metz. But before the end of the month the French had been compelled to evacuate both their former provinces. They continued during September, however, to make frequent assaults on the German frontier positions, but without regaining a sure foothold on German soil, the bulk of their efforts being devoted to the defense of their own frontier strongholds.

#### FIGHTING AROUND NANCY

An official dispatch from the foreign office in Paris, dated August 28, said:

"Yesterday the French troops took the offensive in the Vosges mountains and in the region between the Vosges and Nancy, and their offensive has been interrupted, but the German loss has been considerable.

"Our forces found, near Nancy, on a front of three kilometers, 2,500 dead Germans, and near Vitrimont, on a front of four kilometers, 4,500 dead. Longwy, where the garrison consisted of only one battalion, has capitulated to the Crown Prince of Germany after a siege of twenty-four days."

#### FRENCH TRAPPED IN ALSACE

The German view of early operations in Alsace-Lorraine was given in the following dispatch September 2 from the headquarters of the general staff at Aix-la-Chapelle:

"The French forces were trapped in Alsace-Lorraine. Realizing that the French temperament was more likely to be swayed by sentiment than by stern adherence to the rules of actual warfare, the German staff selected its own battle line and waited. The French did not disappoint. They rushed across the border. They took Altkirch with little opposition. Then they rushed on to Muelhausen. Through the passes in the Vosges mountains they poured, horse, artillery, foot—all branches of the service. Strasburg was to fall and so swift was the French movement that lines of communication were not guarded.

"Then the German general staff struck. Their troops from Saarburg, from Strasburg and from Metz, under the command of General von Heeringen, attacked the French all

along the line. They were utterly crushed. The Germans took 10,000 Frenchmen prisoners and more than one hundred guns of every description. Alsace-Lorraine is now reported absolutely cleared of French troops.

"The armies of Crown Prince Frederick Wilhelm and of Crown Prince Rupprecht of Bavaria are moving in an irresistible manner into France. In a 3-day battle below Metz the French were terribly cut up and forced to retreat in almost a rout. It is declared that in this engagement the French lost 151 guns and were unable to make a stand against the victorious Germans until they had passed inside of their secondary line of defense."

#### THE GERMAN "SPY POSTERS"

Just prior to the declaration of war, cable dispatches from Paris told of a remarkable series of posters dotting the countryside of France. These posters, innocently advertising "Bouillon Kub," a German soup preparation, were so cleverly printed by the German concern advertising the soup, that they would act as signals to German army officers leading their troops through France.

In one of our photographic illustrations, one of these "spy posters" is seen posted on the left of an archway past which the French soldiers are marching en route to meet the Germans near the Alsace frontier.

The ingenuity of the signs was remarkable. Thus a square yellow poster would carry the information, "Food in abundance found here," while a round red sign would advertise, "This ground is mined." Many geometrical figures and most of the colors were utilized, and animal forms, flowers and even the American Stars and Stripes were employed to convey their messages of information.

The French Minister of the Interior got wind of the system, and orders were telegraphed throughout France to destroy these posters. Bouillon Kub, therefore, is no longer advertised in France.

#### A SOLDIER'S EXPERIENCE UNDER FIRE

A wounded French soldier described his experiences under fire during the Alsace campaign. He said in part:

"There! A blow in the breast, a tearing in the body, a fall with a loud cry and a terrible pain; there I lay one of the victims of this terrible day. My first sensation was anger at the blow, my second an expectation of seeing myself explode, for, judging by the sound of the ball, I believed I had a grenade in my body; then came the pain, and with it helplessness and falling.

"Oh, how frightful are those first moments! Where I was hit, how I was wounded, I could form no idea; I only felt that I could not stir, saw the battalion disappear from sight and myself alone on the ground, amid the fearful howling and whistling of the balls which were incessantly striking the ground around me.

"With difficulty could I turn my head a little, and saw behind me two soldiers attending on a third, who was lying on the ground. Of what happened I can give no account except that I cried for help several times as well as I could, for the pain and burning thirst had the upper hand. At last both of them ran to me, and with joy I recognized the doctor and hospital attendant of my company.

"'Where are you wounded?' was the first question. I could only point. My blouse was quickly opened, and in the middle of the breast a bloody wound was found. The balls still constantly whizzed around us; one struck the doctor's helmet, and immediately I felt a violent blow on the left arm. Another wound! With difficulty I was turned round, to look for the outlet of the bullet; but it was still in my body, near the spine. At last it was cut out. They were going away—'The wound in the arm, doctor.' This, fortunately, was looked for in vain; the ball had merely caused a blue spot and had sunk harmlessly into the ground.

"I extended my hand to the doctor and thanked him, as also the attendant, whom I commissioned to ask the sergeant to send word to my family. The doctor had carefully placed my cloak over me, with my helmet firmly on my head, in order in some measure to protect me from the leaden hail.

"Thus I lay alone with my own thoughts amid the most terrible fire for perhaps an hour and a half. All my thoughts, as far as pain and increasing weakness allowed, were fixed on



my family. Gradually I got accustomed to the danger which surrounded me, and only when too much sand from the striking bullets was thrown on my body did I remember my little enviable position. At last, after long, long waiting, the sanitary detachment came for me."

#### THE REAL TRAGEDY OF WAR

It is not a pleasant picture—this story of the French soldier. It has little in it of the grandeur, the beat of drums, the sound of martial music, which is supposed to accompany war. The tread of marching feet has died away, the excitement is gone, and man the demon is supplanted by man the everyday human creature of suffering and home folks and fear.

It is only a personal account of an individual experience, yet in it may be found the real significance and the real tragedy of war; for, after the fighting is over, after the intoxication of legalized murder has gone, after nations turn their attention from victories to men, it is the aggregate of individual experiences which counts the costs of war.

Thousands of German, French, Belgian, Austrian, Russian, and British men in the prime of life have been miserably slain and lie in obscure graves of which the enemy now is the guardian, while others writhe in the agony of lingering wounds or sullenly brood over their fate in the dull routine of military prisons. In every part of the warring countries mothers weep over the sons they shall see no more, and wives over the husbands snatched from them forever. In many a mansion, in many a comfortable home, in many a peasant's cottage, the empty chair is eloquent of the absent father, brother, husband or son who shall be absent forever.

## CHAPTER X

### GERMAN ADVANCE ON PARIS

*Allies Withdraw for Ten Days, Disputing Every Inch of Ground With the Kaiser's Troops—Germans Push Their Way Through France in Three Main Columns—Official Reports of the Withdrawing Engagements—Paris Almost in Sight.*

**F**LUSHED with their successes over the Allies at Mons and Charleroi, the Germans pushed their advance toward the French capital with great celerity and vigor. During the last week of August and the first few days of September, it appeared inevitable that the experience of Paris in 1870-71 was to be repeated and that a siege of the city by the German forces would follow immediately.

It was conceded that the armies of the Allies had been forced back and that Paris was endangered. The German advance was general, all along the line. The flower of the Kaiser's army had marched through Belgium and pushed back the lines of the Allies to the formidable rows of fortifications that surround Paris. The Germans advanced in three main columns, constantly in touch with one another, from the right, passing through Mons, Cambrai and Amiens, to the extreme left in Lorraine. The center threatened Verdun, and from that point the right advance swept through Northern France like an opening fan, with the fortress of Verdun as the pivot.

Three million men were engaged in the main struggle. When the Germans first reached the Franco-Belgian frontier near Charleroi they were opposed by 700,000 French and 150,000 British troops. After being driven back the Allies began

assembling 1,000,000 men between the frontier and Paris. The Allies hoped to hold the whole German army in check while the Russians pursued their successes in eastern Germany. French troops guarded the entire frontier, battling to check the other German invading columns. The holding of the Germans, once they broke through the fortifications that formed the chief reliance of the French, would be impossible. The next stand would be around Paris, which was well fortified. The invaders were, of course, attempting to get through where there were no forts.

#### ALLIES MAKE STRENUOUS RESISTANCE

Strenuous resistance to the onward movement of the German enemy was made by the Allies from day to day, but for a period of ten days there was an almost continual retirement of the French and British upon Paris. It was in fact a masterly retreat, but a retreat nevertheless. From the line of La Fère and Mezieres, occupied by the Allies after the battles at Mons and Charleroi, they fell back 70 miles in seven days, disputing every step of the way, but withdrawing gradually to the line of defenses around the French capital. From Cambrai the Germans pushed through Amiens to Beauvais; from Peronne to Roye, Montdidier, Creil, and on to the forest of Chantilly. From the region of Le Cateau and St. Quentin the German advance was by Noyon to Compiègne (famous for its memories of Joan of Arc's famous sortie), at which point the Allies made a desperate stand and the Germans had to fight for every inch of ground. They then passed through Senlis, which was first bombarded, down to Meaux, almost within sight of Paris, the head of the German army resting on a line between Beaumont, Meaux and La Ferte, at which point the resistance of the Allies finally forced a change in German plans.

Other German forces passed through Laon, Soissons and Chateau Thierry. Farther to the east, the road from Mezieres led the Germans to Rheims, Mourmelon, and opposite Chalons on the River Marne.

Another German army from the direction of Longwy, under the command of the Crown Prince, was operating through Suippes and on the wooded Argonne plateau, with

its five passes, famous in the action of 1792 which preceded the battle of Valmy. At the entrance to this hilly country stands the little town of Sainte Menehould, where there was severe fighting with the French. Here the German Crown Prince made his headquarters.

The great plain of the Argonne is full of most wonderful ecclesiastical buildings and many magnificent cathedrals, townhalls and ancient fortresses were passed by the warring armies in their advance and withdrawal, some of these historic structures sustaining irreparable damage.

The German advance continued southward toward Paris until September 4.

#### RELENTLESS PURSUIT OF THE BRITISH

All reports agree that during the retirement of the Allies, the Germans pursued the British headquarters staff with uncanny precision throughout the ten days from Mons back to Compiègne. After fierce street fighting in Denain and Landrecies Sir John French withdrew his headquarters to Le Cateau, which was at once made the target of a terrific bombardment. The town caught fire, burning throughout one night, and the British headquarters had to be evacuated, this time in favor of St. Quentin, in the local college. Here the same thing happened and Field Marshal French was compelled once more to retire, to the neighborhood of Compiègne.

In an official report issued on Sunday, September 6, it is stated that, "The 5th French army on August 29 advanced from the line of the Oise River to meet and counter the German forward movement and a considerable battle developed to the south of Guise. In this the 5th French army gained a marked and solid success, driving back with heavy loss and in disorder three German army corps, the 10th, the Guard, and a reserve corps. In spite of this success, however, and all the benefits which flowed from it, the general retirement to the south continued and the German armies, seeking persistently after the British troops, remained in practically continuous contact with the rearguards.

"On August 30 and 31 the British covering and delaying troops were frequently engaged, and on September 1 a very



vigorous effort was made by the Germans, which brought about a sharp action in the neighborhood of Compiègne. This action was fought principally by the 1st British Cavalry Brigade and the 4th Guards Brigade and was entirely satisfactory to the British. The German attack, which was most strongly pressed, was not brought to a standstill until much slaughter had been inflicted upon them and until ten German guns had been captured. The brunt of this affair fell upon the Guards Brigade, which lost in killed and wounded about 300 men."

This affair was typical of the numerous rearguard engagements fought by both the British and the French forces during their retirement.

#### MASTERLY TACTICS IN RETIRING

Pressing hard upon the rear of the Allies for ten days was the greatest military machine that has ever been assembled in one cohesive force. Through Belgium had poured nearly 2,000,000 German troops, made up of about 800,000 first-line soldiers and more than 1,000,000 reserves. The twenty-six-hour march of part of the German army through Brussels was stunning evidence of the might of the "war machine," and despite fierce fighting all the way, the great army had never faltered in its 150-mile advance in Belgium.

But the numerical might of the German advance was matched by the masterly tactics of the Allies in retiring. By these tactics, in which General Joffre, the French commander-in-chief, co-operated with the British field-marshal, Sir John French, the Allies prevented their lines being overwhelmed by the superior numbers of their foe, but the German right flank and center, strung out over a line more than 150 miles long, northeast of Paris, kept smashing on. Losses were frightfully heavy, but the Kaiser's order was "Take Paris!"

It was believed certain that the German general staff had staked everything on investing Paris immediately, by completely breaking down the opposition massed between the German lines and the city. Paris had therefore prepared for the siege, with her great circles of forts strengthened and her food supply replenished. Many of the residents fled the city in panic, fearing a repetition of the dread days of 1871, with their privation and distress, but the spirit of the French peo-

ple generally remained unshaken and General Gallieni, military governor of Paris, assumed complete control of the situation in the city.

#### GOVERNMENT MOVED TO BORDEAUX

On August 26 the French cabinet had resigned in a body and it was reconstructed on broader lines under Premier Viviani to meet the demands of the national emergency.

German troops were reported within 40 miles of Paris on September 3, and at 3 A. M. of that day a proclamation was issued by President Poincaré, announcing that the seat of government would be temporarily transferred from Paris to Bordeaux. The minister of the interior stated that this decision had been taken "solely upon the demand of the military authorities because the fortified places of Paris, while not necessarily likely to be attacked, would become the pivot of the field operations of the two armies."

The text of President Poincaré's proclamation was as follows:

**"ENDURE AND FIGHT!"**

**"FRENCHMEN:** For several weeks our heroic troops have been engaged in the fierce combat with the enemy. The courage of our soldiers has won for them a number of marked advantages. But in the north the pressure of the German forces has constrained us to retire. This situation imposes on the president of the Republic and the government a painful decision.

"To safeguard the national safety the public authorities are obliged to leave for the moment the city of Paris. Under the command of its eminent chief, the French army, full of courage and spirit, will defend the capital and its patriotic population against the invader. But the war must be pursued at the same time in the rest of the French territory.

"The sacred struggle for the honor of the nation and the reparation of violated rights will continue without peace or truce and without a stop or a failure. None of our armies has been broken.

"If some of them have suffered only too evident losses, the gaps in the ranks have been filled up from the waiting reserve

forces, while the calling out of a new class of reserves brings us tomorrow new resources in men and energy.

"Endure and fight! Such should be the motto of the allied army, British, Russians, Belgians and French.

"Endure and fight! While on the sea our allies aid us to cut the enemy's communications with the world.

"Endure and fight! While the Russians continue to carry a decisive blow to the heart of the German empire.

"It is for the government of this republic to direct this resistance to the very end and to give to this formidable struggle all its vigor and efficiency. It is indispensable that the government retain the mastery of its own actions. On the demand of the military authorities the government therefore transfers its seat momentarily to a point of the territory whence it may remain in constant relations with the rest of the country. It invites the members of parliament not to remain distant from the government, in order to form, in the face of the enemy, with the government and their colleagues, a group of national unity.

"The government does not leave Paris without having assured a defense of the city and its entrenched camp by all means in its power. It knows it has not the need to recommend to the admirable Parisian population a calm resolution and sangfroid, for it shows every day it is equal to its greatest duties.

"Frenchmen, let us all be worthy of these tragic circumstances. We shall gain a final victory and we shall gain it by untiring will, endurance and tenacity. A nation that will not perish, and which, to live, retreats before neither suffering nor sacrifice, is sure to vanquish."

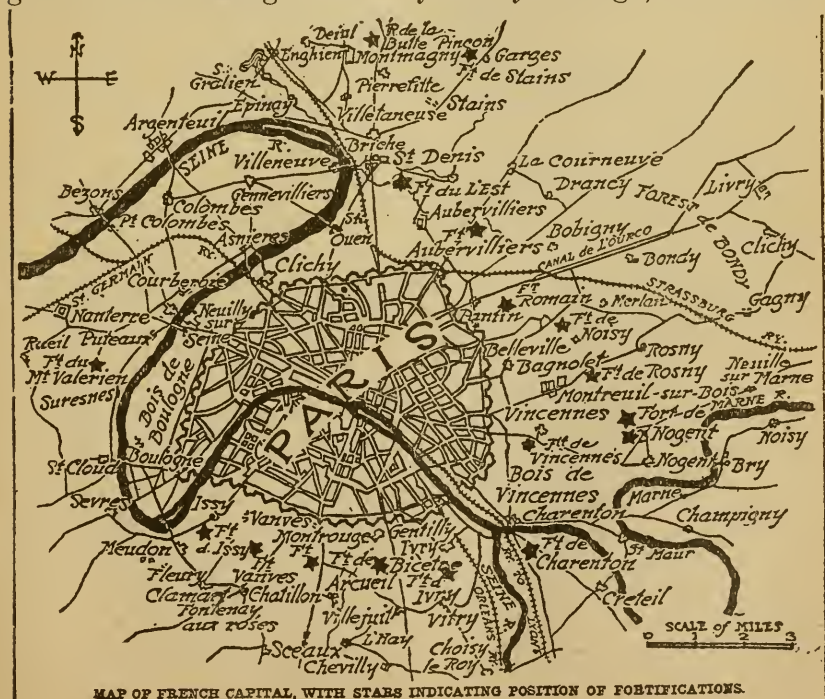
The removal of the French government departments to Bordeaux was accomplished within twenty-four hours and the southern city became at once a center of remarkable activity. Ambassador Herrick, representing the United States, remained in Paris to render aid to his fellow-countrymen who were seeking means of returning to America and were more than ever anxious to get away when a state of siege became imminent.

A radical change in the French military operations was put in effect after the Germans had swept in from Belgium, and had taken the cities of Lille, Roubaix, and Longwy. The French army had attempted to strike and shatter the Germans at their weakest point, and failed.

Paris prepared for the worst when the Kaiser's conquering army reached La Fère, about seventy miles away. From Amiens to La Fère the Germans pressed their attack hardest. As the Allies were seen to be gradually falling back, reserve troops were assembled in Paris and the forts put in readiness for siege.

#### THE FORTIFICATIONS OF PARIS

Paris has one of the strongest fortification systems of any city in the world. The siege of the giant city would be a much greater undertaking than forty-four years ago, as the forti-





fications have been essentially augmented and strengthened since the Franco-Prussian war.

The fortifications consist of the old city walls, the old belt of forts and the new enceinture of the fortified camps, which have been advanced far outside of the reach of the old forts. The main wall, ten meters (33 feet) high, consists of ninety-four bastions and is surrounded by a ditch fifteen meters wide. Behind the wall a ringroad and a belt line run around the city.

The belt of old forts surrounds this main fortification of the city at a little distance and consists of not less than sixteen forts. Those farthest advanced are hardly half a mile distant from the main wall. The experiences of the last war, the immense progress of the artillery, and especially the wider reach of the modern siege guns induced the French army authorities to build a belt of still stronger forts, which surrounds the old fortress of 1870 like a protective net. The forts, redoubts and batteries belonging to this last belt of fortifications are situated at least two miles from the city limits proper, and even Versailles is taken into this belt of fortifications.

The circumference of the circle formed by them is 124 kilometers (nearly 77 miles) and the space included in it amounts to 1,200 square kilometers. This new belt of fortifications consists of seven forts of the first class, sixteen forts of the second class and fifty redoubts or batteries, which are connected with each other by the "Great Belt Line," of 113 kilometers (71 miles).

#### FORM LARGE FORTIFIED CAMPS

The strongest of these forts form fortified camps, large enough to give protection to strong armies and also the possibility for a new reconcentration. There are three of these camps. The northern camp includes the fortifications from the Fort de Corneilles on the left to the Fort de Stains on the right wing, with the forts of the first class, Corneilles and Domont, and the forts of the second class, Montlignon, Montmorency, Ecouen and Stains, and it is protected in the rear by the strong forts in the vicinity of St. Denis. The eastern camp goes from the Ourcq canal and the forest of Bondy to the Seine, and its main strongholds are the forts of

Vaujours and Villeneuve-St. Georges, with the smaller forts of Chelles, Villiers, Champigny and Sully.

On the left bank of the Seine the southwestern camp is situated, including Versailles, whose main forts are those of St. Cyr, Haut-Buc, Villeras and Palaiseau, to which the large redoubt of Bois d'Arcy and the forts of Chatillon and Hautes-Bruyeres, situated a little to the rear, belong likewise.

To invest this strongest fortress of the world the line of the Germans ought to have a length of 175 kilometers and to its continuous occupation, even if the ring of the investing masses were not very deep, a much greater number of troops would be necessary than were used in 1870 for the siege of Paris.

#### GERMAN AMMUNITION CAPTURED

A correspondent at Nanteuil, September 12, thus described the capture of a German ammunition column while the Germans were feeling their way toward Paris:

"The seven-kilometer column was winding its way along Crepy-en-Valois when General Pau sent cavalry and artillery to intercept it. The column was too weakly guarded to cope with the attack, and so was captured and destroyed. This capture had an important bearing on the subsequent fighting.

"A noticeable feature of the operations has been the splendid marching qualities of the French troops. This was displayed especially when two divisions, which were sent to intercept the expected attempt of the Germans to invest Paris, covered eighty kilometers ( $49\frac{1}{2}$  miles) in two stages."

#### ALLIES PLAN TO PROTECT PARIS

The plan of the Allies on September 1 was to make a determined stand before Paris, in the effort to protect the city from the horrors of a siege. With their left wing resting on the strongly fortified line of the Paris forts and with their right wing strengthened by the defensive line from Verdun to Belfort, they would occupy a position of enormous military strength. If the Germans concentrated to move against their front the French reserve armies could assemble west of the Seine, move forward and attack the German invading columns in flank.

If in their effort to continue the great turning movement the Germans pushed forward across the Seine and attempted by encircling Paris to gain the rear of the allied armies, the French could mass their reserve corps behind their center at Rheims, push forward against the weakened German center in an attack that if successful would cut off the German invading columns and expose them to annihilation.

Such were the conditions and the possibilities when the German advance reached its climax on September 4.



POSITION OF HOSTILE ARMIES, SEPTEMBER 4, 1914

Heavy dotted line denotes battle front of the Allies; lighter line the position of the German Troops.

## CHAPTER XI

### BATTLE OF THE MARNE

*German Plans Suddenly Changed—Direction of Advance Swings to the Southeast When Close to the French Capital—Successful Resistance by the Allies—The Prolonged Encounter at the Marne—Germans Retreat With Allies in Hot Pursuit for Many Miles.*

**S**UDDENLY the German plans were changed. With Paris almost in sight, almost within the range of their heavy artillery, the German forces on the right of the line on September 4 changed the direction of their advance to a southeasterly course, which would leave Paris to the west. The people of the gay capital, who for several days had been preparing themselves once more for the thunder of the Prussian guns, began to breathe more freely, while all the world wondered at the sudden and spectacular transformation in the conditions of the conflict.

What had happened? Why was the advance thus checked and the march on Paris abandoned? Was it a trick, designed to lead the Allies into a trap? Or were the German troops too exhausted by forced marches and lack of rest to face the determined resistance of the allied forces before Paris?

These were the questions on every tongue, on both sides of the Atlantic, while the military experts sought strategic reasons for the change in German plans.

When the movement towards the east began the right of the German forces moved through Beaumont and L'Isle towards Meaux, apparently with the intention of avoiding Paris. Their front some twenty-four hours later was found to be extending across the River Marne as far south as Cou-



lommiers and La Ferté-Gaucher, the two opposing lines at that time stretching between Paris on the left flank and Verdun on the right.

On Monday, September 7, there came news that the southward movement of the German army had been arrested, and that it had been forced back across the Marne to positions where the German right wing curved back from La Ferté-sous-Jouarre along the bank of the River Ourcq, a tributary of the Marne, to the northward of Château Thierry. All this territory forms part of the district known as the "Bassin de Paris."

Then came a turn in the tide of war and the German plans were temporarily lost sight of when the Allies assumed the offensive along the Marne and the Ourcq and the Germans began to fall back. For four days their retreat continued. Ten miles, thirty miles, forty-five miles, back toward the northeast and east the invaders retired and Paris was relieved. The tide of battle had thrown the Germans away from the French capital and Frenchmen believed their retirement was permanent.

---

#### BATTLE OF THE MARNE

Important and interesting details of the battle of the Marne and the movements that preceded it are given in an official report compiled from information sent from the headquarters of Field Marshal Sir John French (commander-in-chief of the British expeditionary forces), under date of September 11. This account describes the movements both of the British force and of the French armies in immediate touch with it. It carries the operations from the 4th to the 10th of September, both days inclusive, and says:

"The general position of our troops Sunday, September 6, was south of the River Marne, with the French forces in line on our right and left. Practically there had been no change since Saturday, September 5, which marked the end of our army's long retirement from the Belgian frontier through Northern France.

"On Friday, September 4, it became apparent that there was an alteration in the advance of almost the whole of the

first German army. That army since the battle near Mons on the 23d of August had been playing its part in a colossal strategic endeavor to create a Sedan for the Allies by out-flanking and enveloping the left of their whole line so as to encircle and drive both the British and French to the south.

#### THE CHANGE IN GERMAN STRATEGY

“There was now a change in its objective and it was observed that the German forces opposite the British were beginning to move in a southeasterly direction instead of continuing southwest on to the capital, leaving a strong rear guard along the line of the River Ourcq (which flows south of and joins the Marne at Lizy-sur-Ourcq) to keep off the French Sixth Army, which by then had been formed and was to the northwest of Paris. They were evidently executing what amounted to a flank march diagonally across our front.

“Prepared to ignore the British as being driven out of the fight, they were initiating an effort to attack the left flank of the main French army, which stretched in a long curved line from our right toward the east, and so to carry out against it alone an envelopment which so far had failed against the combined forces of the Allies.

“On Saturday, the 5th, this movement on the part of the Germans was continued and large advance parties crossed the Marne southward at Trilport, Sammeron, La Ferte-sous-Jouarre and Chateau Thierry. There was considerable fighting with the French Fifth Army on the French left, which fell back from its position south of the Marne toward the Seine.

“On Sunday large hostile forces crossed the Marne and pushed on through Coulommiers and past the British right, farther to the east. They were attacked at night by the French Fifth, which captured three villages at the point of bayonets.

#### ALLIES TAKE THE OFFENSIVE

“On Monday, September 7, there was a general advance on the part of the Allies. In this quarter of the field our forces, which had now been reinforced, pushed on in a northeasterly direction in co-operation with the advance of the

French Fifth Army to the north and of the French Sixth Army to the eastward against the German rearguard along the River Ourcq.

"Possibly weakened by the detachment of troops to the eastern theater of operations and realizing that the action of the French Sixth Army against the line of Ourcq and the advance of the British placed their own flanking movement in considerable danger of being taken in the rear and on its flank, the Germans on this day commenced to retire toward the northeast.

"This was the first time that these troops had turned back since their attack at Mons a fortnight before and from reports received the order to retreat when so close to Paris was a bitter disappointment. From letters found on dead soldiers there is no doubt there was a general impression among the enemy's troops that they were about to enter Paris.

#### GERMAN RETREAT IS HASTENED

"On Tuesday, September 8, the German movement north-eastward was continued. Their rear guards on the south of the Marne were being pressed back to that river by our troops and by the French on our right, the latter capturing three villages after a hand-to-hand fight and the infliction of severe loss on the enemy.

"The fighting along the Ourcq continued on this day and was of the most sanguinary character, for the Germans had massed a great force of artillery along this line. Very few of their infantry were seen by the French. The French Fifth Army also made a fierce attack on the Germans in Montmirail, regaining that place.

"On Wednesday, September 9, the battle between the French Sixth Army and what was now the German flank guard along the Ourcq continued.

"The British corps, overcoming some resistance on the River Petit Morin, crossed the Marne in pursuit of the Germans, who now were hastily retreating northwest. One of our corps was delayed by an obstinate defense made by a strong rear guard with machine guns at La Ferte-sous-Jouarre, where the bridge had been destroyed.

"On Thursday, September 10, the French Sixth Army continued its pressure on the west while the Fifth Army by forced marches reached the line of Chateau Thierry and Dormans on the Marne. Our troops also continued the pursuit on the north of the latter river and after a considerable amount of fighting captured some 1,500 prisoners, four guns, six machine guns and fifty transport wagons.

"Many of the enemy were killed or wounded and the numerous thick woods which dot the country north of the Marne are filled with German stragglers. Most of them appear to have been without food for at least two days.

"Indeed, in this area of the operations, the Germans seem to be demoralized and inclined to surrender in small parties. The general situation appears to be most favorable to the Allies.

"Much brutal and senseless damage has been done in the villages occupied by the enemy. Property has been wantonly destroyed. Pictures in chateaus have been ripped up and houses generally have been pillaged.

"It is stated on unimpeachable authority also that the inhabitants have been much ill-treated.

#### TRAPPED IN A SUNKEN ROAD

"Interesting incidents have occurred during the fighting. On the 10th of September part of our Second Army Corps, advancing into the north, found itself marching parallel with another infantry force some little distance away. At first it was thought this was another British unit. After some time, however, it was discovered that it was a body of Germans retreating.

"Measures promptly were taken to head off the enemy, who were surrounded and trapped in a sunken road, where over 400 men surrendered.

"On September 10 a small party under a noncommissioned officer was cut off and surrounded. After a desperate resistance it was decided to go on fighting to the end. Finally the noncommissioned officer and one man only were left, both of them being wounded.

"The Germans came up and shouted to them: 'Lay down



your arms!' The German commander, however, signed to them to keep their arms and then asked to shake hands with the wounded noncommissioned officer, who was carried off on his stretcher with his rifle by his side.

"Arrival of reinforcements and the continued advance have delighted our troops, who are full of zeal and anxious to press on.

#### SUCCESS OF THE FLYING CORPS

"One of the features of the campaign on our side has been the success obtained by the Royal Flying Corps. In regard to the collection of information it is impossible either to award too much praise to our aviators for the way they have carried out their duties or to overestimate the value of the intelligence collected, more especially during the recent advance.

"In due course certain examples of what has been effected may be specified and the far-reaching nature of the results fully explained, but that time has not arrived.

"That the services of our Flying Corps, which has really been on trial, are fully appreciated by our allies is shown by the following message from the commander-in-chief of the French armies, received September 9 by Field Marshal Lord Kitchener:

" 'Please express most particularly to Marshal French my thanks for the services rendered on every day by the English flying corps. The precision, exactitude and regularity of the news brought in by its members are evidence of their perfect organization and also of the perfect training of the pilots and the observers.—JOSEPH JOFFRE, General.'

"To give a rough idea of the amount of work carried out it is sufficient to mention that during a period of twenty days up to the 10th of September a daily average of more than nine reconnaissance flights of over 100 miles each has been maintained.

#### FIVE GERMAN PILOTS SHOT

"The constant object of our aviators has been to effect an accurate location of the enemy's forces and, incidentally, since the operations cover so large an area, of our own units. Nevertheless, the tactics adopted for dealing with hostile air craft are to attack them instantly with one or more British

machines. This has been so far successful that in five cases German pilots or observers have been shot while in the air and their machines brought to ground.

"As a consequence the British Flying Corps has succeeded in establishing an individual ascendancy which is as serviceable to us as it is dangerous to the enemy.

"How far it is due to this cause it is not possible at present to ascertain definitely, but the fact remains that the enemy have recently become much less enterprising in their flights. Something in the direction of the mastery of the air already has been gained in pursuance of the principle that the main object of military aviators is the collection of information.

"Bomb dropping has not been indulged in to any great extent. On one occasion a petrol bomb was successfully exploded in a German bivouac at night, while from a diary found on a dead German cavalry soldier it has been discovered that a high explosive bomb, thrown at a cavalry column from one of our aeroplanes, struck an ammunition wagon, resulting in an explosion which killed fifteen of the enemy."

---

#### LOSSES AT THE MARNE ENORMOUS

Some idea of the terrific character of the fighting at the Marne and of the great losses in the prolonged battle may be gained from the following story, telegraphed on September 14 by a correspondent who followed in the rear of the allied army:

"General von Kluck's host in coming down over the Marne and the Grand Morin rivers to Sezanne, twenty-five miles southwest of Epernay, met little opposition, and I believe little opposition was intended. The Allies, in fact, led their opponents straight into a trap. The English cavalry led the tired Germans mile after mile, and the Germans believed the Englishmen were running away. When the tremendous advance reached Provins the Allies' plan was accomplished, and it got no farther.

"Fighting Sunday, September 6, was of a terrible character, and began at dawn in the region of La Ferte-Gaucher. The Allies' troops, who were drawn up to receive the Germans, understood it would be their duty to hold on their very

best that the attacking force at Meaux might achieve its task in security. The battle lasted all night and until late Monday.

"The Germany artillery fire was very severe, but not accurate. The French and English fought sternly on and slowly beat the enemy back.

"Attempts of the Germans to cross the Marne at Meaux entailed terrible losses. Sixteen attempts were foiled by the French artillery fire directed on the river and in one trench 600 dead Germans were counted.

#### COUNTRY STREWN WITH DEAD

"The whole country was strewn with the dead and dying. When at last the Germans retired they slackened their rifle fire and in once place retired twelve miles without firing a single shot. One prisoner declared that they were short of ammunition and had been told to spare it as much as possible.

"Monday saw a tremendous encounter on the Ourcq. In one village, which the Germans hurriedly vacated, the French in a large house found a dinner table beautifully set, with candles still burning on the table, where evidently the German staff had been dining. A woman occupant said they fled precipitately.

"There was a great deal of hand-to-hand fighting and bayonet work on the Ourcq, which resulted in the terrible Magdeburg regiment beating a retreat.

"Monday night General von Kluck's army had been thrown back from the Marne and from the Morin and to the region of Sezanne and his position was serious. Immediate steps were necessary to save his line of communications and retreat. To this end reinforcements were hurried north to the Meaux district and the Ourcq and tremendous efforts were made to break up the French resistance in this section.

#### GERMAN GUNS ARE SILENCED

"The second attempt on the Ourcq shared the fate of the first. Though all Monday night and well on into Tuesday the great German guns boomed along this river, the resistance of the allies could not be broken. 'Hold on!' was the command and every man braced himself to obey. While the





*Top*—Embarking Artillery of the Canadian Contingent on Transport at Quebec

*Bottom*—A Pontoon Bridge Constructed by Canadian Engineers from the Valcartier Camp.  
Note the Use of Airtight Barrels Instead of the Flat Pontoons





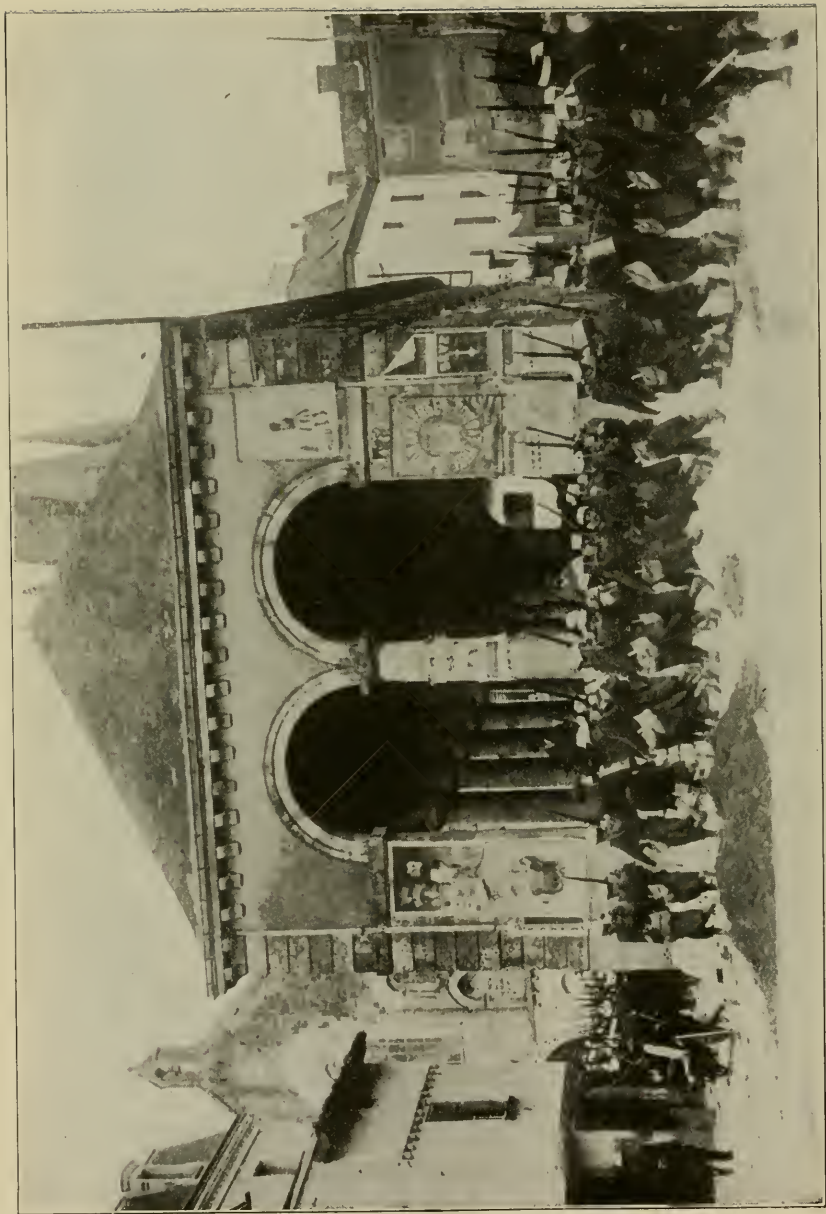
Above—(Left) Archduke Frederick of Austria, in command of the Austrian forces.  
 (Right) General Count von Moltke, chief of German staff.  
 Below—(Left) Archduke Charles Francis, heir to the Austrian throne.  
 (Right) Baron von Hoetzendorf, chief of the Austrian staff



Photo by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

#### THE AUSTRIAN ARMY

1. An Inspection by the Late Archduke Francis Ferdinand.
2. Conference of Officers During Bombardment of Belgrade.



Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.  
French Infantry Marching to the Alsatian Border—Passing a German "Spy Sign," one of the Soup Advertisements Posted in France to Convey Certain Information to German Commanders



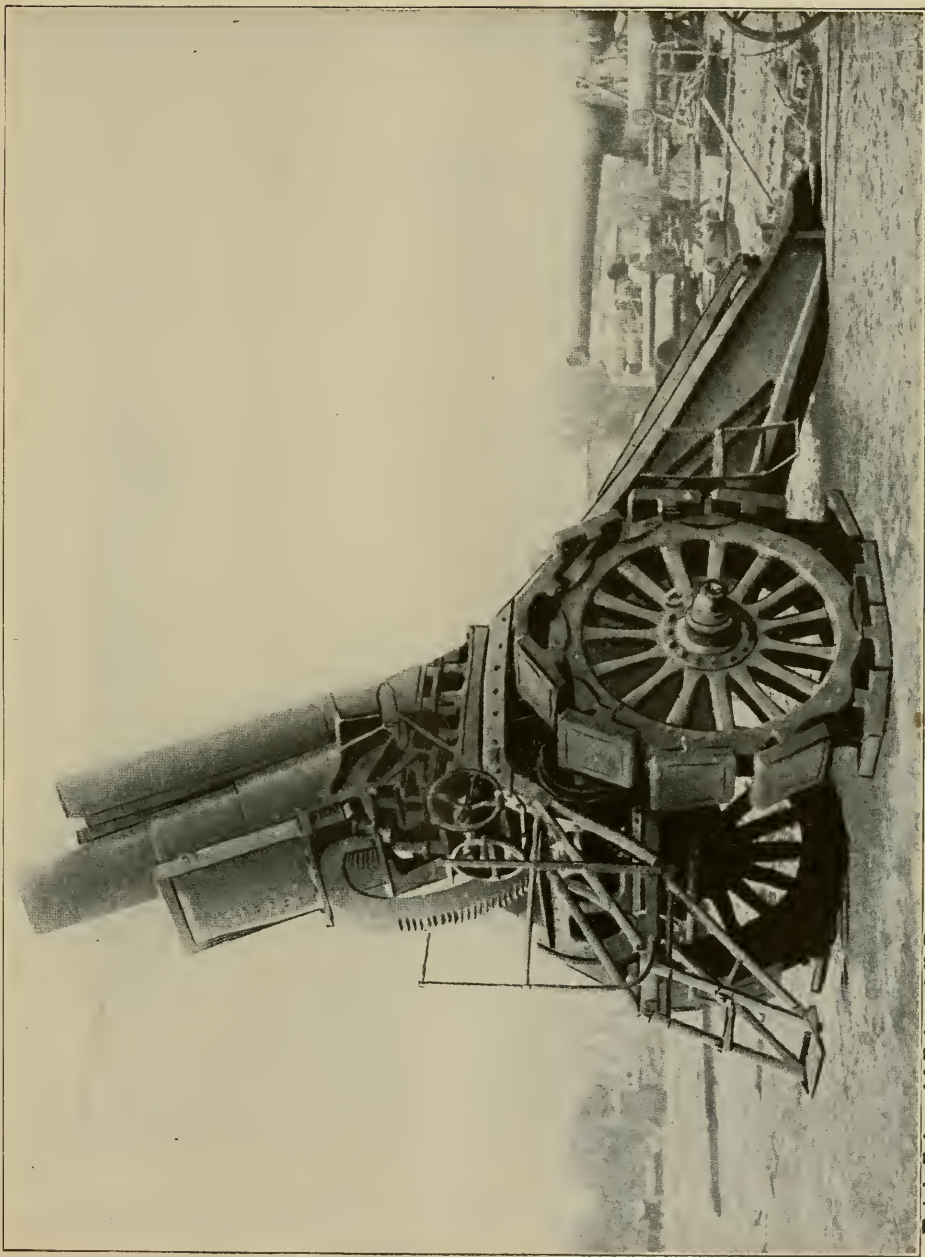
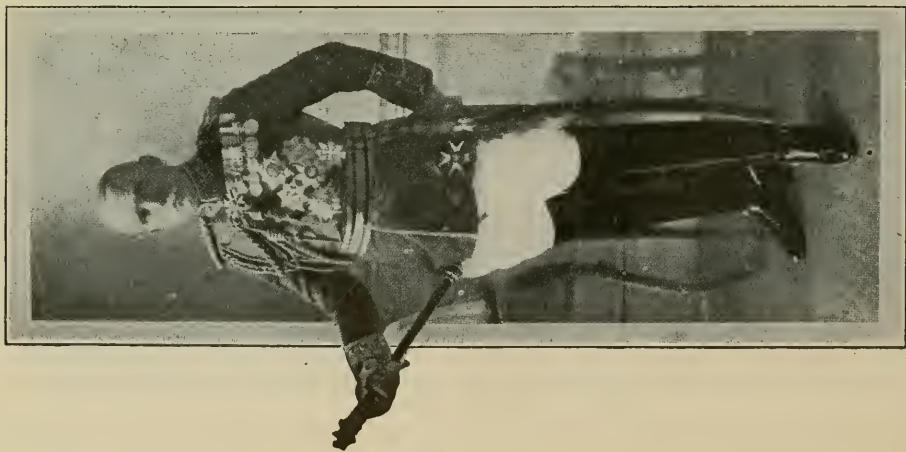


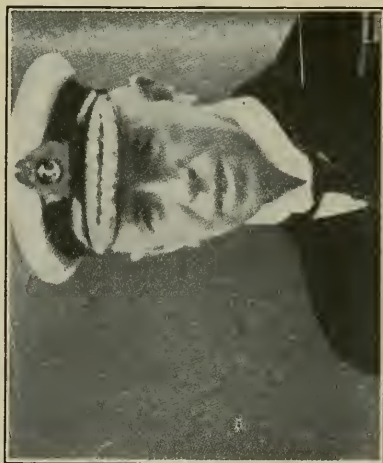
Photo by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

ONE OF THE HUGE KRUPP SIEGE MORTARS, GERMANY'S MOST POWERFUL WEAPON AGAINST FORTS

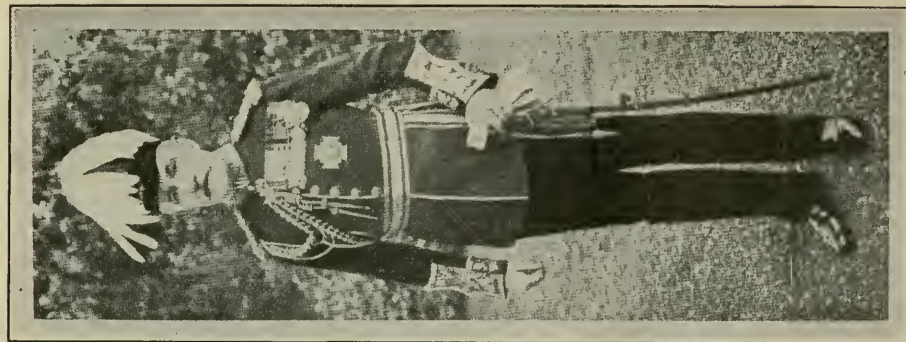




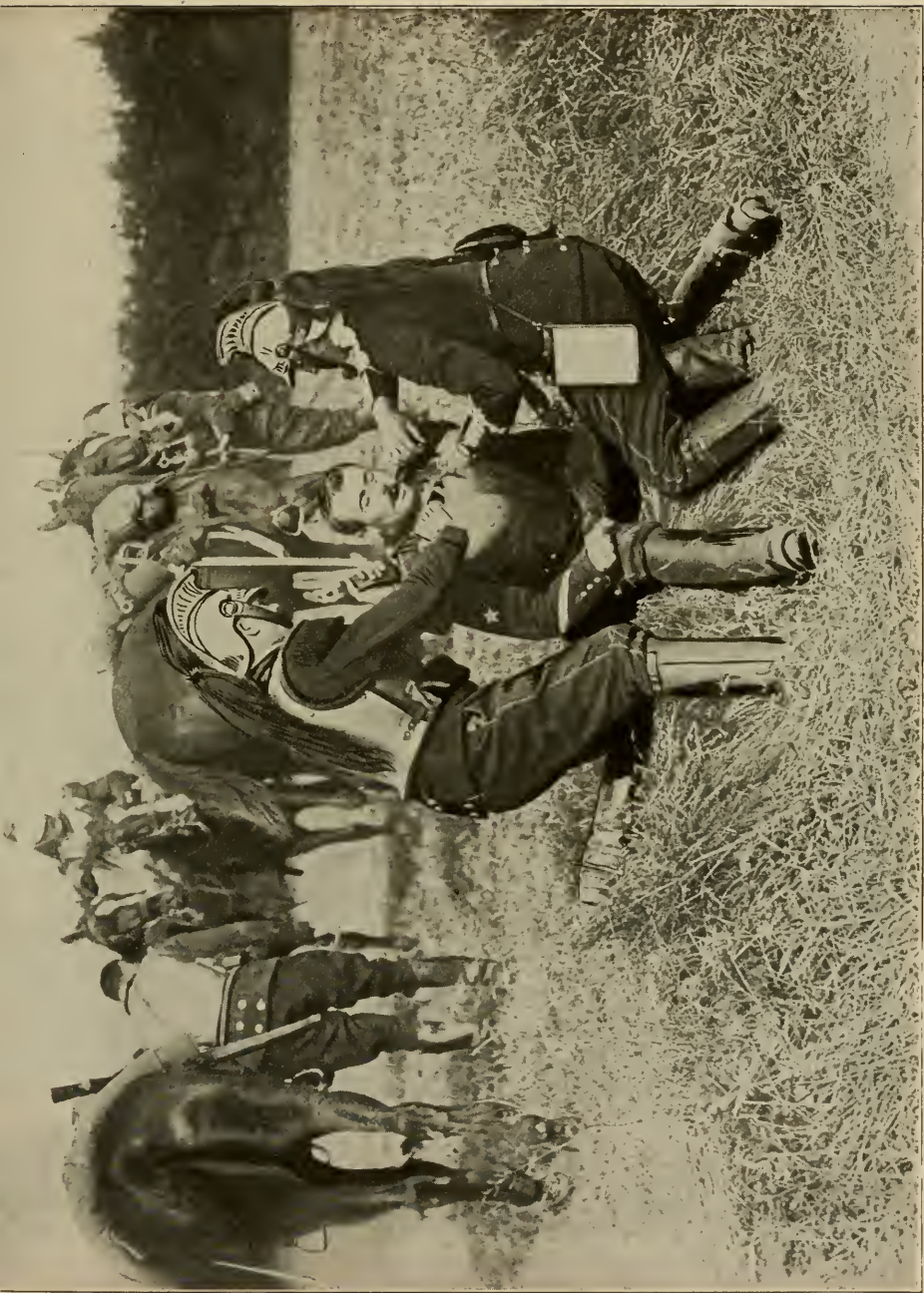
**FIELD MARSHAL SIR JOHN  
FRENCH**  
Commander-in-chief of British forces  
in France



**BRITISH ADMIRALS**  
Upper—Sir John R. Jellicoe.  
Lower—Sir George Callaghan.



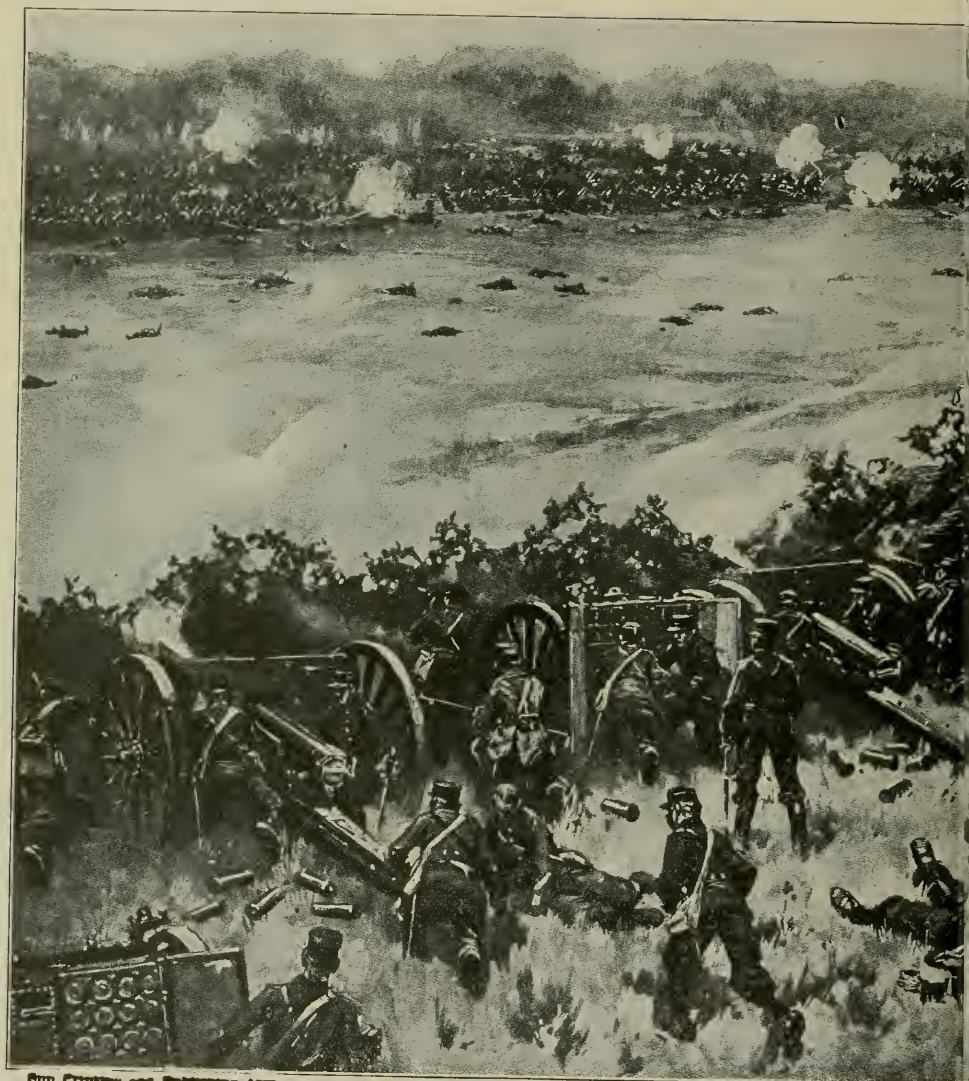
**GENERAL SIR H. SMITH-  
DORRIEN**  
Who saved the British army on its  
retreat from Mons



Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

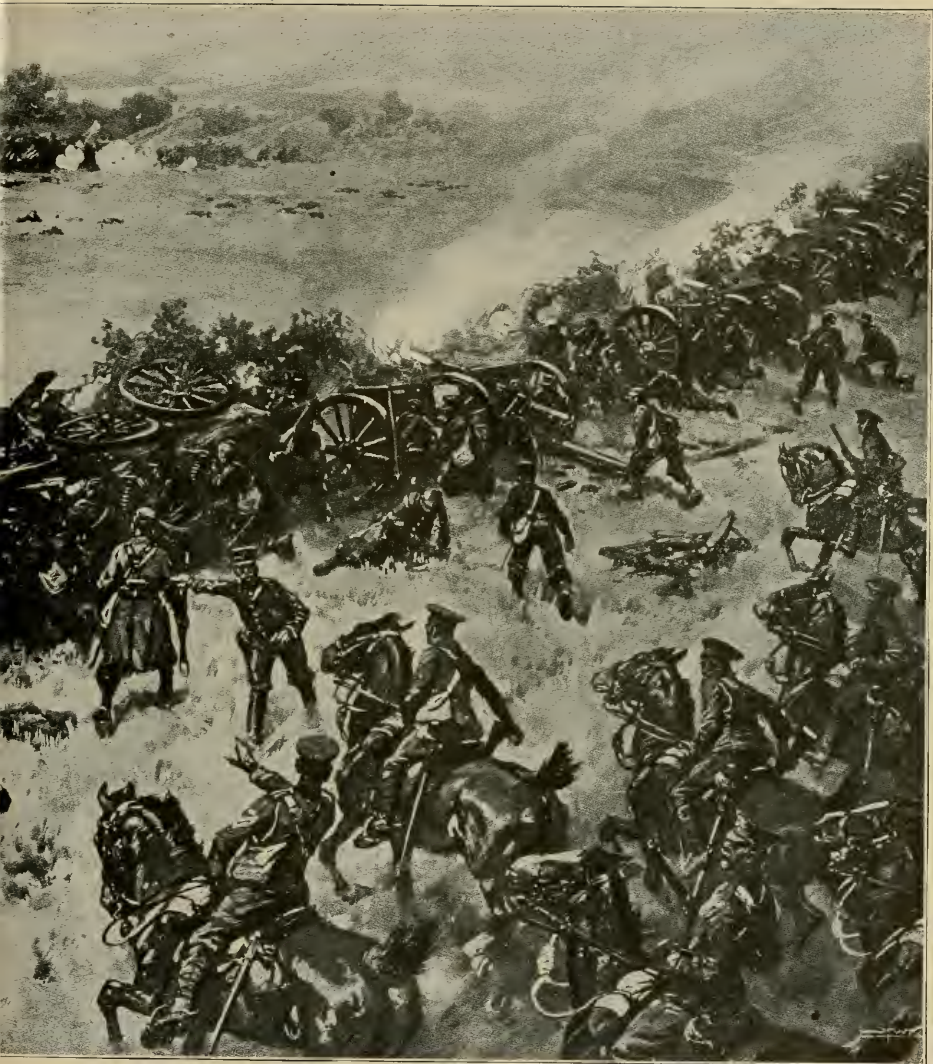
FRENCH DRAGOONS HELPING A WOUNDED COMRADE AT THE BATTLE OF ST. QUENTIN





*Sun Printing and Publishing Assn.*

A remarkable combined attack near Cambrai. Massed German brigade decimated at short range by masked French artillery and field guns, supported by British cavalry. This incident occurred during the retreat of the allies from Mons and Charleroi, a deadly trap being laid for the advancing German infantry. A desultory fire from the French infantry, stationed at intervals between the masked guns, drew the Germans across an intervening field. As the French rifle fire was purposely



inished, a massed brigade of Germans proceeded to cross the fatal ground. When they were within  
ange of about 250 yards, the French artillery suddenly sent a hurricane of shrapnel through the  
man ranks, while the ambuscaded machine guns, it is said, literally cut many of the German  
ntrymen in two.—Drawn by H. W. Koekkek from sketches supplied by Dr. N. Monroe Hopkins,  
eyewitness of the scene.





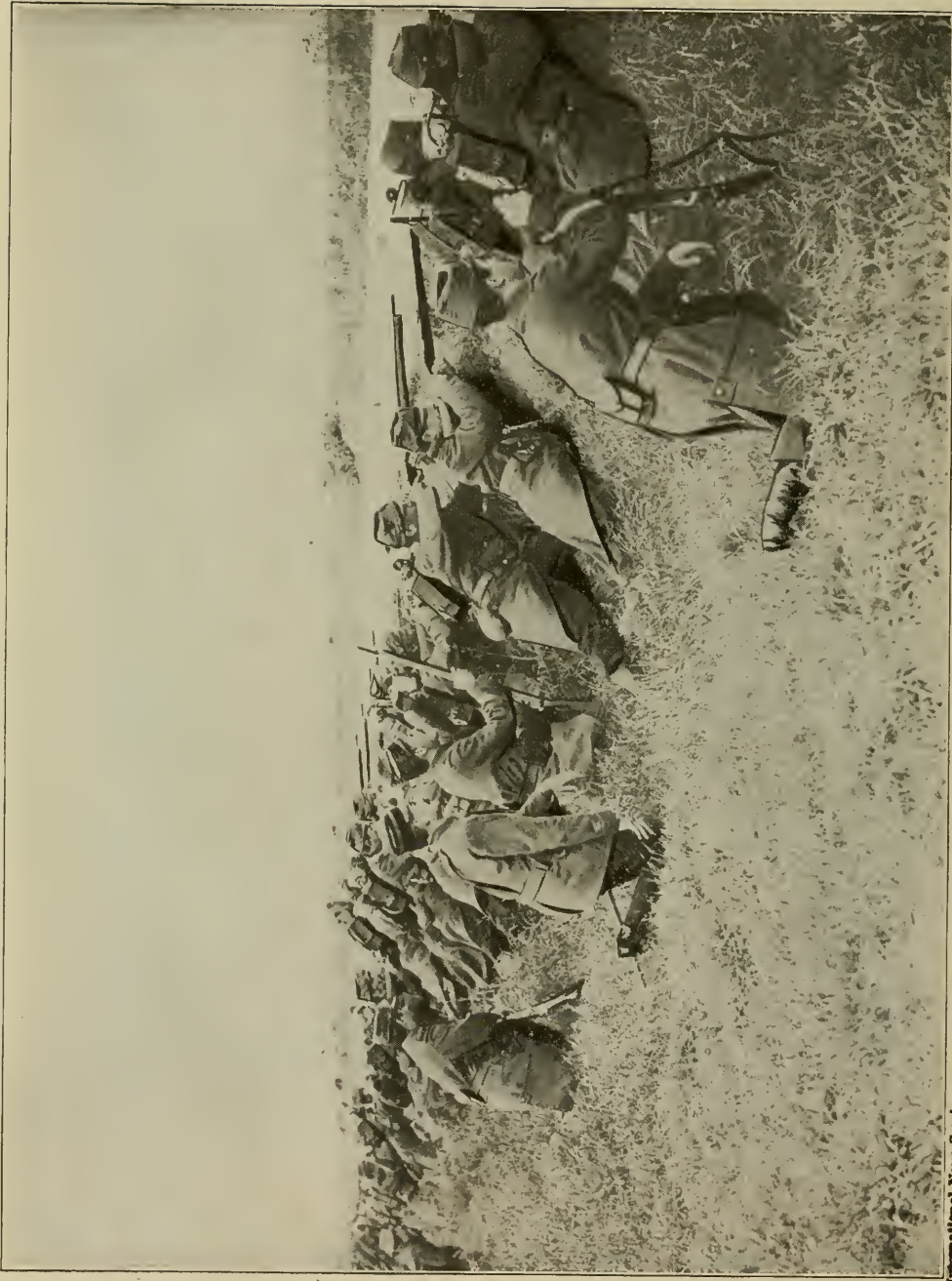
International News Service.

1. A Belgian Dog-Drawn Machine Gun at Liege.
2. Dog Artillery Getting into Position for Action on a Frontier Hilltop.



**CHARGE OF THE BRITISH 9TH LANCERS ON A GERMAN BATTERY DURING THE  
BATTLE OF MONS**

The battery had inflicted heavy losses on the British troops. All the gunners were cut down and the guns put out of action.—Drawn by Dudley Tennant for The Graphic, from notes by a trooper.



FRENCH INFANTRY PHOTOGRAPHED ON THE ACTUAL FIRING LINE AT SOISSONS

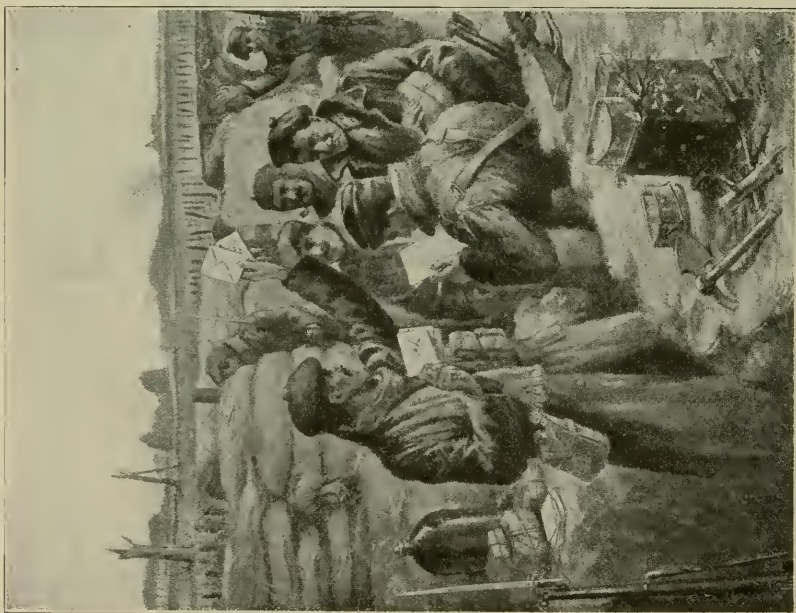




Sun Printing and Publishing Assn.

British cavalry engaged against German infantry driven out of the shelter of the trees by fire and smoke near Chantilly. The charge down the grassy glade of the flaming forest. The woods had been set on fire by British infantry in order to smoke out a large force of Germans who had secreted themselves in the forest. As soon as they emerged they were charged with destructive effect by the British and sustained heavy losses.—Drawn by Frederic de Haenen from a sketch by Frederic Villiers.





**LETTERS FROM HOME**  
From the Graphic

The happiest moment of the Canadian soldier's day comes when the mail is distributed in the trenches on the firing lines in France and Flanders.



Copyright, Underwood & Underwood.

**NEW DEADLY WEAPON BY USED FRENCH AVIATORS**  
Steel Arrow, about size of pencil. When dropped 3,000 feet will penetrate a man from head to foot.



*Top*—Motorcycle Squad, Signal Division, Canadian Expeditionary Force  
*Bottom*—The 51st Regt., of Sault Ste. Marie, at the Rifle Ranges, Valcartier Camp



RIGHT HON. SIR ROBERT BORDEN, P. C., G. C. M. G.  
Conservative Premier of Canada

On Questions of Imperial Defense all Parties in Canada are United and Stand Shoulder to Shoulder against the Common Foe



RIGHT HON. SIR WILFRID LAURIER, P. C., G. C. M. G.  
Ex-Premier and Liberal Leader

Ourcq was being held the struggle of Sezanne was bearing fruit.

"The German resistance on Thursday morning was broken. I heard the news in two ways: from the silence of the German guns and from the wounded who poured down to the bases.

"The wounded men no longer were downhearted, but eager to rejoin the fray. On every French lip was the exclamation that 'They are in full retreat!' and 'They are rushing back home!' and in the same breath came generous recognition of the great help given by the British army.

"The number of wounded entailed colossal transportation work. I counted fifteen trains in eight hours. A fine, grim set of men, terribly weary but amiable, except for the officers.

#### GERMANS LEAVE SPOILS BEHIND

"The enemy crossed the Marne on the return journey north under great difficulties and beneath a withering fire from the British troops, who pursued them hotly. The German artillery operated from a height. There was again much hand-to-hand fighting and the river was swollen with dead.

"Tuesday night the British were in possession of La Ferté-sous-Jouarre and Chateau Thierry and the Germans had fallen back forty miles, leaving a long train of spoils behind them.

"On the same day, in the neighborhood of Vitry-le-François, the French troops achieved a victory. Incidentally they drove back the famous Imperial Guard of Germany from Sezanne, toward the swamps of Saint Gond, where, a century ago, Napoleon achieved one of his last successes. The main body of the guard passed to the north of the swamps, but I heard of men and horses engulfed and destroyed.

"'It is our revenge for 1814,' the French officers said. 'If only the emperor were here to see.'

#### BRITISH KEEP UP PURSUIT

"Wednesday the English army continued the pursuit toward the north, taking guns and prisoners.

"On that day I found myself in a new France. The good



news had spread. Girls threw flowers at the passing soldiers and joy was manifested everywhere.

"The incidents of Wednesday will astound the world when made known in full. I know that two German detachments of 1,000 men each, which were surrounded and cornered but which refused to surrender, were wiped out almost to the last man. The keynote of these operations was the tremendous attack of the Allies along the Ourcq Tuesday, which showed the German commander that his lines were threatened. Then came the crowning stroke.

"The army of the Ourcq and of Meaux and the army of Sezanne drew together like the blades of a pair of shears, the pivot of which was in the region of the Grand Morin. The German retreat was thus forced toward the east and it speedily became a rout."

---

#### RETREAT SEEN FROM THE SKY

The best view of the retreating German armies was obtained, according to a Paris report, by a French military airman, who, ascending from a point near Vitry, flew northward across the Marne and then eastward by way of Rheims down to the region of Verdun and back again in a zigzag course to a spot near Soissons.

He saw the German hosts not merely in retreat, but in flight, and in some places in disorderly flight.

"It was a wonderful sight," the airman said, "to look down upon these hundreds and thousands of moving military columns, the long gray lines of the Kaiser's picked troops, some marching in a northerly, others in a northeasterly direction, and all moving with a tremendous rapidity.

"The retreat was not confined to the highways, but many German soldiers were running across fields, jumping over fences, crawling through hedges, and making their way through woods without any semblance of order or discipline.

"These men doubtless belonged to regiments which were badly cut up in the fierce fighting which preceded the general retreat. Deprived of the majority of their officers, they made a mere rabble of fugitives. Many were without rifles, having

abandoned their weapons in their haste to escape their French and British pursuers."

#### GERMANS ABANDON GUNS

The London Times correspondent describes the German retreat in a hurricane, with rain descending in torrents, the wayside brooks swollen to little torrents.

"The gun wheels sank deep in the mud, and the soldiers, unable to extricate them, abandoned the guns," he said.

"A wounded soldier, returned from the front, told me that the Germans fled as animals flee which are cornered and know it.

"Imagine the roadway littered with guns, knapsacks, cartridge belts, Maxims and heavy cannon. There were miles of roads like this.

"And the dead! Those piles of horses and those stacks of men I have seen again and again. I have seen men shot so close to one another that they remained standing after death.

"At night time the sight was horrible beyond description. They cannot bury whole armies.

"In the day time over the fields of dead carrion birds gathered, led by the gray-throated crow of evil omen with a host of lesser marauders at his back. Robbers, too, have descended upon these fields.

"Trainload after trainload of British and French troops swept toward the weak points of the retreating host.

"The Allies benefited by this advantage of the battleground; there is a network of railways, like the network of a spider's web."

#### FIGHTING DESCRIBED BY U. S. OFFICERS

Two military attaches of the United States embassy at Paris, Lieut.-Col. H. T. Allen and Capt. Frank Parker, both of the Eleventh cavalry, U. S. A., returned on September 15 from an automobile trip over the battlefield where from September 8 until the night of September 11 the French and Germans were fiercely engaged. This battle was the one which assured the safety of Paris.

On September 1 the German left and center were separated, but like a letter "V" were approaching each other,

with Paris as their objective. Had the Allies attacked at that time they would have had to divide their forces and, so weakened, give battle to two armies. By retreating they drew after them the two converging lines of the V and when the Germans were in wedge-shaped formation, attacked them on the flank and center at Meaux and made a direct attack at Sezanne.

The four days' battle at Meaux ended with the Germans crossing the river Aisne and retreating to the hills north and west of Soissons. Col. Allen and Capt. Parker saw the end of the battle north of Sezanne, which resulted in the retreat of the Germans to Rheims.

The battles, as Col. Allen and Capt. Parker describe them, were as follows:

On the 8th the Germans advanced from a line stretching from Epernay and Chalons, a distance of twenty-five kilometers (sixteen miles). In this front, counting from the German right, were the Tenth, the Guards, the Ninth and Twelfth Army Corps. The presence of the Guards, the *corps d'elite* of the German army, suggested that this was intended to be a main attack upon Paris and that the army at Meaux was to occupy the center. The four combined corps numbered over 200,000. The French met them, they assert, with 190,000.

The Germans advanced until their left was at Vitry-le-Francois and their right rested at Sezanne, making a column 15 miles long, headed west toward Paris. The French butted the line six miles east of Sezanne, in the forests of La Fere and Champenoise. It was here that the greater part of the fight occurred. It was fighting at long distance with artillery and from trench to trench with the bayonet.

#### THIRTY THOUSAND MEN KILLED

During the four days in which fortune rested first on one flag and then on another 30,000 men of both armies are said to have been killed and a considerable number of villages were wiped from the map by the artillery of both armies.

Two miles from Sezanne a French regiment was destroyed by an ambush. The Germans had thrown up conspicuous trenches and with decoys sparsely filled them. From the forest in the rear the mitrailleuse was trained on the French.

The French infantry charged this trench and the decoys fled, making toward the flanks, and as the French poured over the trenches the hidden guns swept them.

In another trench the American attachés counted the bodies of more than 900 German guards, not one of whom had attempted to retreat. They had stood fast with their shoulders against the parapet and taken the cold steel. Everywhere the loss of life was appalling. In places the dead lay across each other three and four deep.

#### TURCOS FIERCEST FIGHTERS OF ALL

“The fiercest fighting of all seems to have been done by the Turcos and Senegalese. In trenches taken by them from the guards and the famous Death’s Head Hussars, the Germans showed no bullet wounds. In nearly every attack the men from the desert had flung themselves upon the enemy, using only the butt or the bayonet. Man for man no white man drugged for years with meat and alcohol is a physical match for these Turcos, who eat dates and drink water,” said Richard Harding Davis, who saw the end of the fighting at Meaux. “They are as lean as starved wolves. They move like panthers. They are muscle and nerves and they have the warrior’s disregard of their own personal safety in battle, and a perfect scorn of the foe.

“As Kipling says, ‘A man who has a sneaking desire to live has a poor chance against one who is indifferent whether he kills you or you kill him.’ ”

#### NIGHT BATTLE DESCRIBED BY SOLDIER

The following narrative of a night engagement during the prolonged battle of the Marne is quoted from a French soldier’s letter to a compatriot in London:

“Our strength was about 400 infantrymen. Toward midnight we broke up our camp and marched off in great silence, of course not in closed files, but in open order. We were not



allowed to speak to each other or to make any unnecessary noise, and as we walked through the forest the only sound to be heard was that of our steps and the rustling of the leaves. It was a perfectly lovely night; the sky was so clear, the atmosphere so pure, the forest so romantic, everything seemed so charming and peaceful that I could not imagine that we were on the warpath, and that perhaps in a few hours this forest would be aflame, the soil drenched by human blood, and the fragrant herbs covered with broken limbs.

"Yet all those silent, armed men, marching in the same direction as I did, were ever so many proofs that no peace meeting or any delightful romantic adventure was near, and I wondered what thoughts were stirring all those brains. Suddenly a whisper passed on from man to man. It was the officer's command. A halt was made, and in the same whisper we were told that part of us had to change our direction so that the two directions would form a V. A third division proceeded slowly in the original direction.

#### COMMANDS ARE WHISPERED

"I belonged to what may be called the left leg of the V. After what seemed to be about half an hour, we reached the edge of the forest, and from behind the trees we saw an almost flat country before us, with here and there a tiny little hill, a mere hump four or five feet high. On the extreme left-hand side the land seemed to be intersected by ditches and trenches.

"Another whispered command was passed from man to man, and we all had to lie down on the soil. A moment afterward we were thus making our way to the above-mentioned ditches and trenches. It is neither the easiest nor the quickest way to move, but undoubtedly the safest, for an occasional enemy somewhere on the hills at the farther end of the field would not possibly be able to detect us. I don't know how long it took us to reach the ditches, which were, for the greater part, dry; nor do I know how long we remained there or what was happening. We were perfectly hidden from view, lying flat down on our stomachs, but we were also unable to see anything. Everybody's ears were attentive, every nerve was strained. The sun was rising. It promised to be a hot day.

## FIRST SHOT IS HEARD

"Suddenly we heard a shot, at a distance of what seemed to be a mile or so, followed by several other shots. I ventured to lift my body up in order to see what was happening. But the next moment my sergeant, who was close by me, warned me with a knock on my shoulder not to move, and the whispered order ran, 'Keep quiet! Hide yourself!' Still, the short glance had been sufficient to see what was going on. Our troops, probably those who had been left behind in the forest, were crossing the plain and shooting at the Germans on the crest of the hill, who returned the fire.

"The silence was gone. We heard the rushing of feet at a short distance; then, suddenly, it ceased when the attacking soldiers dropped to aim and shoot. Some firing was heard, and then again a swift rush followed. This seemed to last a long time, but it was broken by distant cries, coming apparently from the enemy. I was wondering all the time why we kept hidden and did not share in the assault.

"The rifle fire was incessant. I saw nothing of the battle. Would our troops be able to repulse the Germans? How strong were the enemy? They seemed to have no guns, but the number of our soldiers in that field was not very large.

## ATTACKED WITH BAYONETS

"A piercing yell rose from the enemy. Was it a cry of triumph? A short command rang over the field in French, an order to retreat. A swift rush followed; our troops were being pursued by the enemy. What on earth were we waiting for in our ditches? A bugle signal, clear and bright. We sprang to our feet, and 'At the bayonet!' the order came. We threw ourselves on the enemy, who were at the same time attacked on the other side by the division which formed the other 'leg' of the V, while the 'fleeing' French soldiers turned and made a savage attack.

"It is impossible to say or to describe what one feels at such a moment. I believe one is in a state of temporary madness, of perfect rage. It is terrible, and if we could see ourselves in such a state I feel sure we would shrink with horror.

"In a few minutes the field was covered with dead and wounded men, almost all of them Germans, and our hands

and bayonets were dripping with blood. I felt hot spurts of blood in my face, of other men's blood, and as I paused to wipe them off, I saw a narrow stream of blood running along the barrel of my rifle.

"Such was the beginning of a summer day."

---

#### SCENES ON THE BATTLEFIELD

Writing from Sezanne a few days after the battle of the Marne a visitor to the battlefield described the conditions at that time as follows:

"The territory over which the battle of the Marne was fought is now a picture of devastation, abomination and death almost too awful to describe.

"Many sons of the fatherland are sleeping their last sleep in the open fields and in ditches where they fell or under hedges where they crawled after being caught by a rifle bullet or piece of shell, or where they sought shelter from the mad rush of the franc-tireurs, who have not lost their natural dexterity with the knife and who at close quarters frequently throw away their rifles and fight hand to hand.

"The German prisoners are being used on the battlefield in searching for and burying their dead comrades. Over the greater part of the huge battlefield there have been buried at least those who died in open trenches on the plateaus or on the high roads. The extensive forest area, however, has hardly been searched for bodies, although hundreds of both French and Germans must have sought refuge and died there. The difficulty of finding bodies is considerable on account of the undergrowth.

"Long lines of newly broken brown earth mark the graves of the victims. Some of these burial trenches are 150 yards long. The dead are placed shoulder to shoulder and often in layers. This gives some idea of the slaughter that took place in this battle.

"The peasants, who are rapidly coming back to the scene, are marking the grave trenches with crosses and planting flowers above or placing on them simple bouquets of dahlias, sunflowers and roses.

## FOUGHT ON BEAUTIFUL CHATEAU LAWNS

"Some of the hottest fighting of the prolonged battle took place around the beautiful chateau of Mondement, on a hill six miles east of Sezanne. This relic of the architectural art of Louis XIV occupied a position which both sides regarded as strategically important.

"To the east it looked down into a great declivity in the shape of an immense Greek lamp, with the concealed marshes of St. Soud at the bottom. Beyond are the downs and heaths of Epernay, Rheims and Champagne, while the heights of Argonne stand out boldly in the distance. To the west is a rich agricultural country.

"The possession of the ridge of Mondement was vital to either the attackers or the defenders. The conflict here was of furnace intensity for four days. The Germans drove the French out in a terrific assault, and then the French guns were brought to bear, followed by hand-to-hand fighting on the gardens and lawns of the chateau and even through the breached walls.

"Frenchmen again held the building for a few hours, only to retire before another determined German attack. On the fourth day they swept the Germans out again with shell fire, under which the walls of the chateau, although two or three feet thick, crumpled like paper."

The same correspondent described evidences on the battlefields of how abundantly the Germans were equipped with ammunition and other material. He saw pyramid after pyramid of shrapnel shells abandoned in the rout, also innumerable paniers for carrying such ammunition. These paniers are carefully constructed of wicker and hold three shells in exactly fitting tubes so that there can be no movement.

The villages of Oyes, Villeneuve, Chatillon and Soizy-aux-Bois were all bombarded and completely destroyed. Some fantastic capers were played by the shells, such as blowing away half a house and leaving the other half intact; going through a window and out by the back wall without damaging the interior, or going a few inches into the wall and remaining fast without exploding.

Villeneuve, which was retaken three times, was, including its fine old church, in absolute ruins.



## A SERIES OF BATTLES

The battle line along the Marne was so extended that the four-days' fighting from Sunday, September 6, to Thursday morning, September 10, when the Germans were in full retreat, comprised a series of bloody engagements, each worthy of being called a battle. There were hot encounters south of the Marne at Crecy, Montmirail and other points. At Chalons-sur-Marne the French fought for twenty-four hours and inflicted heavy losses on the enemy. General Exelmans, one of France's most brilliant cavalry leaders, was dangerously wounded in leading a charge.

There was hard fighting on September 7 between Lagny and Meaux, on the Trilport and Crecy-en-Brie line, the Germans under General von Kluck being compelled to give way and retire on Meaux, at which point their resistance was broken on the 9th.

General French's army advanced to meet the German hosts with forced marches from their temporary base to the southeast of Paris.

The whole British army, except cavalry, passed through Lagny, and the incoming troops were so wearied that many of them at the first opportunity lay down in the dust and slept where they were.

But a few hours' rest worked a great change, and a little later the British troops were following the German retreat up the valley with bulldog tenacity.

The British artillery did notable work in those days, according to the French military surgeons who were stationed at Lagny. At points near there the bodies of slain Germans who fell before the British gunners still littered the ground on September 10, and the grim crop was still heavier on the soil farther up the valley, where the fighting was more desperate.

As far as possible the bodies were buried at night, each attending to its own fallen.

## MANY SANGUINARY INCIDENTS

Sanguinary incidents were plentiful in the week of fighting to the south of the Marne. In an engagement not far from Lagny the British captured thirty Germans who had

given up their arms and were standing under guard when, encouraged by a sudden forward effort of the German front, they made a dash for their rifles. They were cut down by a volley from their British guards before they could reach their weapons.

"Among dramatic incidents in the fighting," according to an English correspondent, "may be mentioned the grim work at the ancient fishponds near Ermenonville. These ponds are shut in by high trees. Driving the enemy through the woods, a Scotch regiment hustled its foes right into the fishponds, the Scotchmen jumping in after the Germans up to the middle to finish them in the water, which was packed with their bodies." This scene is illustrated on another page.

#### VAST GRAVEYARD AT MEAUX

Some idea of how the Germans were harassed by artillery fire during their retreat was obtained on a visit to the fields near Meaux, the scene of severe fighting. The German infantry had taken a position in a sunken road, on either side of which were stretched in extended lines hummocks, some of them natural and some the work of spades in the hands of German soldiers.

The sunken road was littered with bodies. Sprawling in ghastly fashion, the faces had almost the same greenish-gray hue as the uniforms worn. The road is lined with poplars, the branches of which, severed by fragments of shells, were strewn among the dead. In places whole tops of trees had been torn away by the artillery fire.

Beside many bodies were forty or fifty empty cartridge shells, while fragments of clothing, caps and knapsacks were scattered about. This destruction was wrought by batteries a little more than three miles distant. Straggling clumps of wood intervened between the batteries and their mark, but the range had been determined by an officer on an elevation a mile from the gunners. He telephoned directions for the firing and through glasses watched the bursting shells.

#### THE BATTLE AT CRECY

A graphic picture of the fight in Crecy wood was given by a correspondent who said:

The French and English in overwhelming numbers had poured in from Lagny toward the River Marne to reinforce the flanking skirmishers. One of the smaller woods south-east of Crecy furnished cover for the enemy for a time, but led to their undoing. The Allies' patrols discovered them in the night as the Germans were moving about with lanterns.

Suddenly the invaders found their twinkling glow-worms the mark for a foe of whom they had been unaware. Without warning a midnight hail storm from Maxims screamed through the trees. The next morning scores of lanterns were picked up in the wood, with the glasses shattered. A dashing cavalry charge by the British finally cleared the tragic wood of the Germans.

#### BRITISH BLOW UP A BRIDGE

At Lagny one of the sights of the town was a shattered bridge, which was blown up by General French as soon as he got his army across it. At that time British infantry and artillery had poured through the town and over the bridge for several days. General French's idea was to keep raiding detachments of German cavalry from incursions into the beautiful villas and gardens of the western suburbs.

Fifteen minutes after the bridge had been reduced to a twisted mass of steel and broken masonry a belated order came to save it, but the British engineers who had received the order to destroy it had done their work well.

The inhabitants were cleared out of all the neighboring houses, which were shaken by the terrific explosion when the charge was set off. Every window in the nearby houses was shattered.

The people of Lagny took the destruction of their beautiful bridge in good part. They were too grateful for their deliverance from the Germans to grumble about the wrecked bridge.

#### GERMAN LOSSES AT THE MARNE

There is no doubt that the German losses in the engagements at the Marne far exceeded those of the Allies and were most severe, in both men and material. The Germans made incredible efforts to cross the Marne. The French having destroyed all the bridges, the Germans tried to construct

three bridges of boats. Sixteen times the bridges were on the point of completion, but each time they were reduced to matchwood by the French artillery.

"There is not the slightest doubt," said a reliable correspondent, "that but for the superb handling of the German right by General von Kluck, a large part of Emperor William's forces would have been captured at the Marne. The allied cavalry did wonders, and three or four additional divisions of cavalry could have contributed towards a complete rout of the Germans."

The general direction of the German retirement was north-east, and it was continued for seventy miles, to a line drawn between Soissons, Rheims and Verdun.

A week after the battle the field around Meaux had been cleared of dead and wounded, and only little mounds with tiny crosses, flowers and tricolored flags recalled the terrible struggle.

The inhabitants of neighboring villages soon returned to their homes and resumed their ordinary occupations.

#### FALL OF MAUBEUGE

While the fighting at the Marne was in progress, German troops achieved some successes in other parts of the theater of war. Thus, the fortified French town of Maubeuge, on the Sambre river midway between Namur in Belgium and St. Quentin, France, fell to the Germans on September 7. The investment began on August 25. More than a thousand shells fell in one night near the railway station and the Rue de France was partially destroyed. The loss of life, however, was comparatively slight.

At 11:50 o'clock on the morning of September 7 a white flag was hoisted on the church tower and trumpets sounded "cease firing," but the firing only ceased at 3:08 o'clock that afternoon. In the meantime the greater part of the garrison succeeded in evacuating the town. The German forces marched in at 7:08 o'clock that evening.

---

The retreat of the German forces from the Marne ended the second stage of the great war.



## CHAPTER XII

### THE RUSSIAN CAMPAIGN

*Slow Mobilization of Troops—Invasion of German and Austrian Territory—Cossacks Lead the Van—Early Successes in East Prussia—"On to Berlin"—Heavy Losses Inflicted on Austrians—German Troops Rushed to the Defense of the Eastern Territory.*

WHEN at 7:30 o'clock on the evening of August 1, 1914, the German Ambassador at St. Petersburg handed the declaration of war to the Russian foreign minister, the immediate reason was that Russia had refused to stop mobilizing her army, as requested by Germany on July 30.

The general mobilization of the Russian army and fleet was proclaimed on July 31 and martial law was proclaimed forthwith in Germany. The government of the Kaiser had given Russia twenty-four hours in which to reply to its ultimatum of the 30th. Russia paid no attention to the ultimatum, but M. Goremykin, president of the Council of the Russian Empire, issued a manifesto which read:

"Russia is determined not to allow Servia to be crushed and will fulfill its duty in regard to that small kingdom, which has already suffered so much at Austria's hands."

Austria-Hungary declared war against Russia on August 6. From that time on the Russian army had two main objectives—first, the Austrian province of Galicia, and second the eastern frontier of Germany, across which lay the territory known as East Prussia. And while the early days of the great conflict saw a German host pouring into Belgium, animated by the battle-cry, "On to Paris!" the gathering legions of the Czar headed to the west and crossed the Prussian frontier with hoarse, resounding shouts of "On to Berlin!"

## MOBILIZATION WAS SLOW

The mobilization of the Russian army was slow compared with that of Germany, France and Austria, and some weeks elapsed after the declaration of war before Russia was prepared to attack Germany with the full force of which it was capable. The immense distances to be traversed by troops proceeding to the frontier and by the reserves to their respective depots caused delays that were unavoidable but were minimized by the eagerness of the Russian soldiery to get to the front. In Russia, as in all the other great countries engaged in the conflict, with the probable exception of Austria, the war was popular and a wave of patriotic enthusiasm and martial ardor swept over the land, from the Baltic to the Black Sea, from St. Petersburg to Siberia.

In Russia military service is universal and begins at the age of 20, continuing for twenty-three years. There are three divisions of the Russian army—the European, Caucasian and Asiatic armies. Military service of the Russian consists of three years in the first line, fourteen years in the reserve (during which time he has to undergo two periods of training of six weeks each) and five years in the territorial reserve. The Cossacks, however, hold their land by military tenure and are liable to serve at any time in the army. They provide their own horses and accouterments. The total strength of the Russian army is about 5,500,000 men; the field force of the European army consists of 1,000,000 soldiers with about the same number in the second line. There were besides at the beginning of the war over 5,000,000 men unorganized but available for duty.

## ARMY REORGANIZED RECENTLY

Since the disastrous war with Japan the Russian army has been reorganized and it has profited largely by the harsh experience of the Manchurian campaign.

The physique of the Russian infantryman is second to none in Europe. The Russian "moujik" (peasant) is from childhood accustomed to cover long distances on foot, so that marches of from 30 to 40 miles are covered without fatigue by even the youngest recruits. They wear long boots, which are made of excellent soft leather, so that sore feet were

quite the exception even in Manchuria, where very long marches were undergone by many of the units.

Each regiment of infantry contains four battalions commanded by a major or lieutenant-colonel. The battalion consists of four companies of 120 men, commanded by a captain, so that each regiment on a war footing numbers upwards of 2,000 men.

The Russian cavalry is divided into two main categories. There are the heavy regiments of the Guard, which consist mainly of Lancer regiments, and there are also numberless Cossack or irregular cavalry regiments, which are recruited chiefly from the districts of the River Don and the highlands of the Caucasus.

The horses of the Russian horse and field artillery are distinctly poor and very inferior to those of the cavalry. The artillery is therefore somewhat slow in coming into action. But the horses, while weedy-looking, are very hardy and pull the guns up steep gradients. The Russian gunners prefer to take up "indirect" rather than "direct" positions. Batteries are also rather slow in changing positions and in moving up in support of their infantry units.

#### THE RUSSIAN COSSACKS

What the Uhlans are to the German army, the Cossacks of the Don and the Caucasus are to the Russians—scouts, advance guards and "covering" cavalry. They are good all-round fighters, capable of long-continued effort and tireless in the saddle; they are also trained to fight in dismounted action.

As a soldier the Cossack is altogether unique; his ways are his own and his confidence in his officers and himself is perfect. His passionate love of horses makes his work a pleasure. The Cossack seat on horseback is on a high pad-saddle, with the knee almost vertical and the heel well drawn back. Spurs are not worn, and another remarkable thing is that he has absolutely no guard to his sword. The Russian soldier scorns buttons; he says, "They are a nuisance; they have to be cleaned, they wear away the cloth, they are heavy, they attract the attention of the enemy."

The Cossack pony is a quaint little beast to look at, but the finest animal living for his work, and very remarkable

for his wonderful powers of endurance. The Cossack and his mount have been likened to a clever nurse and a spoilt child—each understands and loves the other, but neither is completely under control. The Cossack does not want his horse to be a slave, and recognizes perfectly that horses, like children, have their whims and humors and must be coaxed and reasoned with, but rarely punished. The famous knout (whip) is carried by the Cossacks at the end of a strap across the left shoulder. Most of the men are bearded and in full dress, with the high fur cap stuck jauntily on the head of square cut hair, the Cossack presents a picturesque and martial figure. The appearance of these men is quite different from that of the clean-shaven regular infantryman of the Russian army.

---

#### RUSSIAN PLAN OF CAMPAIGN

While the direct objective of the Russians was Berlin, there were many reasons why a bee-line course could not be followed. Germany had prepared an elaborate defense system to cover the direct approaches to Berlin, and the fortresses of Danzig, Graudenz, Thorn, and Posen were important points in this scheme. The nature of the country also adapts itself to these defensive works and would make progress slow for an attacker.

Moreover, as Austria and her forces mobilized before Russia, a diversion was created by the Austrian invasion of south Poland, in which the Germans also took the offensive. Under these circumstances the Russian plan of campaign resolved itself into three parts:—

(1) A northern movement from Kovno and Grodno on Insterburg and Königsberg as a counter-attack.

(2) A central movement from Warsaw towards Posen with supporting movements north and south.

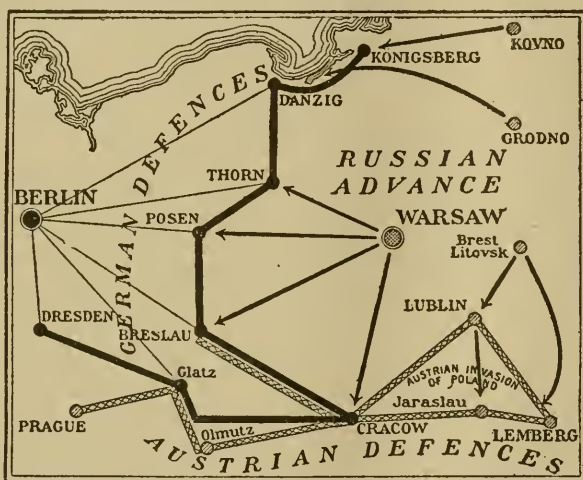
(3) A southern movement on Lublin in Poland to repulse the invaders combined with a movement from the east on Lemberg in order to turn the Austrian flank.

The first purpose of Russia was to clear Poland of enemies, as they threatened the Russian left flank. At the same time Russia took the offensive by an invasion of Prussia in the



north. This latter movement led to a victory at Gumbinnen and the investment of Königsberg. Later came victory at Lublin, rolling back the Austrians, and the capture of Lemberg, which signalized the Russian invasion of Austrian territory. Thus Russia was for awhile clear of the enemy, while she established a strong footing in both Prussia and Austria.

We can now understand the main Russian plan a little better. In the north the army was to advance from Königsberg and endeavor to cut off Danzig and break the line of



THE RUSSIAN PLAN OF CAMPAIGN

In the above view the German lines of defense are shown black, the Austrian lines of defense are indicated by crossed lines, and the Russian advances are shown by arrows.

defenses between that place and Thorn, thus leaving this fortress in the rear. In the south the Austrians, already heavily punished, would be driven back on the Carpathian passes to the south, and westward also toward Cracow, which is the key to the situation. If Cracow fell Russia would have a good route into Germany, and the move would be supported by advances from Warsaw, thus threatening Breslau from two sides.

## GERMAN TROOPS HURRIED EAST

Early in September, however, the danger of the Russian advance into Germany, which apparently had given the German general staff but little concern at first, was fully realized and large bodies of German troops were detached from the western theater of war and hurried to the eastern frontier. Germany had evidently reckoned on Austria being able to hold its ground better, and was badly prepared for a flanking move on Breslau so early in the campaign. But the Servian and Russian defeats of Austria left Germany to bear the full force of the terrific Russian onslaught, and her forces proved equal to the occasion. Under General von Hindenberg the German army of the east soon repelled the Russian invaders and forced them to retire from East Prussia across their own border, where they were followed by the Germans. A series of engagements on Russian soil followed, in which the advantage lay as a rule with the Germans. The losses on both sides were heavy, but the Germans captured many thousands of Russian prisoners and considerable quantities of arms and munitions of war. The immense resources of the Russian empire in men and material made the problem of Russian invasion a very serious one for Germany. This was fully realized by the Kaiser, who about October 1, at the end of the second month of the war, proceeded in person to his eastern frontier to direct the defensive operations against Russia.

## CZAR NICHOLAS AT THE FRONT

About the same time the Czar, Nicholas II, also took the field in person, arriving at the front on October 5, accompanied by General Soukhomlinoff, the Russian minister of war.

"I am resolved to go to Berlin itself, even if it causes me to lose my last moujik (peasant)," the Czar is reported as saying in September. The spirit and temper of the Russian government may be judged by the fact that before the war was many days old the name of the Russian capital was officially changed from "St. Petersburg," which was considered to have a German flavor, to "Petrograd," a purely Russian or Slavic form of nomenclature.

## RUSSIA PREPARES TO STRIKE AUSTRIA

By the third week of August, according to an announcement from Petrograd, Russian troops had checked an attempt by the Austrians to enter Poland from the Galician frontier and were preparing to invade Austria on a large scale. At that time Russia was said to have 2,000,000 men under arms for the invasion of Germany and Austria, also 500,000 on the Roumanian and Turkish borders, and 3,000,000 men in reserve. (The latter were called out by imperial ukase before Czar Nicholas started for the front.) The Poles had been promised self-government and had been called on to support Russia. The Jews throughout the Russian empire were also promised a greater measure of protection, freedom of action and civil rights. These measures inaugurated an era of better feeling in Russia and Poland and were strongly approved by the allies of Russia.

Most of the Austrian reserves were mobilized by August 15 and Germany's ally announced that she would soon have her total war strength of 2,000,000 men in the field. Austria sent some troops to join the German forces in Belgium and an army of several hundred thousand men was gathered along the Austro-Russian frontier under command of the Archduke Frederick. General Rennenkampf was in command of the Russian forces for the invasion of East Prussia, while General Russky led the Russian army operating against Galicia.

## INVASION OF PRUSSIA

Within a week the Russian movement in eastern Germany assumed menacing proportions, the great army of invasion having moved rapidly, considering the natural obstacles. More than 800,000 men were sent over the border into Prussia. The Germans evacuated a number of towns, after setting them afire, and a considerable part of the Kaiser's eastern field forces was bottled up in military centers. Germany's active field force was at this time inferior in numbers to the invading army.

By the capture of Insterberg the Russians paralyzed one of the main German strategic centers and gained control of an important railroad. The German Twentieth Army Corps was reported to have been routed near Lyck. At the start

the Russian forces extended from Insterberg to Goldapp, a distance of about thirty-two miles. Seventy-five miles further on was the first of the two strong German lines of fortifications.

Early victories were claimed by the Russians in their advance into Austria, which was made slowly. Austria then turned to fight the Russian invasion. It was forced to gather all its forces for this principal struggle and hence retired from offensive operations against the Servians. Unless she could halt the Russians pouring in from the north, a success against Servia could do her no good.

By the first of September the Russian advance into East Prussia was well under way and the strong fortress of Königsberg was in danger of a siege. German troops were being rushed to its defense. In Galicia there were fierce encounters between the Russian invaders and the Austrians. Several victories were claimed by the Russians all along the line and whole brigades of Austrian troops were reported destroyed, while the Russian losses were also admittedly heavy. The fiercest fighting occurred in the vicinity of Lemberg, the capital of Galicia, which was soon to fall to General Russky. The Austrian attack on Russian Poland failed and the Austrians were driven back across their own frontier. The Russians were seeking to destroy the hope of the Kaiser for help from Austria in Eastern Germany, where the Russian advance, ridiculed or belittled by Germany before it began, became more menacing every day. The German war plans had contemplated a quick, decisive blow in France and then a rapid turn to the East to meet the Russians with a tremendous force. But the belligerency of the Belgians and the cooperation of the British balked these plans, while the Russians moved faster than was expected by their foe. Austria had failed everywhere to stop the Czar's forces, and then came a crushing blow to Austrian hopes in a ruinous defeat near Lemberg and the loss of that fortress.

#### THE FALL OF LEMBERG

The capture of Lemberg from the Austrians early in September after a four days' battle was one of the striking Russian successes of the war. Details reached the outer



world on September 10th from Petrograd (St. Petersburg) as follows, the story being that of an eyewitness:

"The commencement of the fighting which resulted in the capture of Lemberg began August 29th, when the Russians drove the enemy from Zischow (forty-five miles east of Lemberg) and moved on to Golaya Gorka—a name which means 'the naked hill.'

"We spent the night on Naked Hill, and the actual storming of the town was begun at 2:30 o'clock in the morning. Then followed a four days' battle. A virtually continuous cannonade continued from dawn to darkness without cessation.

"Even in the darkness the weary fighters got little sleep. Whenever a single shot was heard the men dashed for their places and the battle boiled again with renewed fury.

"The enemy's counter attacks were delivered with great energy and a dense hail of lead and iron was poured over our ranks. The Russian advance was greatly impeded by the hilly nature of the ground and the great number of extinct craters, which formed splendid natural fortifications for the enemy, which held them doggedly. Out of these, however, the enemy was driven in succession.

"We suffered much from thirst, for the stony country was devoid of springs. The days were oppressively hot and the nights bitterly cold.

#### RUSSIAN ARTILLERY SUPERIOR

"Both sides fought with great obstinacy, but the nearer we approached Lemberg the harder the struggle became. However, it soon was evident that we were superior in artillery.

"At length the enemy was driven from all sides beneath the protection of the Lemberg forts. Our troops were very weary, but in high spirits.

"For two days the fight raged around the forts, but we were always confident of the prowess of our artillery. The big guns of both sides rained a terrific hail down on the armies, which suffered terrific losses.

"At last we noticed that the resistance of the forts was

growing weaker. A charge at double quick was ordered, and we carried the first line of works.

"It was evident from that point that many of the enemy's guns had been destroyed. Not enough of them had been left to continue an effective defense, but the enemy was undiscouraged and tried to make up with rifle fire what it lacked in artillery.

#### LOSSES BECOME HEAVIER

"Between the first and second lines our losses were heavier than before, but under bayonet charges the enemy broke and fled in panic.

"Our troops entered the town at the enemy's heels. We ran into the town, despite our fatigue, with thunderous cheering.

"An episode which had much to do with ending the enemy's dogged resistance occurred during the fighting between the first and second lines. The Austrians in the hope of checking the Russian effort to encircle the town had thrown out a heavy screen of Slav troops with a backing of Magyars who had been ordered to shoot down the Slavs from behind if they showed any hesitation.

"This circumstance became known to the Russian commander, who ordered a terrific artillery fire over the heads of the Slavs and into the ranks of the Magyars. This well-directed fire set the whole line in panic."

More than 35,000 Austrians and Russian wounded were abandoned on the field of battle between Tarnow, Lemberg and Tarnopol owing to lack of means of transportation, according to reliable reports. Both armies declined to ask for an armistice for the burial of the dead and the collection of the wounded, each fearing to give an advantage to the other.

#### THE BATTLE BEFORE LEMBERG

The immense superiority of the Austrian forces east of Lemberg enabled the Austrians at first to adopt the offensive. As soon, however, as the Austrians realized the impossibility of an advance on Warsaw they concentrated their large and overwhelming forces in an attempt to outflank the right wing of the Russian army, which was drawing slowly but surely towards Lemberg. On the other Russian flank the two Rus-

sian army corps, after crossing the River Złota Lipa without much opposition, continued their advance to the River Knia Lipa, where they found the bridges had all been destroyed by the Austrian advance guards. Two bridges were constructed on the Rogarten-Halicz line, which enabled a crossing to be effected in spite of heavy and incessant artillery fire from the Austrian 24-centimeter guns.

Once across the river, the two Russian corps crossed the upper reaches of the River Boog and so approached the town of Lemberg from the east. The main Austrian army, how-



WHERE RUSSIA FIGHTS.

Battle grounds of Eastern Prussia and of Galicia, where the Austrians were repeatedly defeated with heavy losses.

ever, had by this time moved up to bar the further advance of the Russian forces, and the whole of their armies on the left bank of the River Vistula being in front of the three Russian corps, the latter were compelled to adopt a defensive rôle for three or four days, after which, having received large reinforcements, the Russian force moved forward and drove the Austrian troops out of their entrenchments outside Lemberg at the point of the bayonet. A desperate attempt was made by means of a counter-attack to arrest the advance of the Russian troops, but this only resulted in the capture of 6,000 Austrian prisoners.

Lemberg was not a fortress but was recently converted into a semi-fortified place, as a series of lunettes, redoubts, etc., had been hastily prepared. It was the headquarters of the 11th Austrian Corps, which consisted of the famous 43rd Landwehr infantry division, and was further divided into three Landwehr brigades. There was also a Landwehr Uhlan regiment, together with a howitzer division of field artillery. These batteries were armed with 10.5-centimeter guns, fitted with the German or Krupp eccentric breech action. The forts outside the town were said to be armed with the 15-centimeter siege gun made of steel, also with a Krupp action. The ammunition for these guns is chiefly high explosive shell and shrapnel; one of the forts is also said to have had a battery of three 24-centimeter heavy siege guns of quite a modern pattern.

#### GERMANY RUSHES REINFORCEMENTS

When Lemberg fell the Russian advance covered a line extending from far up in Eastern Prussia, near Tilsit, across the frontier and on down south into Austrian Galicia. Königsberg was hearing the sound of the Russian guns and its besiegers seemed on the verge of victory. A central column of mighty strength was pushing its way into Germany, despite a stubborn resistance. Then the tide turned. German reinforcements were brought up and under General von Hindenberg the Germans administered a severe defeat to General Rennenkampf's army near Allenstein, in which it was claimed that 60,000 prisoners were taken. Other reverses were suffered by the Russians and soon after the middle of September



they had been forced to retire from German territory, the German troops following them into Russia, where a series of minor engagements occurred near the frontier.

---

#### GENERAL RENNENKAMPF'S DEFEAT

The operations leading to the defeat of General Rennenkampf's Russian army by the Germans were as follows:

From September 7 to 13 the Russians took a strong position on the line from Angerburg to Gerdauen, Allenburg, and Kehlau, the left wing resting on the Mazurian lakes and the right wing protected in the rear and flank by the forest of Frisching, whose pathless woods and swamps furnished an almost impregnable position. The Russians devoted great efforts to intrenching their position and brought up besides their heavy artillery. Russian cavalry scouted far to the west and south, but otherwise the army undertook no offensive operations in the days following a battle at Tannenberg.

The German forces, according to the German official account, were composed of the Second, Third, Fourth and Twentieth corps, two reserve divisions and five cavalry divisions.

General von Hindenburg, the German commander, meanwhile was assembling every available man, depriving the fortresses of their garrisons and calling in all but a bare remnant of the force protecting the southern frontier in the vicinity of Soldau, adding them to reinforcements received from the west.

General von Hindenburg again resorted to the customary German flanking movement, and since the German right, protected by the forest and marshes, seemed too strong, he adopted the daring strategy of sending the flanking force to the lake region to the south, the same character of movement by which the Russian Narew army had been defeated on August 28, in the vicinity of Ortelsburg, and which in case of failure might have been equally as disastrous for the Germans.

#### STRATEGY IS SUCCESSFUL

The strategy, however, succeeded, although General Rennenkampf offered a desperate resistance to the frontal attacks. After three days' fighting the Russians were forced

back slightly in the center. When the flank movement of the Germans was discovered already threatening the flank, a counter-movement was launched with a new army collected at Lyck, including the Twenty-second corps and parts of the Third Siberian corps, just arriving from Irkutsk, and the balance of the defeated army. The counter-attacks failed and on September 10 the Russians began to fall back on their main position, retreating in good order and well covered.

The Russian artillery on the right wing appears to have made a good retreat owing to a timely start, while the left wing was hard pressed by the enveloping German infantry. From this wing the Russians retreated across the border in two columns, while the main body went northward and the others in an easterly direction, pursued by the Germans, who advanced far from the border.

The German government appointed Count von Merveldt as governor of the Russian province of Suwalki and other points occupied by them.

The University of Koenigsberg on September 18 conferred upon General von Hindenburg honorary doctors' degrees from all four of the departments of philosophy, theology, law and medicine, in recognition of his success against the Russian invader.

#### AUSTRIA STRUGGLING FOR EXISTENCE

In Galicia, however, Russian successes continued. The important fortress of Mikolajoff, 25 miles south of Lemberg, was captured and this cleared away every Austrian stronghold east of Przemyśl, which was then invested by the Russians.

Austria was now struggling for her very existence as a monarchy. Following the crushing defeats administered to the Austrian troops and with the Czar's forces sweeping Galicia, Vienna was hurriedly fortified. All reports indicated that the large Austrian force, nearly 1,000,000 men in all, opposing the main Russian invasion had proved ineffective. Help from Germany did not arrive in time. Official dispatches reported the main Austrian army retreating, pursued and harassed by the Russians. The other important Austrian army was surrounded near Lublin.

While the Muscovite host went smashing through Galicia,

chasing the Austrian army before it, the Russian staff belittled the retreat from East Prussia, saying that the Russian army was merely falling back on a new defensive position. The German artillery had been getting in its deadly work and the pressure on Koenigsberg was soon to be relieved.

There were many reports at this time of a popular demand in Austria that an end be made to the struggle. Peace talk was a marked feature of the sixth week of the war, but there were no definite results in any part of the immense theater of war.

The third week of September found the Germans, greatly reinforced, making a strong resistance to Russian progress, with the aid of the heavy German artillery. The shattered Austrian armies, under Generals von Auffenberg and Dankl, were making desperate endeavors to concentrate in the vicinity of Rawaruska, but were apparently surrounded by the Russians, who continued to capture Austrian prisoners by the thousand. Fears were entertained for Cracow, one of the strongest fortresses in Austria, if not in Europe, which seemed likely soon to fall into the hands of Russia.

It was stated in Rome, and said to be admitted in Vienna, that the Archduke Frederick, commanding the Austrian forces in Galicia, had lost 120,000 men, or one-fourth of his entire army. German troops were reported marching south toward Poland to assist the Austrians.

The Russian successes in Galicia gave them command of the Galician oil-fields, upon which Germany largely depended for her supply of gasoline, which is a prime necessary in modern war.

#### RUSSIANS AT PRZEMYSL

On September 21 the Russians began the bombardment of Przemyśl, having previously occupied Grodek and Mosciska, west of Lemberg. The shattered second Austrian army was evidently incapable of staying the Russian advance, and took refuge in Przemyśl. A part of this Galician stronghold was soon captured by the Russians, forcing the Austrians to take refuge in the eastern forts, where the entire garrison was concentrated at the end of September, preparing to make a final resistance. The situation of the garrison was critical,

as it was entirely surrounded by the enemy. On September 21 also the Russian troops took by storm the fortifications of Jaroslav, on the river San, and captured many guns.

The German offensive from East Prussia was apparently halted October 1 by the almost impassable condition of the Russian roads in the north. Germany was said to have at this time thirty army corps of the line and the first reserve prepared to operate against Russia and to resist the Russian advance upon Cracow.

The German main defenses against Russia extended in a general line from Koenigsberg to Danzig, thence south along the Vistula to the great fortress of Thorn. From there the fortified line swung to the southwest to Posen, thence south to Breslau, the main fortress along the Oder, and from there to Cracow.

Early in October the Russian invasion of Hungary began. The Russian armies continued to sweep through Galicia and that province was reported clear of Austrian troops. The German successes claimed against the Czar farther north included victories at Krasnik and Zamoso, in Russian Poland; Insterburg and Tannenburg, in East Prussia.

#### ESTIMATE OF AUSTRIAN LOSSES

A Russian estimate places the Austrian losses in Galicia at 300,000 in killed, wounded and prisoners, or nearly one-third of their total forces. They also lost, it was claimed at Petrograd, 1,000 guns, more than two-thirds of their available artillery.

The Russian newspaper correspondents described horrible scenes on the battlefields abandoned by the Austro-German forces in Galicia.

"Streams," said one eyewitness, "were choked full with slain men, trodden down in the headlong flight till the waters were dammed and overflowing the banks. Piles of dead are awaiting burial or burning. Hundreds of acres are sown with bodies and littered with weapons and battle debris, while wounded and riderless horses are careering madly over the abandoned country. The trophies captured comprise much German equipment. An ammunition train captured at Janow (eleven miles northwest of Lemberg) was German, while the



guns taken included thirty-six of heavy caliber bearing Emperor William's initials and belonging to the German Sixth army corps.

"The line of retreat of the Austro-German forces was blocked with debris of every kind—valuable military supplies, telephone and telegraph installations, light railway and other stores, bridging material—in fact, everything needed by a modern army was flung away in flight. Over 1,000 wagons with commissariat supplies alone were captured."

Forty-five thousand Austro-German prisoners were reported to have arrived at Lublin. Russian correspondents with the armies in Galicia asserted that German troops were interspersed with Austrian troops in the intrenchments in order to raise the morale of the Austrians. One correspondent declared that while the Austrians often took flight the Germans were ready, to the last man, to perish.

---

ON THE FIRING LINE IN RUSSIAN POLAND—VIVID DESCRIPTION BY  
AN AMERICAN EYEWITNESS

The first American permitted to witness actual battles near the eastern frontier of Germany was Karl H. von Wiegand, who wrote as follows from the firing line near East Wirballen, Russian Poland, October 9:

"The German artillery today beat back, in a bloody, ghastly smear of men, the Russian advance.

"Yesterday I saw an infantry engagement. Today it was mostly an artillery encounter. The infantry attack is the more ghastly, but the artillery the more awe-inspiring. This was the fifth day of constant fighting and still the German trenches hold.

"Today's battle opened at dawn. With two staff officers assigned as my chaperons, I had been attached overnight to the field headquarters. I slept well, exhausted by the excitement of my first sight of modern war, but when dawn once again revealed the two long lines of the Russian and German positions the Russian guns began to hurl their loads of shrapnel at the German trenches.

"We had breakfast calmly enough despite the din of guns. Then we went to one of the German batteries on the left center. They were already in action, though it was only 6 o'clock. The

men got the range from observers a little in advance, cunningly masked, and slowly, methodically, and enthusiastically fed the guns with their loads of death.

"The Russians didn't have our range. All of their shells flew screaming 1,000 yards to our left. Through my glasses I watched them strike. The effect on the hillock was exactly as though a geyser had suddenly spurted up. A vast cloud of dirt and stones and grass spouted up, and when the debris cleared away a great hole showed.

#### RUSSIANS TRY NEW RANGE

"While we watched the Russians seemed to tire of shooting holes in an inoffensive hill. They began to try chance shots to the right and to the left. It wasn't many minutes before I realized that, standing near a battery, the execution of which must have been noted on the Russian side, I had a fine chance of experiencing shrapnel bursting overhead. It was a queer sensation to peer through field glasses and see the Russian shells veer a few hundred feet to the right. I saw one strike a windmill, shattering the long arms and crumpling it over in a slow burning heap. Then we beat a retreat, further toward the center.

"We had been standing behind a slight declivity. I hadn't caught a glimpse of the enemy. Shells were the only things that apprised us of the Russian nearness. But as we passed out on an open field, considerably out of range of the field guns, I could see occasional flashes that bespoke field pieces, a mile or so away.

#### RUSSIAN INFANTRY CHARGES

"Back behind us, on the extreme left, I was told the Russians were attacking the German trenches by an infantry charge, the German field telephone service having apprised the commanders along the front. With glasses we could see a faint line of what must have been the Russian infantry rushing across the open fields.

"We passed on to the center, going slightly to the rear for horses. As we arrived at the right wing we witnessed the last of a Russian infantry advance at that end. The wave of Russians had swept nearly to the German trenches, situated between two sections of field artillery, and there had been

repulsed. Russians were smeared across in front of these pits, dead, dying, or wounded—cut down by the terrible spray of German machine guns.

“I got up to the trenches as the German fire slackened because of the lack of targets. The Russians had gone back. Strewn in the trenches were countless empty shells, the bullets of which had, as it looked to inexperienced eyes, slain thousands. As a matter of fact, there were hundreds of dead in the field ahead.

#### GUN BARRELS SIZZLING HOT

“German infantrymen spat on their rapid firers as we reached the trench and delightedly called our attention to the sizzle that told how hot the barrels were from the firing.

“The men stretched their cramped limbs, helped a few wounded to the rear, and waited for breakfast. It was not long forthcoming. Small lines of men struggling along under steaming buckets came hurrying up to the accompaniment of cheers and shouts. They bore soup that the men in the trenches gulped down ravenously. Meanwhile men with the white brassard and the red Geneva cross were busy out in the open, lending succor to the Russian wounded. The battle seemed to have come to a sudden halt.

“But even as I was getting soup, the artillery fusillade broke forth again. From 9 o’clock to noon the Russians hurled their heavy shells at the German trenches and the German guns. The German batteries replied slowly.

“There was mighty little fuss and feathers about this business of dealing death from guns. The crews at each piece laughed among themselves, but there were none of the picturesque shouts of command, the indiscriminate blowing of bugles, and the flashy waving of battle flags that the word battle usually conjures up. It was merely a deadly business of killing.

“Over to the right, a scant 300 yards away, the Russians had apparently succeeded in getting the range. As I watched through the glasses I saw shrapnel burst over the battery there and watched a noncommissioned soldier fall with three of his comrades. I was told that one had been killed and three wounded. The Red Cross crew came up and bore away the

four—the dead and the live—and before they were gone the gun was speaking away with four fresh men working it.

“But the shrapnel kept bursting away over it and soon an orderly came riding furiously back on his horse, saluted the officers with me, and shouted as he hurried back to the artillery reserve: ‘Six inch shells to the front; more ammunition.’

“I went back to see the wounded, but the surgeon wouldn’t let me. I expressed to him my wonder at the few wounded. I had seen only a few in the trenches, and no German dead until I saw the artilleryman killed. He explained that the losses on the German side were light because the trenches were well constructed and because there had been no hand-to-hand, bayonet to bayonet fighting.

#### ATTACKS BY RUSSIAN INFANTRY

“Yesterday, my first day at Wirballen, I saw the third attempt of the Russians to carry the German center by storm. Twice on Wednesday their infantry had advanced under cover of their artillery, only to be repulsed. Their third effort proved no more successful.

“The preliminaries were well under way, without my appreciating their significance, until one of my officer escorts explained.

“At a number of points along their line, observable to us, but screened from the observation of the German trenches in the center, the Russian infantry came tumbling out, and, rushing forward, took up advanced positions, awaiting the formation of the new and irregular battle line. Dozens of light rapid-firers were dragged along by hand. Other troops—the reserves—took up semi-advanced positions. All the while the Russian shrapnel was raining over the German trenches.

“Finally came the Russian order to advance. At the word hundreds of yards of the Russian fighting line leaped forward, deployed in open order, and came on. Some of them came into range of the German trench fire almost at once. These lines began to wilt and thin out.

#### MEN PAUSE ONLY TO FIRE

“But on they came, all along the line, protected and unprotected alike, rushing forward with a yell, pausing, firing, and advancing again.



"From the outset of the advance the German artillery, ignoring for the moment the Russian artillery action, began shelling the onrushing mass with wonderfully timed shrapnel, which burst low over the advancing lines and tore sickening gaps.

"But the Russian line never stopped. For the third time in two days they came tearing on, with no indication of having been affected by the terrible consequences of the two previous charges. As a spectacle the whole thing was maddening.

"On came the Slav swarm, into the range of the German trenches, with wild yells and never a waver. Russian battle flags—the first I had seen—appeared in the front of the charging ranks. The advance line thinned and the second line moved up.

"Nearer and nearer they swept toward the German positions. And then came a new sight. A few seconds later came a new sound. First I saw a sudden, almost grotesque melting of the advancing line. It was different from anything that had taken place before. The men literally went down like dominoes in a row. Those who kept their feet were hurled back as though by a terrible gust of wind. Almost in the second that I pondered, puzzled, the staccato rattle of machine guns reached us. My ear answered the query of my eye.

#### MACHINE GUN FIRE TELLS

"For the first time the advancing line hesitated, apparently bewildered. Mounted officers dashed along the line, urging the men forward. Horses fell with the men. I saw a dozen riderless horses dashing madly through the lines, adding a new terror. Another horse was obviously running away with his officer rider. The crucial period for the section of the charge on which I had riveted my attention probably lasted less than a minute. To my throbbing brain it seemed an hour. Then, with the withering fire raking them even as they faltered, the lines broke. Panic ensued. It was every man for himself. The entire Russian charge turned and went tearing back to cover and the shelter of the Russian trenches.

"I swept the entire line of the Russian advance with my glasses—as far as it was visible from our position. The whole

advance of the enemy was in retreat, making for its intrenched position.

## DEAD MEN COVER ACRES

"After the assault had failed and the battle had resumed its normal trend I swept the field with my glasses. The dead were everywhere. They were not piled up, but were strewn over acres. More horrible than the sight of the dead, though, were the other pictures brought up by the glasses. Squirming, tossing, writhing figures everywhere! The wounded! All who could stumble or crawl were working their way back toward their own lines or back to the friendly cover of hills or wooded spots.

"After the charge we moved along back of the German lines at a safe distance and found the hospital corps bringing back the German wounded.

"The artillerymen had resumed their duel and as we came up in the lee of the outbuildings of a deserted farmhouse a shell struck and fired the farmhouse immediately in front of us. As we paused to see if the shot was a chance one, or if the Russian gunners had actually gotten the range, a regiment of fresh reserves, young men who had just come up from the west, passed us on their way to get their baptism of fire.

"Their demeanor was more suggestive of a group of college students going to a football game than the serious business on which they were bent. They were singing and laughing, and as they went by a noncommissioned officer inquired rather ruefully whether there were any Russians left for them.

"Throughout the day we watched the fight waged from the opposing trenches and by the artillery.

"Suddenly at sundown the fighting ceased as if by mutual agreement. As I write this I can see occasional flashes of light like the flare of giant fireflies out over the scene of the Russian charge—the flashes of small electrical lamps in the hands of the Russian hospital corps.

"I'm glad I don't have to look at what the flashes reveal out there in the night."

## CHAPTER XIII

### THE AUSTRO-SERVIAN CAMPAIGN

*Declaration of War by Austria—Bombardment of Belgrade—  
Servian Capital Removed—Seasoned Soldiers of Servia  
Give a Good Account of Themselves—Many Indecisive  
Engagements—Servians in Austrian Territory.*

**F**ORMAL declaration of war against Servia was proclaimed by Austria on Tuesday, July 28. The text of the official announcement was as follows:

“The Royal Government of Servia not having given a satisfactory reply to the note presented to it by the Austro-Hungarian Ministry in Belgrade on July 23, 1914, the Imperial and Royal Government of Austria-Hungary finds it necessary itself to safeguard its rights and interests and to have recourse for this purpose to the force of arms. Austria-Hungary, therefore, considers itself from this moment in a state of war with Servia.”

This declaration was signed by Count Berchtold, the Austrian minister for foreign affairs.

The events that immediately preceded the declaration of war, as summarized in a previous chapter, were as follows:

On June 28 a Slav student who thought he was a patriot killed the Archduke Francis Ferdinand, heir to the Austrian throne, at Serajevo, the capital of Bosnia, which had been lately made a province of Austria. An inquiry was begun in which evidence was introduced to show that the assassin's work was part of a plot for the revolt of the Southern Slav provinces of Austria, and that it was instigated by Servians, if not by the Servian Government. On July 23, however, before the investigation was completed, Austria sent an ultimatum to Servia demanding that it use every means in its

power to punish the assassins and also to stop all further anti-Austrian propaganda. Austria demanded that she be permitted to have representatives in the work of investigation in Serbia.

The next day, July 24, Russia joined the little Slav country in asking for a delay. Austria refused to grant this.

On July 25, ten minutes before 6 p. m., the hour at which the ultimatum expired, the Servian premier, M. Pashitch, gave his reply to the Austrian ambassador at Belgrade. Serbia agreed to all the conditions and apologies demanded by Austria, except the requirement that Austrian officials should be allowed to participate in the inquiry to be conducted in Serbia into the assassination of the Archduke. Even this was not definitely refused.

On July 27 the Austrian foreign office issued a statement in which appeared these words:

"The object of the Servian note is to create the false impression that the Servian Government is prepared in great measure to comply with our demands.

"As a matter of fact, however, Serbia's note is filled with the spirit of dishonesty, which clearly lets it be seen that the Servian Government is not seriously determined to put an end to the culpable tolerance it hitherto has extended to intrigues against the Austro-Hungarian monarchy."

Russia at once notified Austria that it could not permit Servian territory to be invaded. It was then realized in Europe that the great Slav nation would support its little brother. Germany let it be known that no other country must interfere with the Austro-Servian embroglio, which meant that Germany was prepared to back Austria.

An eleventh-hour proposal by the British foreign secretary, Sir Edward Grey, that mediation between Serbia and Austria be undertaken by a conference of the Ambassadors in London, was accepted by France and Italy, but declined by Germany and Austria. Then next day, July 28, came Austria's declaration of war, which soon made Europe the theater of the bloodiest struggle of all the ages.

#### SERVIA AND ITS ASPIRATIONS

Servia's reply to the declaration of war was to concentrate



a strong division of its forces in the Sanjak of Novi-Bazar, from which they would be in a position to threaten Bosnia and Herzegovina, the two Balkan provinces that Austria had lately annexed. It was also reported that Serbia intended to invade Bosnia with the object of enlisting further support from the Bosnian Serbs, who were said to be on the point of rising against Austria-Hungary.

The country of the Servians being well suited for defense, they were never completely overrun by the Turks, as other Balkan states were, and as a consequence they still retain, like the Greeks, a native aristocracy of culture. Physically, they are fairer than most of the Balkan Slavs and more refined in appearance. By temperament they are light-hearted, joyous, frivolous, and charming to deal with.

In Servia itself, including territory acquired in recent wars, there are about 4,500,000 Serbs. In Austria there are about 3,500,000 Serbs, including Croats who belong to the Servian race.

The Servians have long dreamed and talked and written of a greater Servia, that should take in all the Servian race. They look back to the time of King Stephen Dushan, in the fourteenth century, when Servia was supreme in the Balkans and was nearly as advanced in civilization as the most advanced nations of Europe. The re-establishment of this ancient kingdom had become a passion with the Serbs—not only with those in Servia, but with many in Hungary as well. Hence, their animus against Austria and Austrian rule, while Austria's fight was, primarily, for the preservation and solidification of her heterogeneous dominions; secondarily, for revenge for the Archduke's death. Incidentally, it may be mentioned that the Archduke Francis Ferdinand was a close personal friend of the German Kaiser.

#### THE SERVIAN ARMY

The Servian forces under General Radumil Putnik, consist of ten divisions, divided into four army corps, with a peace footing of 160,000 and a war strength of over 380,000. Most of the men called to arms against Austria were veterans of the two recent Balkan wars, and hence probably the most seasoned troops in Europe.

The rifle of the Servian army is the Mauser, model of 1899, with a caliber of 7 millimeters, but it is doubtful if Servia possessed enough of them to arm the reserves. The Servian field piece is a quick-firing gun of the French Schneider-Canet system. The army has some 350 modern guns.

At the outbreak of the war Servia had ten of the most modern aircraft, but she had not developed their efficiency to a degree at which they would be of much material benefit to her in the struggle.

The extremely mountainous nature of Servia and of the adjacent territory of Bosnia make military movements somewhat slow and difficult, especially for troops unaccustomed to mountain warfare. Compared with this mountainous region, the district of Agram, where one Austrian army corps had its headquarters, is easy country to operate in, while the plain of Hungary on the opposite side of the Danube made the task of concentrating troops an easy one for the Austrians.

Another Austrian army corps had its base at Serajevo in Bosnia. A railway to the northeast from this Bosnian capital touches the Servian border at Mokragora. To the north of this point lies Kragujevac, the new capital of Servia, to which King Peter, his court and the Government repaired from Belgrade just before the declaration of war. Southeast of the new capital is the important Servian city of Nish.

The western frontier of Servia follows the windings of the River Drina, a tributary of the Danube. The Danube itself forms part of the northern boundary and the former capital, Belgrade, is picturesquely situated on the south bank of the Danube at its junction with a tributary. Two Austrian fortresses command the city from across the Danube. On the plain of Hungary to the north is Temesvar, an important point at which another Austrian army corps was located.

#### CHANCES AGAINST SERVIA

At the outset the chances of war were heavily against Servia. Such artificial defenses as she possessed were on the Bulgarian frontier. Many of her troops were engaged in endeavoring to establish Servian rule among the neighboring peoples in her new Albanian possessions. Austria was prepared to bring against her immediately the three army

corps from Temesvar, Serajevo and Agram, and four more corps, from Hermanstadt, Budapest, Graz, and Kaschau, within a fortnight. Serbia's one hope appeared to be the difficulty of the country; otherwise she could not oppose for a moment the advance of 250,000 troops supported by 800 pieces of artillery. Then, too, Austria had warships on the Danube and it was partly through this fact that it was decided by the Servian Government to evacuate Belgrade and to retire to Kragujevac, sixty miles southeast.

In spite, however, of the seeming futility of opposition, Serbia, encouraged by Russian support, prepared for a strenuous campaign against the Austrian forces, and the first two months of the war ended without any decisive advantage to Austria. The Servians, on the other hand, claimed numerous successes. Their task was lightened by the Russian invasion of Austrian territory and the determined advance of the Czar's host, which demanded the fullest strength of the Austrian forces to resist. As the Russians hammered their enemy in Galicia the spirits of the Servians rose and their seasoned soldiers gave a good account of themselves in every encounter with Austrian troops. They crossed the Drina and carried the war into Bosnia, putting up a stiff fight wherever they encountered the enemy, and while they sustained severe losses in killed and wounded during August and September, the losses they inflicted upon the Austrians were still heavier.

#### AUSTRIANS BOMBARD BELGRADE

The Austrian troops on the banks of the Danube became active soon after war was declared. In the first few days they seized two Servian steamers and a number of river boats. Belgrade was bombarded from across the river and many of its public buildings, churches and private residences suffered damage.

The hostile armies came into contact for the first time on the River Drina, between Bosnia and Serbia, and Vienna was compelled to admit defeat in this preliminary engagement of the war. The Servians forced a passage through the Austrian ranks, but only at the cost of many killed and wounded.

When Crown Prince Alexander of Serbia began the invasion of Bosnia in earnest, in the middle of August, Austria

found herself at a disadvantage because of the necessity of massing most of her forces against the Russians. Roumania and Montenegro were then preparing to join the Servians in the field against Austria.

Later in August the Servians captured several of the enemy's strongholds in Bosnia. After a four-day battle on the banks of the Drina the Austrians were defeated with heavy loss, a large number of guns and prisoners being captured by the Servians. The Montenegrin troops repulsed an Austrian invading force and took several hundred prisoners in an all-day battle on the frontier.

Early in September a heavy engagement was fought by the Servian and Austrian armies near Jadar, resulting in Servian victory. It was claimed that the Austrians left 10,000 dead on the field of battle. The Servians also successfully defended Belgrade, which had been bombarded on several occasions. Fifteen or twenty miles west of Belgrade on the Save River, an Austrian force was decisively defeated by the Servians, who then seemed to be duplicating the successes of the Russian army against Austria.

The attitude of Turkey was being closely watched at this time, Greece and Bulgaria being prepared to enter the war against the Ottoman Empire if the latter decided on belligerency, but on September 5 Turkey again declared her intention to remain neutral.

#### SERVIAN'S CAPTURE SEMLIN

Crossing the Save River into Hungary, the Servians scored a brilliant stroke in the capture of Semlin, an important Austrian city. They also reported continued successes in Bosnia. Reports of wholesale desertions of Slavs from the Austrian army were received daily and probably had considerable foundation in fact. It was said that the Servians were being received enthusiastically by the people of Hungary.

These Servian triumphs led to the reorganization of the Balkan League, including Serbia, Montenegro, Bulgaria and Greece.

On September 20 the Servian Government announced that an Austrian attacking army which attempted to cross the frontier near the Sabatz Mountains had been routed with a



loss of 15,000 killed and wounded. The Servian losses in this and other engagements were claimed to have been small in comparison with those of the enemy.

Continuing their forward movement into Hungary, the Servians inflicted further losses on the Austrians near Novi-pazow, while the Montenegrins reported a victory in the mountain slopes over their border.

On October 1 it was reported that the Servians had again repulsed an Austrian attempt at invasion and had driven the Austrians back across the Drina with loss. They had also checked another Austrian attempt to take Belgrade. The Servian war office claimed that the combined Servian-Montenegrin armies had made material progress in their invasion of Bosnia-Herzegovina, and that they were within striking distance of Serajevo, which they expected to capture. This, however, was denied by the Vienna ministry of war, which claimed that the Servian situation was entirely satisfactory to Austria.

On October 5 Servian troops were reported to have begun a northeast advance from Semlin, to effect a junction with two Russian columns advancing southward in Hungary. One of these columns was then assaulting a fortress in Northwest Hungary, sixty-six miles southeast of Olmutz, while the other was descending the valley of the Nagyan against Huszt in the province of Marmaros. This latter province or county, which the Russians invaded through the Carpathian passes, lies in the northeast of Hungary, bordering on Galicia, Bukowina and Transylvania. There was a legend that the eastern Carpathians are impregnable, but this legend was destroyed by the Russian invasion.

Before attaining Uzsok pass, in the Carpathians, the Russians successively captured by a wide flanking movement three well-masked positions which were strongly defended by guns. Each time the Russians charged the enemy fled and the Russians followed up the Austrian retreat with shrapnel and quick fire, inflicting heavy losses.

German troops joined the Austrian forces in Hungary and at some points succeeded in repulsing the invaders, though their general advance was not decisively checked and they continued the endeavor to effect a junction with the Servians to the south. Advices from Budapest, October 6, declared that

the Russians had captured Marmaros-Sziget, capital of the county of Marmaros, necessitating the removal of the government of that department to Huszt, twenty-eight miles west-northwest of Sziget. A second Russian column was reported to be threatening Huszt and Austro-German reinforcements were being hurried up to check the Russian advance.



"BY ALLAH, I MAY HAVE TO INTERFERE IN THE NAME OF HUMANITY."

—Kessler in the *New York Evening Sun*.

## CHAPTER XIV

### STORIES FROM THE BATTLEFIELD

*Thrilling Incidents of the Great War Told by Actual Combatants—Personal Experiences from the Lips of Survivors of the World's Bloodiest Battles—Tales of Prisoners of War, Wounded Soldiers and Refugees Rendered Homeless in Blighted Arena of Conflict.*

#### HAND-TO-HAND FIGHTING

**C**AVALRY fighting on the banks of the River Marne in the year 1914 was almost identical with the charge in the days when Hannibal's Numidian horse charged at Romans at Lake Trasimene, or when Charles Martel and the chivalry of France worsted the Moors and saved Europe on the plains of Tours.

A good description of a cavalry charge was given by Private Capel of the Third British Hussars, a veteran of the Boer war, who took part in the fighting beginning at Mons and was separated from his regiment in a charge at Coulommiers, in the battle of the Marne, when his horse fell.

"You hear," said he, "the enemy's bugles sounding the charge. Half a mile away you see the Germans coming and it seems that in an instant they will be on you. You watch fascinated and cold with a terror that makes you unable to lift an arm or do anything but wait and tremble.

"They come closer and still you are horrorstruck. Then you feel your horse fretting and suddenly you start from your daze, and fear changes suddenly to hate. Your hand goes to the saber hilt, your teeth clinch and you realize that you must strike hard before the enemy, who is now very close, can strike. Every muscle tightens with the waiting.

"Before your own bugles have sounded two notes of the charge you find yourself leaning forward over the neck of

your galloping horse. All the rest is a mad gallop, yells of the enemy and your own answer, a terrible shock in which you are almost dismounted, and then you find yourself face to face with a single opponent who, standing up in the stirrups, is about to split your head. You notice that you are striking like a fiend with the saber.

“After that madness passes it seems almost like a complex maneuver and soon you find yourself riding for dear life—perhaps to escape, perhaps after the Germans. You then realize that you have been whipped and that the charge has failed, or you see the backs of the fleeing enemy, feel your horse straining in pursuit and know that you have gained a victory.”

#### FRIGHTFUL MORTALITY AMONG OFFICERS

The official reports of the loss of life in the battles in France tell of the large number of officers killed. Sharpshooters on both sides have had instructions to aim at officers. These sharpshooters are often concealed far in advance of their troops. Their small number and their smokeless powder make their discovery most difficult. This lesson was learned at great cost to the British during the Boer war.

Dispatches from Bordeaux stated that letters found on dead and captured German officers prove the truth of reports regarding the terrible mortality in the German ranks, especially among officers. In the Tenth and Imperial Guard Corps of the German army it is said that only a few high ranking officers escaped being shot, and many have been killed. The German officers have distinguished themselves by their courage, according to the stories of both British and French who fought them.

An officer of an Imperial Guard regiment, who was taken prisoner after being wounded, said:

“My regiment left for the front with sixty officers; it counts today only five. We underwent terrible trials.”

A German artillery officer wrote:

“Modern war is the greatest of follies. Companies of 250 men in the Tenth Army Corps have been reduced to seventy men, and there are companies of the guard commanded by volunteers of a year, all the officers having disappeared.”



## 224 *STORIES FROM THE BATTLEFIELD*

### SAYS GERMANS FOUGHT EVERY DAY

The following is from a letter written during the prolonged battle of the Aisne by a lieutenant of the Twenty-sixth German Artillery:

"The Tenth Corps has been constantly in action since the opening of the campaign. Nearly all our horses have fallen. We fight every day from 5 in the morning till 8 at night, without eating or drinking. The artillery fire of the French is frightful. We get so tired that we cannot ride a horse, even at a walk. Toward noon our battery was literally under a rain of shrapnel shells and that lasted for three days. We hope for a decisive battle to end the situation, for our troops cannot rest. A French aviator last night threw four bombs, killing four men and wounding eight, and killing twenty horses and wounding ten more. We do not receive any more mail, for the postal automobiles of the Tenth Corps have been destroyed."

### HOW IT FEELS TO BE WOUNDED

Many men in the trenches have proved themselves heroes in the war. A wounded British private told this story:

"We lay in the trench, my friend and I, and when the order to fire came we shot, and shot till our rifles burned up. Still the Germans swarmed on toward us, and then my friend received a bad wound. I turned to my work again, continuing to shoot slowly. Then I rose a little too high on my shoulder.

"Do you know what it is like to be wounded? A little sting pierced my arm like a hot wire; too sharp almost to be sore, and my rifle fell from me. I looked at my friend then and he was dead."

In one casualty list made public by the British war office in September, sixteen officers were reported killed, thirty-eight wounded and ten missing. The famous Coldstream Guards and the Black Watch regiments were among the sufferers.

### HOW GENERAL FINDLEY DIED

A correspondent in France described the death of General Neil Douglas Findley of the British Royal Artillery as follows:

"When at dawn the British advance continued toward Soissons the enemy was fighting an exceptionally fierce rear-

guard action. A terrible shell fire was directed against our artillery under General Findley, temporarily situated in a valley by the village of Prise. It seemed a matter of moments when we should have to spike our guns and General Findley saw the urgency for action.

"'Boys,' his voice echoed down the line, 'we are going to get every gun into position.' Then deliberately the general approached a regimental chaplain kneeling beside a gunner. 'Here are some of my personal belongings, chaplain. See that they don't go astray.'

"One by one our guns began to blaze away and the general had a word of encouragement and advice for every man. In vain his staff tried to persuade him to leave the danger zone.

"Our range was perfect, the German fire slackened and died away and with a yell our men prepared to advance. The outburst came too soon, one parting shell exploding in a contact with Findley's horse, shattering man and beast."

#### KILLED FOE IN REVOLVER DUEL

While their men battled on a road near Antwerp, it is said that a Belgian cavalry sergeant and an officer of German Uhlans fought a revolver duel which ended when the Belgian killed his foe, sending a bullet into his neck at close range.

The daring Uhlans had approached close to the Antwerp fortifications on a reconnoitering expedition. They were seen by a small Belgian force, which immediately went out on the road to give battle. As they neared each other, the German commander shouted a jibe at the Belgian sergeant. There was no answer, but the sergeant rode at a gallop straight for the Uhlan. Miraculously escaping the shots aimed at him, he drew up alongside the officer and informed him that his life was to be forfeited for the insulting words he had uttered. Both began firing with their revolvers, while at the same time their men clashed.

Only a few of the soldiers witnessed the thrilling duel, for they themselves were fighting desperately. After their officer's death the Uhlans withdrew, leaving a number of dead. Someone carried word of the duel to King Albert, who had just arrived in Antwerp, and he called before him and personally congratulated the sergeant, Henri Pyppes. The latter

## 226 *STORIES FROM THE BATTLEFIELD*

was wounded in the arm by one of the Uhlan's bullets, but he refused to be taken to the hospital and remained on duty in the field.

### LITTLE STORIES FROM FRANCE

Count Guerri de Beauregard, a French veteran of the war of 1870, thus announced the death of a son at the front: "One son already has met the death of the brave beyond the frontier at the head of a squadron of the Seventh Hussars. Others will avenge him. Another of my sons, an artilleryman, is with the general staff. My eldest son is with the Twenty-first Chasseurs. Long live France!"

A wounded French soldier who was taken to Marseilles verified a remarkable story of his escape from death while fighting in German Lorraine. The soldier owes his life to a small bust of Emperor William, which he picked up in a village school and placed in his haversack. A German bullet struck the bust and, thus deflected, inflicted only a slight wound on the soldier.

Twenty German prisoners taken during the *mêlée* near Crecy, were herded together in a clearing, their rifles being stacked nearby. In a rash moment they thought that they were loosely guarded and made a combined rush for the rifles. "They will never make another," was the laconic report of the guard.

### SAYS DEAD FILLED THE MEUSE

Edouard Helsey of the Paris newspaper, *Le Journal*, reported to be serving with the colors, wrote under date of August 29:

"It would be difficult to estimate the number of Germans killed last week. Whole regiments were annihilated at some points. They came out of the woods section by section. One section, one shell—and everything was wiped out.

"At two or three places which I am forbidden to name corpses filled the Meuse until the river overflowed. This is no figure of speech. The river bed literally was choked by the mass of dead Germans. The effect of our artillery surpasses even our dreams."

DETROIT ARTIST'S NARROW ESCAPE

Lawrence Stern Stevens, an artist of Detroit, narrowly escaped death near Aix-la-Chapelle at the hands of a crazed German lieutenant, by whom he was suspected of being a spy.

Stevens left Brussels on Aug. 24 in an automobile. He was accompanied by a photographer and a Belgian newspaper correspondent, and his intention had been to make sketches on the battlefield. His arrest at Lanefte thwarted this plan. He underwent a terrifying ordeal at the hands of his demented captor, although he was not actually injured.

On the evening of Aug. 24 he was court-martialed and sentenced to death and held in close confinement over night. Early on the morning of Aug. 25 he was led out, as he supposed, to be shot, but the plans had been changed and instead he was taken before Gen. von Arnim. After being forced to march with German troops for two days, Stevens fell in with a party of American correspondents at Beaumont, from which point he traveled to Aix-la-Chapelle on a prison train, and eventually reached Rotterdam and safety.

SAD PLIGHT OF FRENCH FUGITIVES

M. Brioux, the noted French dramatist, who witnessed the arrival at Chartres of a train full of fugitives who had fled from their homes before the German advance, described his experience for the *Figaro*. The fleeing people gathered round him and told him stories and he wrote his impressions as follows:

"Children weep or gaze wide-eyed, wondering what is the matter. Old folks sit in gloomy silence. Women with haggard cheeks and disheveled hair seem to belong to another age.

"They tell of invaders who scattered powder around or threw petroleum into their houses and then set them afire.

"And when did this happen? Yesterday! It is not a matter of centuries ago in distant climes, but yesterday, and quite near to us. Yet one cannot believe it was really yesterday that these things were done."



One of the fugitives explained to M. Brieux why after the first hour of their flight she had to carry her elder child as well as her baby. She showed him a pair of boots.

"I felt the inside with my fingers," says Brieux. "Nails had come through the soles. I looked at the child's feet. They were dirty with red brown clots. It was blood."

#### CHAUNCEY DEPEW ON A RUNNING-BOARD

Chauncey M. Depew, former United States Senator for New York, was in Geneva when the trouble began. He said on his return: "After crossing the border into France we picked up men joining the colors on the way to Paris, until our train could hold no more.

"Whenever I stuck my head into a corridor the soldiers would set up a cheer on seeing my side whiskers. They mistook me for an Englishman and cried: 'Long live the *entente cordiale!*'"

#### IN THE "VALLEY OF DEATH"

The fiercest fighting of all that preceded the Russian victory at Lublin was in a gorge near the village of Mikolaïff, which the Russian soldiers reverently named the "Valley of Death."

The gorge was full of dead men, lying in heaps, according to an officer who participated in the battle. "When we attacked at 3 o'clock in the morning," he said, "the gorge contained 15,000 Austrians, a large proportion of whom were mowed down by the artillery fire which plowed through the valley in the darkness. The Austrians surrendered and we entered the gorge to receive their arms, while their general stood quietly on a hill watching the scene. Eight of his standards being turned over to the Russians was more than he could bear, for he drew a pistol and shot himself."

#### GENERAL USE OF KHAKI UNIFORMS

The war put everybody into khaki, with a few exceptions. On the battle line or in the field the English soldier and the English officer get out of their richly colored and historic

uniforms and into khaki, of a neutral hue. The Germans are in gray. The Austrians have most of their soldiers in khaki, and the Russians all wear khaki-colored cloth. The French still cling to their blue coats and brilliant red trousers, although steps are being taken to reclothe the army in more modern fashion, and the Belgians have a uniform that is very similar to the French.

The French and Belgian officers are dangerously ornamented with gilt trimmings during warfare and present such brilliant targets that some of the Belgian regiments during hard fighting with the Germans have lost nearly all of their leaders.

The new twentieth century mode of warfare puts the ban on anything that glitters, even the rifle barrels, bayonets and sabers.

#### A BELGIAN BOY HERO

On a cot in the Red Cross hospital at Ostend, September 12, lay one of the heroes of the war. He is Sergeant van der Bern of the Belgian army, and only 17 years old. He was only a corporal when he started out with twenty-nine men on a reconnoitering expedition during which he was wounded, but displayed such valor that his bravery was publicly related to all the soldiers, and Van der Bern was promoted.

Van der Bern and his little command came suddenly upon a band of fifty Uhlans while on their expedition. Outnumbered, his men turned and fled. The corporal shouted to them and dashed alone toward the Germans. The other Belgians rallied and threw themselves upon the Uhlans. Within a few minutes only Van der Bern and two others of his command remained. Twenty-seven Belgians were dead or wounded. Within a few minutes more the corporal's companions fell, mortally wounded. Then the boy picked them up and displaying almost superhuman strength carried them to safety. As he was making his retreat, burdened by the two wounded men, Van der Bern was hit twice by German bullets. He staggered on, placed his men in charge of the Red Cross and without a word walked to headquarters and reported the engagement. Then he fell in a faint.

## WHEN THE GERMANS RETREATED

A vivid description of the rout and retreat of the Germans during hurricane and rain on September 10, which turned the roads into river ways so that the wheels of the artillery sank deep in the mire, was given by a correspondent writing from a point near Melun. He described how the horses strained and struggled, often in vain, to drag the guns away, and continued:

"I have just spoken with a soldier who has returned wounded from the pursuit that will go down with the terrible retreat from Moscow as one of the crowning catastrophes of the world. They fled, he declares, as animals flee who are cornered, and know it.

"Imagine a roadway littered with guns, knapsacks, cartridge belts, Maxims and heavy cannons even. There were miles and miles of it. And the dead—those piles of horses and those stacks of men! I have seen it again and again, men shot so close to one another that they remained standing after death. The sight was terrible and horrible beyond words.

"The retreat rolls back and trainload after trainload of British and French are swept toward the weak points of the retreating host. This is the advantage of the battleground which the Allies have chosen. The network of railways is like a spider's web. As all railways center upon Paris, it is possible to thrust troops upon the foe at any point with almost incredible speed, and food and munitions are within arm's reach."

## PRINCE JOACHIM WOUNDED

Prince Joachim, youngest son of Emperor William, was wounded during a battle with the Russians and taken to Berlin. On September 15 it was reported from Berlin that the wound was healing rapidly, despite the tearing effect of a shrapnel ball through the thigh. The empress and the surgeons were having considerable trouble in keeping the patient quiet in bed. He wanted to get on his feet again and insisted that he ought to be able to rejoin his command at the front in about a fortnight.

"The prince treats the wound as a trifle," said the Berlin dispatch. "He smilingly greeted an old palace servant whom

he had known since childhood with the remark: 'Am I not a lucky dog?' "

From an officer who was with Prince Joachim when he was wounded the following description of the incident was obtained:

"It was during the hottest part of the battle, shortly before the Russian resistance was broken, that the prince, who was with the staff as information officer, was dispatched to the firing line to learn how the situation stood. He rode off with Adjutant Captain von Tahlzahn and had to traverse the distance, almost a mile, under a heavy hail of shell and occasional volleys.

"As the Russian artillery was well served and knew all the ranges from previous measurements, the ride was not a particularly pleasant one, but he came through safely and stood talking with the officers when a shrapnel burst in their vicinity. The prince and the adjutant were both hit, the latter receiving contusions on the leg, but the shot not penetrating.

"To stop and whip out an emergency bandage which the prince, like every officer and private, carries sewed inside the blouse, and bind it around the thigh to check the bleeding was the work of but a moment. It was a long and dangerous task, however, to get him back to the first bandaging station, about a mile to the rear, under fire and from there he was transported to the advanced hospital at Allenstein, where he remained until he was able to travel.

"Prince Joachim, who was already recommended for the Iron Cross for bravery before Namur, received the decoration shortly before he was wounded. The prince, who has many friends in America, conveyed through his adjutant his thanks for assurances of American sympathy and interest."

EX-EMPRESS DEVOTED TO FRANCE

The aged ex-Empress Eugenie of France, widow of Napoleon III, has been living for many years in retirement in the county of Hampshire, England. She was recently visited by Lord Portsmouth, an old friend, who found the illustrious lady full of courage and devotion to the French cause in the



present war. In explaining her failure to treat her guest as she would have desired, the empress said:

"I cannot give you dinner because most of the men of my kitchen have gone to war."

#### A "BATTLESHIP ON WHEELS"

Just before the war France added to its equipment the most modern of fighting devices. It is a train of armored cars with rapid-fire guns, conning towers and fighting tops. As a death-dealing war apparatus it is the most unique of anything used by any of the nations. This "battleship" on wheels consists of an armored locomotive, two rapid-fire gun carriages and two armored cars for transporting troops. The rapid-fire guns are mounted in such manner that they can be swung and directed to any point of the compass. Rising from the car behind the locomotive, is a conning tower from which an officer takes observations and directs the fire of the rapid-fire guns. Rails running on top of the cars permit troops to fire from the roof of the cars. For opening railway communications this "battleship on wheels" is unexcelled.

#### GAVE HIM A FORK TO MATCH

The scene is a village on the outskirts of Muelhausen, in Alsace. A lieutenant of German scouts dashes up to the door of the only inn in the village, posts men at the doorway and entering, seats himself at a table.

He draws his saber and places it on the table at his side and orders food in menacing tones.

The village waiter is equal to the occasion. He goes to the stables and fetches a pitchfork and places it at the other side of the visitor.

"Stop! What does this mean?" roared the lieutenant, furiously.

"Why," said the waiter, innocently, pointing to the saber, "I thought that was your knife, so I brought you a fork to match."

#### DECORATED ON THE BATTLEFIELD

On a train loaded with wounded which passed through Limoges, September 11, was a young French officer, Albert Palaphy, whose unusual bravery on the field of battle won for him the Legion of Honor.

As a corporal of the Tenth Dragoons at the beginning of the war, Palaphy took part in the violent combat with the Germans west of Paris. In the thick of the battle the cavalryman, finding his colonel wounded and helpless, rushed to his aid.

Palaphy hoisted the injured man upon his shoulders, and under a rain of machine gun bullets carried him safely to the French lines. That same day Palaphy was promoted to be a sergeant.

Shortly afterward, although wounded, he distinguished himself in another affair, leading a charge of his squad against the Baden guard, whose standard he himself captured.

Wounded by a ball which had plowed through the lower part of his stomach and covered with lance thrusts, he was removed from the battlefield during the night, and learned he had been promoted to be a sublieutenant and nominated chevalier in the Legion of Honor.

This incident of decorating a soldier on the battlefield recalls Napoleonic times.

“AFTER YOU,” SAID THE FRENCHMAN

Lieutenant de Lupel of the French army is said to have endeared himself to his command by a most unusual exhibition of what they are pleased to term “old-fashioned French gallantry.”

Accompanied by a few men, Lieutenant de Lupel succeeded in surrounding a German detachment occupying the station at Mezières. The lieutenant, on searching the premises, came upon the German officer hiding behind a stack of coal. Both men leveled their guns, and for a moment faced each other.

“After you,” finally said the Frenchman courteously.

The German fired and missed and Lieutenant de Lupel killed his man.

The French soldiers cheered their leader, and he has been praised everywhere for his action.

A “WALKING WOOD” AT CRECY

A correspondent describes a “walking wood” at Crecy. The French and British cut down trees and armed themselves with the branches. Line after line of infantry, each man

bearing a branch, then moved forward unobserved toward the enemy.

Behind them, amid the lopped tree trunks, the artillerymen fixed themselves and placed thirteen-pounders to cover the moving wood.

The attack, which followed, won success. It almost went wrong, however, for the French cavalry, which was following, made a detour to pass the wood and dashed into view near the ammunition reserves of the Allies.

German shells began falling thereabouts, but British soldiers went up the hills and pulled the boxes of ammunition out of the way of the German shells. Ammunition and men came through unscathed. By evening the Germans had been cleared from the Marne district.

#### CHAPLAIN CAPTURES AUSTRIAN TROOPERS

The Bourse Gazette relates the story of a Russian regimental chaplain who, single-handed, captured twenty-six Austrian troopers. He was strolling on the steppes outside of Lemberg, when suddenly he was confronted by a patrol of twenty-six men, who tried to force him to tell the details of the position of the Russian troops.

While talking to the men, the priest found that they were all Slavs, whereupon he delivered an impassioned address, dwelling on the sin of shedding the blood of their Slav brethren.

At the end of the address, the story concludes, the troopers with bent heads followed the priest into the Russian camp.

#### A BRITISH CAVALRY CHARGE

Here is a picturesque story of a British cavalry charge at Thuin, a town in Belgium near Charleroi, and the subsequent retreat to Compiègne:

"On Monday morning, August 24, after chafing at the long delay, the 2nd British Cavalry Brigade let loose at the enemy's guns. The 9th Lancers went into action singing and shouting like schoolboys.

"For a time all seemed well; few saddles were emptied, and the leaders had charged almost within reach of the enemy's guns when suddenly the Germans opened a mur-

derous fire from at least twenty concealed machine guns at a range of 150 yards.

"The result was shattering, and the Lancers caught the full force of the storm. Vicomte Vauvineux, a French cavalry officer who rode with the brigade as interpreter, was killed instantly. Captain Letourey, who was the French master of a school in Devon, was riding by the side of Vauvineux, and had a narrow escape, as his horse was shot from under him. Other officers also fell.

"While the bulk of the brigade swerved to the right the others held on and rode full tilt into wire entanglements buried in the grass thirty yards in front of the machine guns, and were made prisoners. Three regiments of the best cavalry in the British went into the charge, and suffered severely. The 18th Hussars and the 4th Dragoons also suffered, but not to the same extent as the others.

"A happy feature of the charge was the gallant conduct of Captain Grenfell, who, though twice wounded, called for volunteers and saved the guns. It is said that he has been recommended for the Victoria Cross.

"After this terrible ordeal the British brigade was harassed for fourteen days of retreat, the enemy giving them rest neither day nor night. At 2 o'clock each morning they were roused by artillery fire, and every day they fought a retiring action, pursued relentlessly by the guns.

"It was a wonderful retreat. Daily the cavalry begged to be allowed to go for the enemy in force to recover lost ground, but only once were they permitted to taste that joy, at the village of Lassigny, which they passed and repassed three times.

"The Germans made repeated efforts, which were always foiled, to capture the retreating transport. It had, however, many narrow escapes. At one point it escaped by a furious gallop which enabled the wagons to cross a bridge less than an hour ahead of the enemy. The engineers had mined the bridge and were waiting to blow it up. They sent a hurry-up call to the transport, and the latter responded with alacrity. The bridge was blown up just in time to separate the two forces.



"At Compiègne the brigade for the first time saw and welcomed their French brothers-in-arms."

#### BOY SCOUT HERO OF THE WAR

One of the popular heroes of Belgium is Boy Scout Leyssen, who has been decorated by King Albert for his valor and devotion to his country.

This young man, who was born at Liège, is described as of almost uncanny sharpness, with senses and perceptions as keen as an Indian. He was able to find his way through the woods and pass the German sentinels with unerring accuracy.

Leyssen made his way through the German lines from Antwerp for the tenth time on Sunday, September 6, carrying dispatches to secret representatives of the Belgian government in Brussels. He discovered and denounced eleven German spies in Belgium, and performed a variety of other services, and all without impairing his boyish simplicity.

#### KAISER ASKS FOR PRAYERS

After the first three weeks of war, Emperor William requested the supreme council of the Evangelical Church throughout the German empire to include the following prayer in the liturgy at all public services during the war:

"Almighty and most merciful God, God of the armies, we beseech Thee in humility for Thy almighty aid for German Fatherland. Bless our forces of war; lead us to victory and give us grace that we may show ourselves to be Christians toward our enemies as well. Let us soon arrive at a peace which will everlastingly safeguard our free and independent Germany."

#### SPIRIT OF FRENCH WOMEN

When sympathy was expressed in Paris for a poor woman, mother of nine sons, eight of whom were at the front, she replied: "I need no consolation. I have never forgotten that I was flogged by Prussians in 1870. I have urged my sons to avenge me and they will."

As one train of soldiers for the front moved out of a Paris railway station two girls who had bravely kissed farewell to a departing man turned away, and one began to cry, but the other said: "Keep up a little longer, he can still see us."

Another carried a baby, and as her husband leaned out of the window and the train started she threw it into his arms, crying: "Leave it with the station master at the next station, and I will fetch it; you must have it for another few minutes."

A Paris painter, called for military duty, was obliged to leave his wife and four children almost destitute. When he communicated with his wife on the subject she replied: "Do your duty without worrying about us. The city, state and our associations will look after us women and children." In her letter, the wife enclosed a money order for \$1 out of \$1.20, the total amount of money which she possessed.

#### KILLS MANY WITH ARMORED CAR

Lieutenant Henkart, attached to the general staff of the Belgian Army, perfected a monitor armored motor car which was successfully used by the Belgians.

During the war the officer engaged in reconnoitering in one of his armored cars. He had several encounters with Uhlans, of whom he killed a considerable number, virtually single-handed. His only assistants in his scouting trips were a chauffeur, an engineer and a sharpshooter.

On one occasion the party killed five Uhlans. Two days later it killed seven and on another occasion near Waterloo, the auto ran into a force of 500 Germans and escaped after killing twenty-five with a rapid-fire gun, which was mounted on the motor car.

#### A GERMAN RUSE THAT FAILED

A Belgian diplomat in Paris related an incident he observed at Charleroi. He said:

"Twenty Death's Head Hussars entered the town at 7 o'clock in the morning and rode quickly down the street, saluting and calling out 'Good-day' to those they met, saying, 'We are friends of the people.'

"Mistaking them for English cavalymen, the people cried 'Long live England!' The Belgian soldiers themselves were deceived until an officer at a window, realizing their mistake, ran to the street and gave the alarm. The Belgian soldiers rushed quickly to arms and opened fire on the fleeing Germans, of whom several were killed."

## DIED WRITING TO HIS WIFE

Here is a story of a heroic death on the battlefield, told simply in a letter found in the cold hands of a French soldier who had just finished writing it when the end came. "I am awaiting help which does not come," the letter ran. "I pray God to take me, for I suffer atrociously. Adieu, my wife and dear children. Adieu, all my family, whom I so loved. I request that whoever finds me will send this letter to Paris to my wife, with the pocketbook which is in my coat pocket. Gathering my last strength I write this, lying prostrate under the shell fire. Both my legs are broken. My last thoughts are for my children and for thee, my cherished wife and companion of my life, my beloved wife. Vive la France!"

## IN THE PARIS MILITARY HOSPITAL

A visitor to the military hospital within the intrenched camp of Paris, just outside the city walls, said on September 18:

"Men of all ranks are there, from the simple private to a general of division. There is no sign of discouragement or sadness on the pale faces, which light up with the thought of returning to battle.

"I saw hundreds of men lying on the beds in the wards with varieties of wounds, no two being identical. This Turco—or African soldier—suffered from a torn tongue, cut by a bullet, which traversed his cheek. Another had lost three fingers of his left hand. A bullet entered the temple of this infantryman and fell into his mouth, where by some curious reaction he swallowed it.

"Many of the patients are suffering from mere flesh wounds. One poor fellow whose eye was put out by a bullet said: "That's nothing. It is only my left eye and I aim with my right. I need the lives of just three Germans to pay for it."

## SMOKE AS WOUNDS ARE TREATED

"The Turcos, though terrible hand-to-hand fighters, are hard to care for. They have great fear of pain and it is difficult to bandage their wounds. The doctors give them

cigarettes, which they smoke with dignity as if performing a ritual.

"All the African soldiers were wrathful at a German officer lying in a neighboring room. They muttered in a sinister fashion, 'To-morrow!' and put two hands to the neck. I understood this to mean that they would strangle him to-morrow. Much vigilance is required to keep the officer out of their reach.

"One Turco killed two Prussians with his bayonet and two with the stock of the gun in a single fight. His body is covered with the scars of years of fighting in the service of France. When asked if he liked France he replied: 'France good country, good leaders, good doctors.' He seemed to mind his wound less than the lack of cigarettes."

#### SPIRIT OF BELGIAN SOLDIERS

Writing from Antwerp on September 1, William G. Shepherd, United Press staff correspondent, illustrated the spirit of the soldiery of Belgium by the following story:

"The little Belgian soldier who climbed into the compartment with me was dead tired; he trailed his rifle behind him, threw himself into the seat and fell sound asleep. He was ready to talk when he awoke an hour later.

"'Yes, I was up all night with German prisoners,' he said. 'It was a bad job, there were only sixteen of us to handle 200 Germans. We had four box cars and we put twenty-five prisoners in one end of the car and twenty-five in the other, and the four of us with rifles sat guard by the car door.

"'We rode five hours that way and I expected every minute that the whole fifty Germans in the car would jump on us four and kill us. Four to fifty; that's heavy odds. But we had to do it. You see there aren't enough soldiers in Belgium to do all the work, so we have to make out the best we can.'

"That's the plucky little Belgian soldier, all over.

"In the first place, he's different from most soldiers, because he is willing to fight when he knows he's going to lose.

"'We have to make out the best we can,' is his motto.

"In the second place, he's a common-sense little fellow. Even while he's fighting, he's doing it coolly, and there is



no blind hatred in his heart that causes him to waste any effort. He gets down to the why and wherefore of things.

" 'I really felt sorry for those German prisoners,' said a comrade of the first soldier. 'They were all decent fellows. They told me their officers had fooled them. They said the officers gave them French money on the German frontier and then yelled to them, "On into France!" They went on three days and got to Liège before they knew they were in Belgium instead of France.

" 'We didn't want to hurt Belgium,' they told us, 'because we're from Alsace-Lorraine ourselves.'

" 'You see,' continued the logical little Belgian, 'it wasn't their fault, so we couldn't be mad at them.'

"That is the Belgian idea—cool logic.

" 'Why did you fight the Germans?' I asked a high government official.

" 'Because civilization can't exist without treaties, and it is the duty that a nation owes to civilization to fight to the death when written treaties are broken,' was the reply.

" 'It must be a rule among nations that to break a treaty means to fight. The Germans broke the neutrality treaty with Belgium and we had to fight.'

" 'But did you expect to whip the Germans?'

" 'How could we? We knew that hordes of Germans would follow the first comers, but we had no right to worry about who would be whipped; all we had to do was to fight, and we've done it the best we could.'

" 'It has been a cool-headed logical matter with the Belgians from the start. Treaties are made with ink; they're broken with blood, and just as naturally and coolly as the Belgian diplomats used ink in signing the treaties with Germany so the Belgian soldiers have used their blood in trying to maintain the agreements.'

#### RIFLES USED BY NATIONS OF WAR

In the present war Germany uses a Mauser rifle, with a bullet of 8 millimeters caliber, steel and copper coated. Great Britain's missile is the Lee-Enfield, caliber 7.7 mm., the coating being cupro-nickel.

The French weapon is the Lebel rifle, of 8 mm. caliber, with bullets coated with nickel. Russia uses Mossin-Nagant

rifles, 7.62 mm., with bullets cupro-nickel coated. Austria's chief small arm is the Mannlicher, caliber 8 mm., with a steel sheet over the tip.

Hitting a man beyond 350 yards, the wounds inflicted by all these bullets are clean cut. They frequently pass through bone tissue without splintering.

When meeting an artery the bullet seems to push it to one side and goes around without cutting the blood channel.

Amputations are very rare compared with wars of more than fifty years ago. A bullet wound through a joint, such as the knee or the elbow, then necessitated the amputation of the limb. Now such a wound is easily opened and dressed.

Even Russia, which made a sad sanitary showing in the war with Japan, now has learned her lesson and has efficient surgical arrangements.

All the nations use vaccine to combat typhoid, the scourge which once decimated camps, and killed 1,600 in the Spanish-American war.

#### GERMAN UHLANS AS SCOUTS

Concerning the German Uhlans, of whom so much has been heard in the European war, Luigi Barzini, a widely known Italian war correspondent, said:

"The swarms of cavalry which the Germans send out ahead of their advance are to be found everywhere—on any highway, on any path. It is their business to see as much as possible. They show themselves everywhere and they ride until they are fired upon, keeping this up until they have located the enemy.

"Theirs is the task of riding into death. The entire front of the enemy is established by them, and many of them are killed—that is a certainty they face. Now and then, however, one of them manages to escape to bring the information himself, which otherwise is obtained by officers in their rear making observation.

"At every bush, every heap of earth, the Uhlan must say to himself: 'Here I will meet an enemy in hiding.' He knows that he cannot defend himself against a fire that may open on him from all sides. Everywhere there is danger for the Uhlan—hidden danger.

"Nevertheless he keeps on riding, calmly and undisturbed, in keeping with German discipline."

#### FOUGHT WITHOUT SHOES

The Paris *Matin* relates that on the arrival of a train bringing wounded Senegalese riflemen nearly all were found smoking furiously from long porcelain pipes taken from the enemy and seemingly indifferent to their wounds. One gayly told of the daring capture of a machine gun by eighteen of his comrades. The gun, he said, was brought up by a detachment of German dragoons and the Senegalese bravely charged and captured everything.

Though their arms and bodies were hacked by sabers, the Senegalese complained of nothing but the obligation to fight with shoes on. Before going into battle at Charleroi they slyly rid themselves of these impediments and came back shod in German footwear to avoid punishment for losing equipment.

#### KILLED A GENERAL

The shot which resulted in the death of Prince von Buelow, one of the German generals, was fired by a Belgian private named Rosseau, who was decorated by King Albert for his conduct in the battle of Haelen.

Rosseau was lying badly wounded among his dead comrades when he saw a German officer standing beside his horse and studying a map. Picking up a rifle beside a dead German, Rosseau fired at this officer and wounded him. The officer proved to be Prince von Buelow. Exchanging his hat for the German general's helmet and taking the general's horse, Rosseau made his way to the Belgian lines and was placed in a hospital at Ghent.

#### HOW A GERMAN PRINCE DIED

The Hanover *Courier* gave the following account by an eyewitness of the death of Prince Frederick William of Lippe at Liege:

"On all sides our detachment was surrounded by Belgian troops, who were gradually closing in for purposes of exterminating us. At the prince's command we formed a circle

eight deep, maintaining a stubborn defense. At length a strong division arrived to support us. The prince raised himself from a kneeling position and turned to the standard bearer, who lay prone beside him, covering the standard with his body.

“‘Raise the standard,’ commanded the prince, ‘so that we may be recognized by our friends.’”

“The standard bearer raised the flag, waving it to and fro. This action immediately brought upon the standard bearer and the prince a violent fusillade. The standard was shot away and at the same moment the prince was struck in the chest and expired instantly.”

#### RAILWAY STATION A SHAMBLES

Mrs. Herman H. Harjes, wife of the Paris banker, who, with other American women, was deeply interested in relief work, visited the North railroad station at Paris on September 1 and was shocked by the sights she saw among the Belgian refugees.

“The station,” said Mrs. Harjes, “presented the aspect of a shambles. It was the saddest sight I ever saw. It is impossible to believe the tortures and cruelties the poor unfortunates had undergone.

“I saw many boys with both their hands cut off so that it was impossible for them to carry guns. Everywhere was filth and utter desolation. The helpless little babies, lying on the cold, wet cement floor and crying for proper nourishment, were enough to bring hot tears to any mother’s eyes.

“Mothers were vainly besieging the authorities, begging for milk or soup. A mother with twelve children said:

“‘What is to become of us? It seems impossible to suffer more. I saw my husband bound to a lamppost. He was gagged and being tortured by bayonets. When I tried to intercede in his behalf, I was knocked senseless with a rifle. I never saw him again.’”

#### BURIED ON THE FIELD

The bodies of the dead in this war were not, with occasional exceptions, returned to their relatives, but were buried on the field and where numbers required it, in common graves.



Valuables, papers and mementoes were taken from the bodies and made up in little packets to be sent to the relatives, and the dead soldiers, each wrapped in his canvas shelter tent, as shroud, were laid, friend and foe, side by side in long trenches in the ground for which they had contested.

#### GERMAN LISTS OF THE DEAD

In the German official Gazette daily lists of the dead, wounded and missing were published. The names marched by in long columns of the Gazette, arrayed with military precision by regiments and companies, batteries or squadrons—the first the infantry and then cavalry, artillery and train.

The company lists were headed usually by the names of the officers, killed or wounded; then came the casualties from the enlisted strength—first the dead, then the wounded and the missing. A feature of the early lists was the large proportion of this last class, reports from some units running monotonously, name after name, “missing” or “wounded and missing”—in mute testimony of scouting patrols which did not return, or of regiments compelled to retire and leave behind them dead, wounded and prisoners, or sometimes of men wandering so far from their comrades in the confusion of battle that they could not find and rejoin their companies for days.

#### THE LANCE AS A WEAPON

An attempt was made in lists of the German wounded to give the nature and location of the wound. These were principally from rifle or shrapnel fire. A scanty few in the cavalry were labeled “lance thrust,” indicating that the favorite weapon of the European cavalry has not done the damage expected of it, although the lance came more into play in the later engagements between the Russian and German cavalry divisions.

#### “FATHERLAND OR DEATH!”

Writing from Aix-la-Chapelle, Germany, on August 29th, Karl H. von Wiegand, who is considered by the Allies a German mouthpiece, said:

“America has not the faintest realization of the terrible carnage going on in Europe. She cannot realize the deter-

mination of Germany, all Germany—men, women and children—in this war. The German Empire is like one man. And that man's motto is 'Vaterland oder Tod!' (Fatherland or Death!)

"English news sources are reported here as telling of the masterly retreat of the allies. Here in the German field headquarters, where every move on the great chess-board of Belgium and France is analyzed, the war to date is referred to as the greatest offensive movement in the history of modern warfare."

#### GERMAN PLANS WELL LAID

The German offensive plans were well laid. No army that ever took the field was ever so mobile. Thousands of army autos have been in use. Each regiment had its supply. The highways were mapped in advance. There was not a cross-road that was not known. Even the trifling brooks had been located. Nothing had been left to chance and the advance guard was accompanied by enormous automobiles filled with corps of sappers who carried bridge and road building materials.

#### THE TERRIBLE KRUPP GUNS

How well the German plans worked was shown when Namur, which, it was boasted, would resist for months, fell in two days. The terrible work of the great Krupp weapons, whose existence had been kept secret, is hard to realize. One shot from one of these guns went through what was considered an impregnable wall of concrete and armored steel at Namur, exploded and killed 150 men.

And aside from the effectiveness of these terrible weapons, Belgian prisoners who were in the Namur forts declare their fire absolutely shattered the nerves of the defenders, whose guns had not sufficient range to reach them.

#### GERMANS DEFY DEATH

"It makes you sick to see the way that the Germans literally walk into the very mouth of the machine guns and cannon spouting short-fused shrapnel that mow down their lines and tear great gaps in them," said a Belgian major who was

badly wounded. "Nothing seems to stop them. It is like an inhuman machine and it takes the very nerve out of you to watch it."

#### SPIRIT OF GERMAN WOMEN

"The women of Germany are facing the situation with heroic calmness," said Eleanor Painter, an American opera singer on landing in New York September 7th, direct from Berlin, where she had spent the last four years. "It is all for the Fatherland. The spirit of the people is wonderful. If the men are swept away in the maelstrom of war, the women will continue to fight. They are prepared now to do so.

"There are few tears in Berlin. Of course there is sorrow, deep sorrow. But the German women and the few men still left in the capital realize that the national life itself is at stake and accept the inevitable losses of a successful military occupation. There is a grim dignity everywhere. There are no false ideas as to the enormity of the struggle for existence. A great many Germans, in fact, realizing that it is nearly the whole world against Germany, do not believe that the Fatherland can survive. But they are determined that while there is a living German so long will Germany fight.

#### FATHER AND TEN SONS ENLIST

"A German father with his ten sons enlisted. General von Haessler, more than the allotted three-score years and ten, veteran of two wars, offered his sword. Boys who volunteered and who were not needed at the time wept when the recruiting officers sent them back home, telling them their time would come.

"The German women fight their own battles in keeping back tears and praying for the success of the German arms. Hundreds of titled women are at the front with the Red Cross, sacrificing everything to aid their country. Baroness von Ziegler and her daughter wrote from Wiesbaden that they were en route to the front and were ready to fight if need be.

"Even the stupendous losses which the army is incurring cannot dim the love of the Fatherland nor the desire of the Germans, as a whole nation, to fight on. I speak of vast

losses. An officer with whom I talked while en route from Berlin to Rotterdam, told me of his own experience. He was one of 2,000 men on the eastern frontier. They saw a detachment of Russians ahead. The German forces went into battle singing and confident, although the Russian columns numbered 12,000. Of that German force of 2,000 just fifty survived. None surrendered."

FEARFUL STATE OF BATTLEFIELDS

Dead men and horses, heaped up by thousands, lay putrefying on the battlefields of the Aisne, Colonel Webb C. Hayes, U. S. A., son of former President Hayes, declared in Washington on Oct. 7, on his return from observing the war and its battlefields. He was the bearer of a personal message to President Wilson from the acting burgomaster of Louvain.

"When I left Havre on Sept. 27," he said, "the Allies were fearful that they would not be able to penetrate to the German line through the mass of putrefying men and horses on the battlefields, which unfortunately the combatants seem not to heed about burying. I don't see how they could pass through these fields. The stench was horrible, and the idea of climbing over the bodies must be revolting even to brave soldiers."

Col. Hayes had been on the firing line; he had visited the sacked city of Louvain as the guest of Germans in an armored car; he had been in Aix-la-Chapelle, at the German base, and had seen some of the fighting in the historic Aisne struggle.

"It is a sausage grinder," he declared.

"On one side are the Allies, apparently willing to sacrifice their last man in defense of France; on the other are the Germans, seemingly prodigal of their millions of men and money and throwing man after man into the war."

"What about the alleged atrocities in Belgium?" he was asked.

"Well, war is hell; that's about the only answer I can give you. The real tragic feature of the whole war is Belgium. Its people are wonderful folk—clean, decent, respectable. What this nation should do is to concentrate its efforts to aid the women and children of Belgium. Help for hospitals is not so much needed, but the fate of these people is really pathetic."



Asked for a brief description of what he saw along the battle line, Col. Hayes declared:

"The battle front these days is far different from what it used to be. There are few men to be seen, and practically no guns. All are concealed. Shrapnel flies through the air and bursts. That is the scene most of the time. In the hand-to-hand fighting bayonets are used much by the French, while the Turcos use knives."

"Shall you go back?" Col. Hayes was asked.

"Does anyone wish to visit a slaughterhouse a second time?" he replied.

#### PRINCES WOUNDED BY THE FOE

Prince August William, the fourth son of Emperor William, was shot in the left arm during the battle of the Marne and Emperor William bestowed the Iron Cross of the first class on him.

Prince Eitel, the Kaiser's second son, was wounded during the battle of the Aisne. Up to October 7 four of Emperor William's sons had been placed temporarily *hors de combat*.

Prince George of Servia, while leading his battalion against the Austrians September 18, was hit by a ball which entered near the spinal column and came out at the right shoulder. The wound was said not to be dangerous.

#### HOW THE SCOTSMEN FOUGHT

At St. Quentin, France, the Highland infantrymen burst into the thick of the Germans, holding on to the stirrups of the Scots Greys as the horsemen galloped, and attacked hand to hand. The Germans were taken aback at the sudden and totally unexpected double irruption, and broke up before the Scottish onslaught, suffering severe losses alike from the swords of the cavalry and from the Highlanders' bayonets. The scene of this charge is depicted in one of our illustrations.

#### TWO TRAGIC INCIDENTS

During the Russian retreat through the Mazur lake district, in East Prussia, a Russian battery was surrounded on three sides by the enemy's quick firers. The infantry was on the other side of the lake, and the Russian ammunition was

exhausted. In order to avoid capture, the commander ordered the battery to gallop over the declivity into the lake. His order was obeyed and he himself was among the drowned.

During an assault on the fortress of Ossowetz, a German column got into a bog. The Russians shelled the bog and the single road crossing it. The Germans, in trying to extricate themselves, sank deeper into the mire, and hundreds were killed or wounded. Of the whole column, about forty survived.

IN THE BRUSSELS HOSPITALS

A peculiar incident of the war is noted by a doctor writing in the New York American, who went through several of the great Brussels hospitals and noted the condition of the wounded Belgian soldiers. These soldiers carried on the defense of their country with a valor which the fighting men of any nation might admire and envy. The writer remarks:

“Two facts struck me very forcibly. The first was the very large number of Belgian soldiers wounded only in the legs, and, secondly, many of the soldiers seem to have collapsed through sheer exhaustion.

“In peace times one sees and hears little or nothing of extreme exhaustion, because in times of peace the almost superphysical is not demanded. War brings new conditions.

“These Belgian soldiers were at work and on the march during stupendous days, practically without a moment’s respite. They went, literally, until they dropped. As a medical man, their condition interested me enormously.

“What force of will to fight and struggle until the last gasp! The exhaustion one sees often in heat strokes and in hot climates is commonplace, but this type of exhaustion is, by itself, the final triumph of brave spirits.

“The victims presented a very alarming appearance when first I met them. They seemed almost dead; limp, pale, and cold. Recovery usually is not protracted; in every case the men knocked out in this manner expressed a fervent desire to return at once to the ranks.

## 250 *STORIES FROM THE BATTLEFIELD*

### GERMAN WARNING TO FRENCH TOWNS

Following is the text of a proclamation published in French and posted in all towns occupied by the Germans:

"All the authorities and the municipality are informed that every peaceful inhabitant can follow his regular occupation in full security. Private property will be absolutely respected and provisions paid for.

"If the population dare under any form whatever to take part in hostilities the severest punishment will be inflicted on the refractory.

"The people must give up their arms. Every armed individual will be put to death. Whoever cuts telegraph wires, destroys railway bridges or roads or commits any act in detriment to the Germans will be shot.

"Towns and villages whose inhabitants take part in the combat or who fire upon us from ambush will be burned down and the guilty shot at once. The civil authorities will be held responsible.

(Signed) VON MOLTKE."

### MOTORS IN THE RUSSIAN ARMY

The Russian army has always placed much dependence on its horses, having a vast number, but it has realized the importance of the motor vehicle in warfare and already it is much better equipped than other nations suppose. An illustration of the fact is the following, related by a Red Cross man who accompanied the Russian forces into eastern Germany:

"I was walking beside one of our carts. We could hear heavy artillery fire as we went, when shouts from our people behind warned us to get off the road. We pulled onto the grass as there came thundering past, bumping from one rough place to another on the poor road and going at a sickening pace, a string of huge motor cars crowded with infantrymen. They

looked like vehicles of the army establishment, all apparently alike in size and pattern and each carrying about thirty men.

"They were traveling like no motor wagon that I ever saw—certainly at not less than forty miles an hour. The procession seemed endless. I didn't count them, but there were not less than a hundred, and perhaps a good many more. That was General Rennenkampf reinforcing his threatened flank."

JENNIE DUFAU'S NARROW ESCAPE

Jennie Dufau, the American opera singer, had one of the most thrilling experiences told by a refugee from the war zone.

Miss Dufau was visiting in Saulxures, Province of Alsace, when the war started, and was in the hitherto peaceful valley of that region until August 24. She was with her sister, Elizabeth, and her two brothers, Paul and Daniel.

On August 6 the German artillery occupied the heights on one side of the valley, overlooking the town. On the 12th the Germans occupied the town itself. At that time there were but two French regiments near Saulxures.

The French, however, opened fire on the Germans, and Miss Dufau with her father and sister at once retreated to the cellar in an effort to escape the flying shells.

"Then began a tremendous artillery duel that lasted for days," she said. "All this time we were living in the cellar, where we were caring for ten wounded French officers. I often went out over the battlefield when the fire slackened and did what I could for the wounded and dying.

"My brothers Paul and Daniel were drafted into the German army. They had sworn an oath not to fire a shot at a Frenchman, and their greatest hope was that they would be captured and permitted to put on the French uniform.

"Between August 12 and 24 the artillery duel raged, and finally the opposing armies came to a hand-to-hand fight with the bayonet. First it was the Germans who occupied the town, then the French. The Germans finally came to our house and accused my sister, my father, and myself of being spies because they found a telephone there. The soldiers lined us up against the wall to shoot us, but we fell on our knees and begged them to spare the life of our father. They gave no heed till a German colonel came along and, after questioning us, ordered that we be set free."



## 252 *STORIES FROM THE BATTLEFIELD*

### VALLEY OF DEATH ON THE AISNE

A non-combatant who succeeded in getting close to the firing lines on the Aisne when the great battle had raged continuously for five weeks, wrote as follows on October 21st of the horrors he had witnessed:

"Between the lines of battle there is a narrow strip, varying from seventy yards to a quarter of a mile, which is a neutral valley of death. Neither side is able to cross that strip without being crumpled by fire against which no body of men can stand. The Germans have attempted to break through the British and French forces hundreds of times but have been compelled to withdraw, and always with severe losses.

"A number of small towns are distributed in this narrow strip, the most important being Craonne. The Germans and French have reoccupied it six times and each in turn has been driven out. The streets of Craonne are littered with the dead of both armies. The houses, nearly all of which have been demolished by exploding shells, are also full of bodies of men who crawled into them to get out of the withering fire and have there died. Many of these men died of sheer exhaustion and starvation while the battle raged day after day.

"Both armies have apparently abandoned the struggle to hold Craonne permanently, and it is now literally a city of the dead.

"It is a typical French village of ancient stone structures; the tiny houses all have, or had, gables and tiled roofs. These have mostly been broken by shell fire. Under the shelter of its buildings both the Germans and French have been able at times to rescue their wounded.

"This is more than can be said of the strip of death between the battle lines. There the wounded lie and the dead go unburied, while the opposing forces direct their merciless fire a few feet above the field of suffering and carnage. I did not know until I looked upon the horrors of Craonne that such conditions could exist in modern warfare.

"I thought that frequent truces would be negotiated to give the opposing armies an opportunity to collect their wounded and bury their dead. I had an idea that the Red

Cross had made war less terrible. The world thinks so yet, perhaps, but the conditions along the Aisne do not justify that belief. If a man is wounded in that strip between the lines he never gets back alive unless he is within a short distance of his own lines or is protected from the enemy's fire by the lay of the land.

"This protracted and momentous battle, which raged day and night for so many weeks, became a continuous nightmare to the men engaged in it, every one of whom knew that upon its issue rested one of the great deciding factors of the war."

BRITISH AID FOR FRENCH WOUNDED

The following paragraphs from a letter received October 15th by the author from an English lady interested in the suffrage movement, give some idea of the spirit in which the people of England met the emergency; and also indicate the frightful conditions attending the care of the wounded in France:

"London, October 7, 1914.—The world is a quite different place from what it was in July—dear, peaceful July! It seems years ago that we lived in a time of peace. It all still seems a nightmare over England and one feels that the morning must come when one will wake up and find it has all been a hideous dream, and that peace is the reality. But the facts grow sadder every day, as one realizes the frightful slaughter and waste of young lives. \* \* \*

"But now that we are in the midst of this horrible time, we can only stop all criticism of our Government, set our teeth, and try to help in every possible way. All suffrage work has stopped and all the hundred-and-one interests in societies of every kind are in abeyance as well. The offices of every kind of society are being used for refugees, Red Cross work, unemployment work, and to meet other needs of the moment.

"Every day of our time is taken up with helping to equip 'hospital units,' private bodies of doctors and nurses with equipment, to go to France and help the French Red Cross work among the French wounded. The situation in France at present is more horrible than one can imagine. Our English soldiers have medical and surgical help enough with them for first aid. Then they are sent back to England, and here

all our hospitals are ready and private houses everywhere have been given to the War Office for the wounded. But the battlefield is in France; many of the French doctors have been shot; the battle-line is 200 miles long, and the carnage is frightful.

"Last week we sent off one hospital unit, and a messenger came back from it yesterday to tell us awful facts—16,000 wounded in Limoges for one place, and equal numbers in several other little places south of Paris—just trains full of them—with so little ready for them in the way of doctors or nurses. One hears of doctors performing operations without chloroform, and the suffering of the poor fellows is awful."



"BUSINESS IS VERRA DULL THE NOO!"

—*The Sun* (Vancouver, B. C.).

## ESTIMATED LOSSES OF EUROPEAN FORCES IN THE FIELD

UP TO JUNE 1, 1915

	Killed	Wounded	Missing*	Total
Germany .....	400,000	1,000,000	300,000	1,700,000
Austria .....	300,000	900,000	350,000	1,550,000
Total .....	<u>700,000</u>	<u>1,900,000</u>	<u>650,000</u>	<u>3,250,000</u>
France .....	225,000	700,000	300,000	1,225,000
Russia .....	175,000	400,000	350,000	925,000
Great Britain...	90,000	135,000	55,000	280,000
Belgium .....	45,000	100,000	50,000	195,000
Servia .....	40,000	90,000	15,000	145,000
Montenegro ....	7,500	15,000	2,500	25,000
Turkey .....	20,000	45,000	5,000	70,000
Total .....	<u>602,500</u>	<u>1,485,000</u>	<u>777,500</u>	<u>2,865,000</u>
Grand total...	<u>1,302,500</u>	<u>3,385,000</u>	<u>1,427,500</u>	<u>6,115,000</u>

\* Including prisoners of war.

The figures given in the foregoing table of casualties for the first ten months of the war are compiled from the most reliable reports available at the time of going to press, and the total is believed to be a conservative estimate of the cost in human life.



## CHAPTER XV

### THE MYSTERY OF THE FLEETS

*Movements of British Battleships Veiled in Secrecy—German Dreadnoughts in North Sea and Baltic Ports—Activity of Smaller Craft—English Keep Trade Routes Open—Several Minor Battles at Sea.*

**S**HORTLY before war was declared a great review of the British navy was held at Spithead, on the English Channel, when several hundred vessels were gathered in mighty array for inspection by King George and the lords of the Admiralty. The salutes they fired had hardly ceased to reverberate along the shores of the Channel when the momentous struggle was on. It found the British fleet fully mobilized and ready for action. The ships had their magazines filled, their bunkers and oil tanks charged, their victualing completed, and last, but not least, their full crews aboard.

Then, without a moment's delay, they disappeared, under orders to proceed to stations in the North Sea, to cruise in the Channel, the Atlantic or the Mediterranean; to keep trade routes open for British and neutral ships and capture or destroy the ships of the enemy. Silently and swiftly they sailed, and for weeks the world knew little or nothing of their movements or whereabouts.

Mystery equally deep shrouded the German fleet. In all probability it lay under the guns of the coast cities and forts of Germany, but nothing definite was permitted to leak out. The test of the two great navies, the supreme test of dreadnoughts and superdreadnoughts, failed to materialize, and for weeks the people of Great Britain and Germany could only wonder what had become of their naval forces and why they did not come into contact with each other. A few minor engagements in the North Sea, in which light cruisers and

torpedo-boat destroyers were concerned, served only to deepen the mystery.

Only naval men and well-informed civilians realized that Germany was biding her time, waiting to choose her own hour for action, realizing the strength of the opposing force and determined not to risk her own ships until the opportune moment should arrive which would offer the best possible chances for success. And meanwhile the main British fleet lay in the North Sea, waiting for the enemy to appear.

After awhile letters began to come from the North Sea, telling of the life aboard the vessels lying in wait, scouting or patrolling the coasts. The ships were all stripped for action; all inflammable ornaments and fittings had been left behind or cast overboard; stripped and naked the fighting machines went to their task. All day long the men were ready at their guns, and during the night each gun crew slept around the weapon that it was their duty to serve, ready to repel any destroyers or submarines coming out of the surrounding darkness to attack them.

Vice-Admiral Sir John Jellicoe had assumed supreme command of the British home fleet on August 4, with the rank of admiral. His chief of staff was Rear Admiral Charles E. Madden. Rear Admiral Sir George Callaghan was in command of the North Sea fleet.

#### AN ADMIRALTY ANNOUNCEMENT

On Thursday, September 10, the secretary of the British Admiralty made the following announcement: "Yesterday and today strong and numerous squadrons and flotillas have made a complete sweep of the North Sea up to and into the Heligoland Bight. The German fleet made no attempt to interfere with our movements and no German ship of any kind was seen at sea."

That much patience had to be exercised by the seamen of the North Sea fleet is evidenced by a letter in which the writer said to his family, "If you want to get away from the excitement of war, you should be here with me." This situation, of course, might be changed at a moment's notice. The London Times said in September: "It is not to be wondered at if our seamen today envy a little the old-time sailors who did not have to compete with such things as mines, destroyers and

submarines. In the accounts of the old blockades we read how by means of music and dancing, and even theatrical entertainments, the monotonous nature of the work was counteracted, and the officers of the ships, including Nelson and other great commanders, welcomed these diversions for the prevention of the evils which might be bred by enforced idleness. It is a true saying that everything that stagnates corrupts. There is no possible chance of the crews of our modern vessels stagnating under the new conditions of war. Whether engaged in blockading in the big ships, scouting in the cruisers, or patrolling the coasts in the destroyers, the life is described as tremendously interesting and exciting. There has been no sense of monotony whatever. Indeed, the conditions are such that, were it not obligatory for portions of every crew to take rest, all of them would be continually on the alert. We may be certain that arrangements have been made for ensuring that the crews obtain periods of relaxation from the constant strain; but the only real change comes in the big ships when they have of necessity to refill their bunkers."

---

#### LOSS OF THE CRUISER AMPHION

The cruiser *Amphion* was the first British war vessel lost in the war. The survivors on landing at the North Sea port of Harwich, England, on August 10, stated that hardly had they left Harwich than they were ordered to clear the decks for action. They sighted the German mine-laying vessel *Koenigin Luise*, and, as it refused to stop even when a shot was fired across its bows, they gave chase.

The German ship fired and then the destroyers, accompanying the *Amphion*, surrounded and sank it after a brief combined bombardment.

The captain, it is said, was beside himself with fury. He had a revolver in his hand and threatened his men as they prepared to surrender to the rescuing ships. He flatly refused to give himself up and was taken by force.

When the smoke of a big ship was seen on the horizon the *Amphion* gave chase, firing a warning shot as it drew near the vessel, which at once made known its identity as the Harwich boat *St. Petersburg*, carrying Prince Lichnowsky, the German ambassador, to the Hook of Holland.

While returning to port came the tragedy of the *Amphion*. As it struck a sunken mine it gave two plunging jerks. Then came an explosion which ripped up its forepart, shot up its funnels like arrows from a bow, and lifted its heavy guns into the air. The falling material struck several of the boats of the flotilla and injured some of the men on board them.

The *Amphion*'s men were dreadfully burned and scalded and had marks on their faces and bodies which resembled splashes of acid.

The scene at Harwich was like that which follows a colliery explosion. Of the British seamen in the hospital thirteen were suffering from severe burns, five from less serious burns, two from the effects of lyddite fumes, and one each from concussion, severe injury, slight wounds, shock, and slight burns. A few wounded German sailors also lay in the hospital.

#### SINKING A GERMAN SUBMARINE

On August 12 there came from Edinburgh the story of an eyewitness of a naval battle in the North Sea on the previous Sunday between British cruisers and German submarines, in which the German submarine U-15 was sunk.

"The cruiser squadron on Sunday," the story ran, "suddenly became aware of the approach of the submarine flotilla. The enemy was submerged, only the periscopes showing above the surface of the water.

"The attitude of the British in the face of this attack was cool and the enemy was utterly misled when suddenly the cruiser *Birmingham*, steaming at full speed, fired the first shot. This shot was carefully aimed, not at the submerged body of a submarine, but at the thin line of the periscope.

"The gunnery was superbly accurate and shattered the periscope. Thereupon the submarine, now a blinded thing, rushed along under water in imminent danger of self-destruction from collision with the cruisers above.

"The sightless submarine was then forced to come to the surface, whereupon the *Birmingham*'s gunner fired the second shot of the fight. This shot struck at the base of the conning tower, ripping the whole of the upper structure clean and the U-15 sank like a stone.

"The remainder of the submarine flotilla fled."



## NAVAL BATTLE OFF HELIGOLAND

In the last week of August a naval engagement occurred off the island of Heligoland, in the North Sea. British war vessels sank five German ships, killing 900 men. A graphic description of the engagement was given by a young lieutenant who was on one of the British torpedo boat destroyers:

"I think the home papers are magnifying what really was but an affair of outposts. We destroyers went in and lured the enemy out and had lots of excitement. The big fellows then came up and afforded some excellent target practice, and we were very glad to see them come; but it was a massacre, not a fight.

"There was superb generalship and overwhelming forces on the spot, but there was really nothing for them to do except to shoot the enemy, even as father shoots pheasants.

"Have you ever noticed a dog rush in on a flock of sheep and scatter them? He goes for the nearest and barks and goes so much faster than the flock that it bunches up with its companions. The dog then barks at another and the sheep spread out fanwise, so in front of the dog there is a semicircle of sheep and behind him none.

"That was much what we did at 7 a. m. on August 28. The sheep were the German torpedo craft, which fell back on the limits of our range and tried to lure us within the fire of the Heligoland forts. But a cruiser then came out and engaged our *Arethusa* and they had a real heart-to-heart talk, while we looked on, and a few of us tried to shoot at the enemy, too, though it was beyond our distance.

"We were getting nearer Heligoland all the time. There was a thick mist and I expected every minute to find the forts on the island bombarding us, so the *Arethusa* presently drew off after landing at least one good shell on the enemy. The enemy gave every hit as good as he got there.

"We then reformed, but a strong destroyer belonging to the submarines got chased, and the *Arethusa* and *Fearless* went back to look after it. We presently heard a hot action astern, so the captain in command of the flotilla turned us around and we went back to help. But they had driven the

enemy off and on our arrival told us to 'form up' on the *Arethusa*.

## CRUISER FIRES ON SHIPS

"When we had partly formed and were very much bunched together, making a fine target, suddenly out of the mist arrived five or six shells from a point not 150 yards away. We gazed at whence they came and again five or six stabs of fire pierced the fog, and we made out a four-funneled German cruiser of the *Breslau* class.

"Those stabs were its guns going off. We waited fifteen seconds and the shots and noise of its guns arrived pretty well from fifty yards away. Its next salvo of shots went above us, and I ducked as they whirled overhead like a covey of fast partridges.

"You would suppose our captain had done this sort of thing all his life. He went full speed ahead at once, upon the first salvo, to string the bunch out and thus offer less target. The commodore from the *Arethusa* made a signal to us to attack with torpedoes. So we swung round at right angles and charged full speed at the enemy like a hussar attack.

"Our boat got away at the start magnificently and led the field, so all the enemy's firing was aimed at us for the next ten minutes, when we got so close that debris from their shells fell on board. Then we altered our course and so threw them out in their reckoning of our speed, and they had all their work to do over again.

"Humanly speaking, our captain by twisting and turning at psychological moments saved us. Actually, I feel that we were in God's keeping that day. After ten minutes we got near enough to fire our torpedo. Then we turned back to the *Arethusa*. Next our follower arrived just where we had been and fired its torpedo, and of course the enemy fired at it instead of at us. What a blessed relief!

"After the destroyers came the *Fearless*, and it stayed on the scene. Soon we found it was engaging a three-funneler, the *Mainz*, so off we started again, now for the *Mainz*, the situation being that the crippled *Arethusa* was too tubby to do anything but be defended by us, its children.

"Scarcely, however, had we started when, from out of

the mist and across our front, in furious pursuit came the first cruiser squadron of the town class, the Birmingham, and each unit a match for three like the Mainz, which was soon sunk. As we looked and reduced speed they opened fire, and the clear bang-bang of their guns was just like a cooling drink.

"To see a real big four-funneler spouting flame, which flame denoted shells starting, and those shells not at us but for us, was the most cheerful thing possible. Once we were in safety, I hated it. We had just been having our own imaginations stimulated on the subject of shells striking.

"Now, a few minutes later, to see another ship not three miles away, reduced to a piteous mass of unrecognizability, wreathed in black fumes from which flared out angry gusts of fire like Vesuvius in eruption, as an unending stream of hundred-pound shells burst on board it, just pointed the moral and showed us what might have been.

"The Mainz was immensely gallant. The last I saw of it it was absolutely wrecked. It was a fuming inferno. But it had one gun forward and one aft still spitting forth fury and defiance like a wild cat.

"Then we went west, while they went east. Just a bit later we heard the thunder of the enemy's guns for a space. Then fell silence, and we knew that was all.

#### A MARVELOUS RESCUE

"The most romantic, dramatic, and piquant episode that modern war can ever show came next. The Defender, having sunk an enemy, lowered a whaler to pick up its swimming survivors. Before the whaler got back, an enemy's cruiser came up and chased the Defender, which thus had to abandon its small boat.

"Imagine their feelings, alone in an open boat without food, twenty-five miles from the nearest land, and that land an enemy's fortress, with nothing but fog and foes around them, and then suddenly a swirl alongside, and up, if you please, hops His Britannic Majesty's submarine E-4, opens its conning tower, takes them all on board, shuts up again, dives and brings them home, 250 miles."

## THREE BRITISH CRUISERS SUNK

On Tuesday morning, September 22, the British cruisers Aboukir, Cressy and Hogue were torpedoed and sunk by a German submarine in the North Sea. Each of the vessels carried a crew of about 650 men, and the total of the death roll was about 1,400.

The three cruisers had for some time been patrolling the North Sea. Soon after 6 o'clock in the morning the Aboukir suddenly felt a shock on the port side. A dull explosion was heard and a column of water was thrown up mast high. The explosion wrecked the stokehold just forward of amidships and tore the bottom open.

Almost immediately the doomed cruiser began to settle. Except for the watch on deck, most of the crew were asleep, wearied by the constant vigil in bad weather, but in perfect order the officers and men rushed to quarters. The quick-firers were manned in the hope of a dying shot at the submarine, but there was not a glimpse of one.

Meanwhile the Aboukir's sister cruisers, more than a mile away, saw and heard the explosion and thought the Aboukir had struck a mine. They closed in and lowered boats. This sealed their own fate, for, while they were standing by to rescue survivors, first the Hogue and then the Cressy was torpedoed.

Only the Cressy appears to have seen the submarine in time to attempt to retaliate, and she fired a few shots before she keeled over, broken in two, and sank.

British naval officers by this time were beginning to wonder how long the German high seas fleet intended to remain under cover in the Kiel canal.

"Our only grievance," one said, "is that we have not had a shot at the Germans. Our only share of the war has been a few uncomfortable weeks of bad weather, mines and submarines."

A number of the survivors were taken to the Dutch port of Ymuiden, where they were interned as technical prisoners of war.

## THE GERMAN COMMANDER'S STORY

The German submarine which accomplished the hitherto unparalleled feat was the U-9, in command of Capt.-Lieut. Otto



Weddigen, whose interesting story was given to the public through the German Admiralty on October 6, as follows:

"I set out from a North Sea port on one of the arms of the Kiel canal and set my course in a southwesterly direction. The name of the port I cannot state officially, but it was not many days before the morning of September 22 when I fell in with my quarry.

"British torpedo-boats came within my reach, but I felt there was bigger game further on, so on I went. It was ten minutes after six in the morning of the 22nd when I caught sight of one of the big cruisers of the enemy.

"I was then eighteen sea miles northwesterly of the Hook of Holland. I had traveled considerably more than 200 miles from my base. I had been going ahead partially submerged, with about five feet of my periscope showing.

"Almost immediately I caught sight of the first cruiser and two others. I submerged completely and laid my course in order to bring up in center of the trio, which held a sort of triangular formation. I could see their gray-black sides riding high over the water.

"When I first sighted them they were near enough for torpedo work, but I wanted to make my aim sure, so I went down and in on them. I had taken the position of the three ships before submerging, and I succeeded in getting another flash through my periscope before I began action. I soon reached what I regarded as a good shooting point.

"Then I loosed one of my torpedoes at the middle ship. I was then about twelve feet under water and got the shot off in good shape, my men handling the boat as if it had been a skiff. I climbed to the surface to get a sight through my tube of the effect and discovered that the shot had gone straight and true, striking the ship, which I later learned was the Aboukir, under one of its magazines, which in exploding helped the torpedo's work of destruction.

"There was a fountain of water, a burst of smoke, a flash of fire, and part of the cruiser rose in the air.

#### STRIKES THE SECOND CRUISER

"Its crew were brave and, even with death staring them in the face, kept to their posts. I submerged at once. But I had stayed on top long enough to see the other cruisers, which I

learned were the Cressy and the Hogue, turn and steam full speed to their dying sister.

"As I reached my torpedo depth I sent a second charge at the nearest of the oncoming vessels, which was the Hogue. The English were playing my game, for I had scarcely to move out of my position, which was a great aid, since it helped to keep me from detection.

"The attack on the Hogue went true. But this time I did not have the advantageous aid of having the torpedo detonate under the magazine, so for twenty minutes the Hogue lay wounded and helpless on the surface before it heaved, half turned over, and sank.

"By this time the third cruiser knew, of course, that the enemy was upon it, and it sought as best it could to defend itself. It loosed its torpedo defense batteries on bows, starboard, and port, and stood its ground as if more anxious to help the many sailors in the water than to save itself.

"In the common method of defending itself against a submarine attack, it steamed in a zigzag course, and this made it necessary for me to hold my torpedoes until I could lay a true course for them, which also made it necessary for me to get nearer to the Cressy.

"I had to come to the surface for a view, and saw how wildly the fire was being sent from the ship. Small wonder that was when they did not know where to shoot, although one shot went unpleasantly near us.

"When I got within suitable range I sent away my third attack. This time I sent a second torpedo after the first to make the strike doubly certain. My crew were aiming like sharpshooters and both torpedoes went to their bull's-eye. My luck was with me again, for the enemy was made useless and at once began sinking by the head. Then it careened far over, but all the while its men stayed at the guns looking for their invisible foe.

"They were brave and true to their country's sea traditions. Then it eventually suffered a boiler explosion and completely turned turtle. With its keel uppermost it floated until the air got out from under it and then it sank with a loud sound, as if from a creature in pain.

"The whole affair had taken less than one hour from the

time of shooting off the first torpedo until the Cressy went to the bottom.

"I set my course for home. Before I got far some British cruisers and destroyers were on the spot and the destroyers took up the chase.

"I kept under water most of the way, but managed to get off a wireless to the German fleet that I was heading homeward and being pursued. But although British destroyers saw me plainly at dusk on the 22d and made a final effort to stop me, they abandoned the attempt, as it was taking them too far from safety and needlessly exposing them to attack from our fleet and submarines."

---

#### MERCHANTMEN CAPTURED AND SUNK

During the first months of the war a large number of merchant vessels, principally German and British, were captured or sunk. According to a British Admiralty return, issued September 28, twelve British ships with an aggregate tonnage of 59,331 tons had been sunk on the high seas by German cruisers up to September 23. Eight other British ships, whose tonnage aggregated 2,970, had been sunk by German mines in the North Sea, and 24 fishing craft, with a tonnage of 4,334, had been captured or sunk by the Germans in the same waters. British ships detained at German ports numbered 74, with a total tonnage of 170,000.

On the other side the Admiralty reported 102 German ships, with a total tonnage of 200,000, detained in British ports since the outbreak of the war; while 88 German ships, of an aggregate tonnage of 338,000, had been captured since hostilities began.

The return also showed that 168 German ships, with an aggregate tonnage of 283,000, had been detained or captured by the Allies. Fifteen ships, with a tonnage of 247,000, were detained in American ports, while fourteen others, with a tonnage of 72,000, remained in the Suez Canal.

The German mines in the North Sea had also destroyed seven Scandinavian ships, with a tonnage of 11,098.

#### GERMAN CRUISERS ACTIVE

Several German cruisers were amazingly active in distant waters early in the war. Among these were the Goeben, Breslau, Emden, Karlsruhe, and Leipzig, which captured or sank

a number of vessels of the enemy. The German cruisers *Scharnhorst* and *Gneisenau* also operated in the Pacific, bombarding the French colony of Papeete, on the island of Tahiti, and inflicting much damage, including the sinking of two vessels.

On August 26 the big converted German liner *Kaiser Wilhelm der Grosse*, while cruising on the northwest coast of Africa, was sunk by the British cruiser *Highflyer*.

The German cruiser *Dresden* was reported sunk by British cruisers in South American waters in the second week of September. The *Emden*, operating under the German flag in the Indian Ocean, sank several British steamers. Several Austrian vessels succumbed to mines off the coast of Dalmatia and in the Baltic there were a number of casualties in which both Russian and German cruisers suffered. The Russian armored cruiser *Bayan* was sunk in a fight near the entrance to the Gulf of Finland.

On September 20 the German protected cruiser *Koenigsberg* attacked the British light cruiser *Pegasus* in the harbor of Zanzibar and disabled her. Off the east coast of South America the British auxiliary cruiser *Carmania*, a former Cunard liner, destroyed a German merchant cruiser mounting eight four-inch guns. About the same time the German cruiser *Hela* was sunk in the North Sea by the British submarine E-9. The *Kronprinz Wilhelm*, a former German liner, which had been supplying coal to German cruisers in the Atlantic, was also sunk by the British.

#### GERMAN COLONY OCCUPIED

The British Admiralty announced on September 12 that the Australian fleet had occupied Herbertshoehe, on Blanche Bay, the seat of government of the German Bismarck Archipelago and the Solomon Islands.

The Bismarck Archipelago, with an area of 18,000 square miles and a population of 200,000, is off the north coast of Australia and southwest of the Philippine Islands. The group was assigned to the German sphere of influence by an agreement with Great Britain in 1885. German New Guinea was included in the jurisdiction.

#### GERMANS SINK RUSS CRUISER

On October 11 German submarines in the Baltic torpedoed and sank the Russian armored cruiser *Pallada* with all its



crew, numbering 568 men. The Pallada had a displacement of 7,775 tons and was a sister ship of the Admiral Makarov and Bayan. She was launched in November, 1906, and had a water-line length of 443 feet; beam, 57 feet; draft of 21¼ feet, and a speed of 21 knots. She carried two 8-inch, eight 6-inch, twenty-two 12-pounders, four 3-pounders, and two torpedo tubes. Seven inches of Krupp armor protected the vessel amidships and four inches forward.

The Pallada was engaged in patrolling the Baltic with the Admiral Makarov when attacked by the submarines. She opened a strong fire on them, but was blown up by a torpedo launched by one of the submerged craft, while the Makarov escaped.

#### BRITISH CRUISER HAWKE SUNK

On October 15th, while the British cruisers Hawke and Theseus were patrolling the northern waters of the North Sea, they were attacked by a German submarine. The Hawke, a cruiser of 7,750 tons, commanded by Capt. H. P. E. T. Williams, was torpedoed and sank in eight minutes. Only seventy-three of her crew of 400 officers and men were saved.

#### BRITISH AVENGE AMPHION'S LOSS

Capt. Cecil H. Fox, who was in command of the British cruiser Amphion when she was destroyed by a German mine early in the war, had his revenge on October 17, when, in command of the cruiser Undaunted, he sank four German torpedo boat destroyers off the coast of Holland. Only 31 of the combined crews of 400 men were saved and these were taken as prisoners of war.

## CHAPTER XVI

### SUBMARINES AND MINES

*Battleships in Constant Danger from Submerged Craft—Opinions of Admiral Sir Percy Scott—Construction of Modern Torpedoes—How Mines Are Laid and Exploded on Contact.*

SIR PERCY SCOTT, admiral in the British navy, who through his inventions made possible the advance in marksmanship with heavy guns and increased the possibilities of hitting at long range and of broadside firing, said recently that everything he has done to enhance the value of the gun is rendered useless by the advent of the latest type of submarine, a vessel which has for its principal weapon the torpedo. Dreadnoughts and super-dreadnoughts are doomed, because they no longer can be safe at sea from the submarine nor find safety in harbors.

"The introduction of vessels that swim under water," he said, "has in my opinion entirely done away with the utility of the ships that swim on top of the water. The functions of a war vessel were these: Defensively, [1] to attack ships that come to bombard our forts, [2] to attack ships that come to blockade us, [3] to attack ships convoying a landing party, [4] to attack the enemy's fleet, [5] to attack ships interfering with our commerce; offensively, [1] to bombard an enemy's ports, [2] to blockade an enemy, [3] to convoy a landing party, [4] to attack the enemy's fleet, [5] to attack the enemy's commerce.

"The submarine renders 1, 2 and 3 impossible, as no man of war will dare to come even within sight of a coast that is adequately protected by submarines. The fourth function

of a battleship is to attack an enemy's fleet, but there will be no fleet to attack, as it will not be safe for a fleet to put to sea. Submarines and aeroplanes have entirely revolutionized naval warfare; no fleet can hide itself from the aeroplane's eye, and the submarine can deliver a deadly attack in broad daylight.

"In time of war the scouting aeroplanes will always be high above on the lookout, and the submarines in constant readiness. If an enemy is sighted the gong sounds and the leash of a flotilla of submarines will be slipped. Whether it be night or day, fine or rough, they must go out in search of their quarry; if they find her she is doomed and they give no quarter; they cannot board her and take her as prize as in the olden days; they only wait till she sinks, then return home without even knowing the number of human beings they have sent to the bottom of the ocean.

"Not only is the open sea unsafe; a battleship is not immune from attack even in a closed harbor, for the so-called protecting boom at the entrance can easily be blown up. With a flotilla of submarines commanded by dashing young officers, of whom we have plenty, I would undertake to get through any boom into any harbor and sink or materially damage all the ships in that harbor."

#### A PRACTICAL MAN'S VIEWS

This is not a mere theorist or dreamer talking, says Burton Roscoe in commenting on Admiral Scott's statements; it is the one man in England most supremely versed in naval tactics, the man to whom all nations owe the present effectiveness of the broadside of eight, twelve and fourteen inch guns and the perfection in sighting long range guns.

The newest type of submarine torpedo is 100 per cent efficient. The torpedo net of steel that used to be the ship's defense against torpedoes is now useless. The modern torpedoes need only to come in contact with a surface like the torpedo net or the armor plate of a battleship to discharge a shell which will burst through a two-inch armor caisson, rupture the hull of a battleship, and sink it in a few minutes.

The torpedo submarines of the modern type have a submerged speed of from eight to ten knots an hour. Only a small surface, including the bridge or conning tower, is ex-

posed, thus making it almost impossible to hit them with the clumsy guns aboard ship. The highest type of submarine has a submerged tonnage of 812 tons and its length is 176 feet.

Each submarine carries from one to six torpedoes, each of which is capable of sinking the most heavily armored vessel afloat. The sighter in the conning tower moves swiftly up within range of the vessel he is attacking and gives the signal for the discharge of the torpedo. The men aboard the attacked ship have no warning of their impending death except a thin sheaf of water that follows on the surface in the wake of the submerged torpedo and which lasts only an instant.

#### RUN BY COMPRESSED AIR

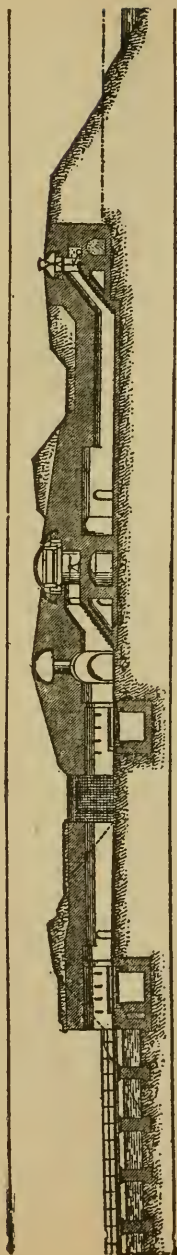
By a compressed air arrangement motive power is furnished the torpedo in transit for its propellers. A gyroscope keeps it on a plane and upright. A striker on the nose of the torpedo is released by a fan which revolves in the water. The nose of the torpedo strikes the side of the battleship and the compact jars the primer of fulminate of mercury. The high explosive of gunpowder forces out a shell and explodes with it after the shell has penetrated the armor. Then the work is done.

It is generally believed the principal harbors and fortifications in England are heavily supplied with torpedoes of the new type. It is also believed that the fortifications about the River Elbe are thus equipped. If this is a fact the defending nation will be able not only to repulse any fleet attempting an invasion but also to destroy it. By throwing across the Straits of Dover, or across the lower end of the North Sea, a flotilla of its powerful submarines England can prevent any naval invasion of France or England or Belgium by Germany should the attacking fleet take this route.

In the latest type of submarine the United States is deficient. There are only twenty-nine submarines in the United States naval service at the present time and only eighteen under construction.

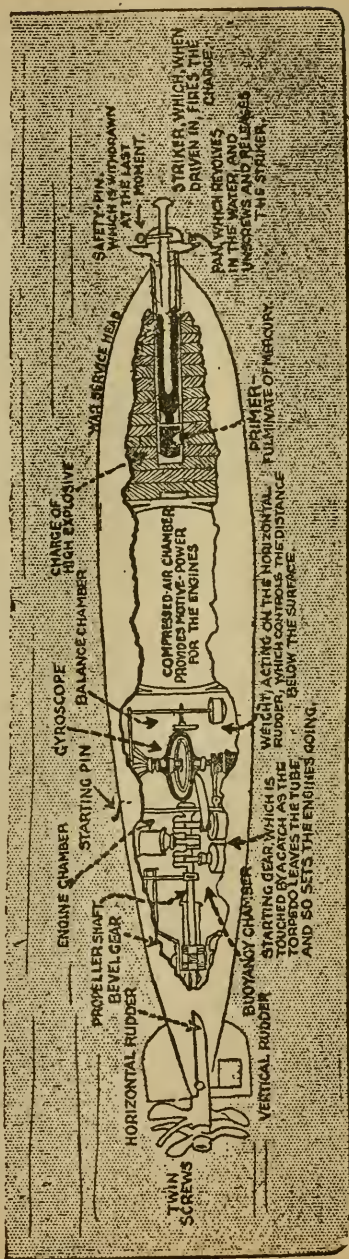
The old type of torpedo did not have penetrative power





Cross section of Belgian Type of Fortress. The forts at Liège were of this type and long withstood the battering of the German guns.

This kind of modern fort was designed by the famous Belgian military engineer, General Brailmont. The strength of every such work must depend on the spirit of its garrison, and at Liège and Namur the Belgian defenders gave a good account of themselves. These forts are provided with an elaborate system for repelling attempts to carry the works by assault and for making a counter-attack. There are land-mines, fired electrically from the forts, wire entanglements, disappearing guns, and search-lights to locate and blind an attacking enemy.



Construction of Modern Torpedo, Showing All Important Parts, Including Engine, Propellers, Steering Gear, etc.

sufficient to sink the modern armor-clad battleship unless it struck under exceptionally favorable circumstances. A large percentage of the destructive power was expended on the outside of the hull. Commander Davis of the United States navy invented the torpedo that carries its power undiminished into the interior of the vessel.

#### CAN CUT TORPEDO NETS

The new torpedoes are provided with special steel cutters by which they cut through the strongest steel torpedo net. The torpedo has within it an eight-inch gun, capable of exploding a shell with a muzzle velocity of about 1,000 feet a second. The projectile carries a bursting charge of a high explosive, and this charge is detonated by a delayed-action fuse. When the torpedo strikes its target, the gun is fired and the shell strikes the outside plating of the ship. Then the fuse in the shell's base explodes the charge in the shell, immediately after the impact.

With a small fleet of these under-water fighting vessels—say of two or three—an invading or blockading fleet of not more than twenty men-of-war can be destroyed within an hour by an otherwise unprotected harbor or port.

Germany has a few of these latest style submarines, and if it can rush the construction of the thirty-one now being built, it will have a flotilla that will protect its harbor towns against invasion.

France, also with its fifty submarines and thirty-one under construction, and its great corps of scouting aeroplanes, will prove a formidable agent in crippling the activities of Germany's big fleet of dreadnoughts, armored cruisers and battleships. Russia will need its twenty-five submarines for coast defense and probably will not send them out of the Baltic [or out of the Black Sea in the event that Italy is drawn into the conflict.]

Undoubtedly, then, the great battles in the present war, on the water at least, may be decided by these silently moving, dinky sized, almost imperceptible submarines which carry the ever-destroying torpedoes. And the loss of lives will be more prodigious than ever.

## SUBMARINE STRENGTH OF THE POWERS

	Built	Building.
Great Britain .....	69	35
France .....	50	31
Russia .....	25	30
Germany .....	24	31
Italy .....	18	8
Austria .....	6	11

## SUBMERGED MINES—HOW THEY ARE LAID AND THEIR WORKING

The sinking of the light cruiser *Pathfinder* of the British navy by a German mine in the North Sea early in the war called special attention to the deadly character of the mines of the present day.

A modern mine-laying ship puts to sea with a row of contact mines on rails along her side, ready for dropping into the sea. The rails project over the stern. The essential parts of a special type of mine of recent design consist of (1) the mine proper, comprising the explosive charge and detonating apparatus in a spherical case; (2) a square-shaped anchor chamber, connected with the mine by a length of cable; (3) a plummet-weight used in placing the mine in position, connected with the anchor chamber by a rope. Thus the mine appears on the deck of the mine-laying ship before being lowered over the stern.

Before the mine goes over, a windlass inside the plummet-sinker is revolved by hand until the length of cable between the plummet and the anchor-chamber has been reeled off equivalent to the depth below the surface at which the explosive mine is to float.

Then the entire apparatus is hove overboard. The plummet and anchor-chamber sink, while the spherical mine proper is kept on the surface for the moment by means of a buoyant air-chamber within. A windlass in the anchor-chamber now pays out the cable between it and the mine as the anchor-chamber sinks. On the plummet touching bottom, the tension in the cable between it and the anchor-chamber is lessened, and the windlass mentioned stops. The anchor-chamber thereupon sinks to the bottom, dragging down the spherical mine until that is at the selected depth ready for its deadly work.

## CHAPTER XVII

### AERO-MILITARY OPERATIONS

*Aerial Attacks on Cities—Some of the Achievements of the Airmen in the Great War—Deeds of Heroism and Daring—Zeppelins in Action—Their Construction and Operation.*

**D**URING the first ten weeks of the war German airmen flew over Paris several times and dropped bombs that did some damage. Aeroplanes, not Zeppelins, were used in these attempts to terrorize the capital and other cities of France.

The early visits of Zeppelin airships to Antwerp have been described in a previous chapter. These were continued up to the time of the fall of Antwerp. While comparatively few lives were lost through the explosion of the bombs dropped, the recurring attacks served to keep the inhabitants, if not the Belgian troops, in a state of constant excitement and fear. When the city fell into German hands, a similar condition arose in England, where it was feared that Antwerp might be made the base for German airship attacks on London and other cities of Great Britain; and all possible precautions were taken against such attacks. The members of the Royal Flying Corps were kept constantly on the alert; powerful searchlights swept the sky over London and the English coast every night and artillery was kept in readiness to repel an aerial invasion. Such was the condition in the third week of October.

#### BRITISH ATTACK ON DUSSELDORF

A new type of British aeroplane was developed during the war, capable of rising from the ground at a very sharp angle and of developing a speed of 150 miles an hour. And in their



operations in France and Belgium the British army aviators proved themselves highly efficient and earned unstinted praise from Field Marshal Sir John French, in command of the British forces on the continent. One of their notable exploits was an attack, October 8, on the Zeppelin sheds at Dusseldorf and Cologne, in German territory. The attack was made by Lieut. R. S. G. Marix, of the Naval Flying Corps, in a monoplane, and Squadron Commander Spencer Grey, with Lieut. S. V. Lippe, in a biplane. Flying from Antwerp at a height of 5,000 feet, to escape the almost continuous German fire, Lieut. Marix succeeded in locating the Zeppelin hangars at Dusseldorf. Then descending to a height of only 1,000 feet he released two bombs when directly over them, damaging both hangars and aircraft. A German bullet passed through Lieut. Marix's cap and the wings of his aeroplane were pierced in a dozen places, but he succeeded in returning to the burning city of Antwerp, which he was ordered to leave the same evening.

During the same raid Commander Spencer Grey flew to Cologne. He was unable to locate the Zeppelin hangars but dropped two bombs into the railway station, which was badly damaged.

A night or two later a German Zeppelin flew over Ghent and dropped a bomb near the South station. On October 11 two German aviators dropped a score of bombs on different quarters of Paris, killing three civilians and injuring fourteen others. The property damage, however, was slight and the effectiveness of bomb-dropping as a means of destroying a city or fortifications remained to be proved to the military mind. It was noted that a large proportion of the bombs dropped by German aviators failed to explode.

#### HEROIC ACTS BY AIRMEN

Stories of heroism displayed by aviators on both sides of the great conflict have abounded. One story of the devotion of German airmen, told to a correspondent by several German officers, he succeeded in verifying, but was unable to learn the name of the particular hero of the occurrence. This story was as follows:

"In one of the battles around Rheims it became necessary

to blow up a bridge which was about to be crossed by advancing French troops coming to relieve a beleaguered fort. The only way to destroy the bridge was for an airman to swoop down and drop an exceptionally powerful bomb upon it.

"There were twenty-four flyers with that division of the German army. A volunteer was asked for, it being first announced that the required task meant sure death to the man undertaking it.

"Every one of the twenty-four stepped forward without hesitation. Lots were quickly drawn. The chosen man departed without saying farewell to any one. Within five minutes the bridge was in ruins and the aeroplane and its heroic pilot had been blown to pieces. This incident was not published in the press of Germany, because of the fear that it would cause terrible anxiety to the wives of all married German flyers."

#### A DUEL HIGH IN THE AIR

An aerial victory for a French aviator, fought thousands of feet in the air in the presence of troops of both armies, was reported by Lieutenant de Laine of the French aerial corps on October 10. The air duel was one of the most thrilling since the war began. Lieutenant de Laine's account of the combat was as follows:

"I had been ordered to fly over the German lines with an observer who was to drop pamphlets. These pamphlets contained the following inscription:

"'German soldiers, attention! German officers say that the French maltreat prisoners. This is a lie. German prisoners are as well treated as unfortunate adversaries should be.'

"We had no sooner taken wing than the aeroplane was sighted by German observers in captive balloons anchored about six miles distant. Immediately two Albatross machines rose from the German camp and came forward.

"We continued to advance, meanwhile sending the aeroplane higher and higher until the barograph showed we were 6,000 feet above the ground. Our machine was speedier than the German aeroplane, which was constructed of steel and was so heavy it could not work up the speed of the French army monoplane.

"We were able to get over the German lines and my com-

panion began hurling thousands of the pamphlets in every direction. It was like a snowstorm.

"In the meantime, the German artillery got their long range air guns in action and were hurling volley after volley against us. The shells were of special type, designed to create violent air waves when they burst. We were too high to be reached, but we had to turn our attention to the two aeroplanes which were rushing toward us.

"As they approached the German artillery fire stopped. We were too high to distinguish what was going on beneath us, but I could imagine the thousands of soldiers staring skyward in wonder at the strange spectacle above them.

"We kept swinging in wide circles over the German lines and I kept getting higher and higher in order to outmaneuver the German plane and to prevent it from getting above us so that bombs could be thrown at us.

"The machines were all equipped with rapid-fire guns, and when we got within 100 yards of each other, both sides opened fire. The bullets went wide. Finally we began to swing backward, getting lower and lower. One of the German machines was thus lured over the French lines and our land artillery opened against it. One of its wings was shattered and it dropped, but the other aeroplane escaped."

#### HOW A GERMAN AVIATOR ESCAPED

How a German aviator in Belgium secured control of a falling aeroplane after his companion had been killed is described in a thrilling letter received by his father in Berlin September 30. It reads:

"Dear Father: I am lying here in a beautiful Belgian castle slowly recovering from wounds I thought would kill me. On August 22 I made a flight with Lieutenant J., a splendid aviator; established the fact that the enemy was advancing toward us. In the region of Bertrix we came into heavy rain-clouds and had to descend to 3,000 feet. As we came through the clouds we were seen and an entire French division began shooting at us.

"Lieutenant J. was hit in the abdomen. Our motor was put out of commission. We were trying to volplane across a forest in the distance when suddenly I felt the machine give

a jump. I turned around—as I was sitting in front—and found that a second bullet had hit Lieutenant J. in the head and killed him.

“I leaned over the back of the seat and managed to reach the steering apparatus and headed down. A hail of shots whistled about me. I felt something hit me in the forehead. Blood ran into my eyes. I was faint. But will prevailed and I retained consciousness. Just as we were near the ground a gust of wind hit the plane and turned my machine over. I fell in the midst of the enemy with my dead companion. The ‘red trousers’ were coming from all directions and I drew my pistol and shot three of them. I felt a bayonet at my breast and gave myself up for dead when an officer shouted: “‘Let him live! He is a brave soldier.’

“I was taken to the commanding general of the Seventeenth French army corps, who questioned me, but, of course, got no information. He said I would later be sent to Paris, but as I was weak from loss of blood and seriously wounded I was taken into their field hospital and cared for. The officers were very nice to me and when the French fell back I took advantage of the confusion to crawl under a bush, where I remained until our troops came.”

Many occurrences of a similarly thrilling character have been related in the camps of the contending armies. The above suffice to show the patriotic devotion and heroism of the military forces of the air, which for the first time in history have been a prominent feature of warfare in 1914.

---

#### ZEPPELINS IN ACTION

The real story of the performances of air-craft in the war has not been told, but there has been enough to give the world a terrifying glimpse of these modern weapons.

The three attacks on Antwerp by a Zeppelin airship brought into action the long predicted onslaught by forces of the air against the ground. After one of the great German dirigibles had been brought down by gunfire because it was accidentally guided too near the earth, another returned over the city, and the havoc wrought by this single craft realizes



the horrors that would follow any concerted attack by a fleet of the aerial destroyers if they were launched against a city.

The Zeppelin is an impressive thing because of its size, cigar-shaped and ranging from 300 to over 500 feet in length, driven at a rate of 40 miles an hour by four propellers and carrying a huge car. It is most valuable for use at night, of course, but has proved it is capable of doing its deadly work out of range of ordinary gunfire at day. Artillery has been invented which can reach airships flying at 5,000 feet, but there is not much of it. The half dozen German Zeppelins which have been destroyed by French and Russian fire met their fate chiefly because they got too near the ground.

Refugees from Belgium describe the method used by Zeppelins in dropping bombs. The dirigible is kept as much as possible out of range of the enemy's guns while it lowers a steel cage, attached to a steel rope, 200 or 300 feet long. The cage carries a man who throws down the bombs. Because of the small size of the cage and the fact that it is kept constantly in motion it is difficult for heavy guns to hit it. The great airship remains perfectly stable while the missiles, of which there are a variety for different missions, are being hurled. All the military Zeppelins of Germany are armed and there are a large number of unarmed dirigibles in reserve.

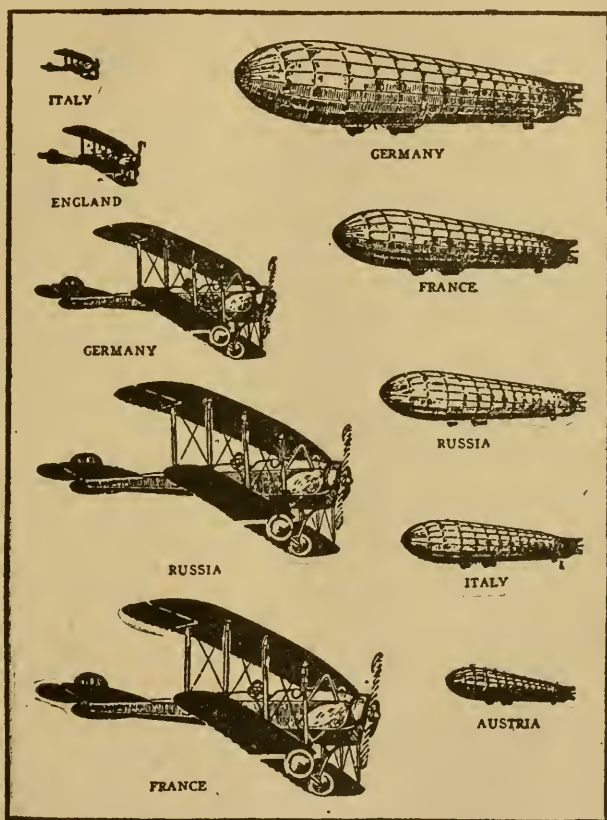
It is estimated that there are 100 aeroplanes with the British forces on the continent. The French army has hundreds of aeroplanes of various kinds. Germany's fleet of flying machines has been in action continuously and the aviators have proved a big aid in scouting as well as in dropping bombs and grenades on the enemy.

The newest French aeroplanes are said to be equipped with boxes filled with thousands of "steel arrows."

These "arrows" are really steel bolts four inches long. When the aviator sails over the enemy he opens trapdoors of the "arrow" boxes with a simple device and lets showers of bolts fall on the men below. One of the "arrows" dropped 2,000 feet will go through a German helmet and a soldier's

head. A shower of them would prove effective against a massed enemy.

On August 10 the correspondent of the London Times in Brussels, describing the fighting at Liege, said aerial fleets



THE RELATIVE STRENGTH OF SOME OF THE EUROPEAN NATIONS IN AEROPLANES AND DIRIGIBLES.

—Aero and Hydro, Chicago

were used by both Belgians and Germans. The fighting in midair was desultory but deadly. A huge Zeppelin sailed over Liege during the early fighting, but was pursued by a

Belgian aeroplanist, who risked and lost his life in destroying it.

After the destruction of this Zeppelin the Germans confined their aerial activity to the use of scouting aeroplanes, several of which were destroyed by shots from the forts. Attempts to reach the aeroplanes with shells were often unsuccessful, however, owing to the inability to shoot high enough.

---

#### AVIATION CAMPS IN EUROPE

In the early days of the great war only an occasional flash of news was received about the French and Russian aero-military operations or those of the German corps along the Russian and French frontiers. It was difficult to imagine that they were idle, for the German-Russian and the French-German frontiers had been the locations of many military aeronautical camps or fortresses. These were described at the outbreak of hostilities as follows:

"Along the German frontier facing Russia are the important aero centers of Thorn and Graudenz, while the nearest aero base in Russia is at Riga, farther north.

"Against German invasion there are French centers at Verdun, Nancy, Luneville and Belfort. The most important is at Belfort. Sixty miles from the Belgian frontier and 170 miles from Liege is the great center at Rheims, with the even more important base at Chalons-sur-Marne only twenty-five miles distant.

"Seventy-five to 100 miles is the scouting range of the military aeroplanes, while the dirigibles will scout 500 to 1,000 miles from the base, according to the duration efficiency. The Zeppelins might, taking some risk, travel even farther. With this taken into consideration, the fact that there are only two German aero centers on the French frontier—Aix-la-Chapelle and Metz—is not very significant. The range of the Vosges occupies the territory where there is no aero center.

"Back of the mountains, along the Rhone from Dusseldorf to Strasbourg, there are a dozen aero stations, some of them devoted to aeroplanes and dirigibles, others to dirigibles alone.

"The latest data show that Germany has sixty stations,

including private dirigible hangars, while France has thirty, in most cases of greater extent than those in Germany. Russia, eight months ago, had ten, but it is believed that this number has been increased twofold since that time.

#### HOW GERMAN EMPIRE IS FORTIFIED AGAINST AERIAL ATTACKS



CENTERS FROM WHICH KAISER WILLIAM'S DIRIGIBLE AND AEROPLANE FLEETS OPERATE. ONLY THOSE CITIES THAT HAVE AERODROMES ARE SHOWN ON THIS MAP. SEVERAL BELGIAN AND FRENCH AERODROMES ALSO ARE SHOWN.

"The two principal Belgian centers are at Brasschaet, near Antwerp, and Etterbeek, near Brussels. The aviators operating in the early engagements have undoubtedly flown down from Brussels and are in temporary camp at Liege. There are probably not more than four Belgian escadrilles, or little fleets of four machines each, on the scene, while Germany's force is supposedly greater."



## CHAPTER XVIII

### BATTLE OF THE AISNE

*Most Prolonged Encounter in History Between Gigantic Forces—A Far-Flung Battle Line—Germans Face French and British in the Aisne Valley and Fight for Weeks—Mighty Armies Deadlocked After a Desperate and Bloody Struggle.*

FOR a few days after the tide of battle in France turned in favor of the Allies (September 9), the German forces continued to retreat to the north, closely followed by the French and British armies that had fought and won the battle of the Marne, as described in a previous chapter. This northward movement was marked by heavy German losses in men and munitions of war, and lasted until Saturday, September 12, when the Germans were found to be occupying a position of great defensive strength on the River Aisne, north of Soissons. At that time they held both sides of the river and had a formidable line of intrenchments on the hills to the north of eight road bridges and two railway bridges crossing the Aisne. Seven of the road bridges and both the railway bridges had been destroyed.

The Allies gained some high ground south of the Aisne, overlooking the Aisne valley, east of Soissons. Then began (on Saturday, September 12) an action along the Aisne which was destined to go down in history as the greatest and most prolonged battle of all time. Two days, three days, a week, two weeks, three, four, five weeks it lasted, with varying fortune to the contending armies, but no decisive result. Germans, French and British, literally by the thousand, fell under the continuous hail of shrapnel, the hurricane of machine-gun and rifle fire, or in the desperate bayonet charges of daily occurrence, but still the battle raged. Minor positions were

gained and lost, towns and villages along the far-flung battle line were occupied and evacuated, countless deeds of heroism were wrought, to be sung and celebrated by posterity in a dozen different lands—but the lines on both sides held and victory refused to perch on any banner.

Modern scientific strategy exhausted its utmost efforts; flanking and turning movements were planned, attempted and failed; huge masses of men were hurled against each other in every formation known to military skill; myriads of lives and millions of money were sacrificed in historic endeavors to breach the enemy's front—but ever the foeman held his ground and neither side could claim decided advantage. Intrenchments such as the world has never seen before covered the countryside for fifty miles. Teuton, Gaul and Anglo-Saxon, Turco and Hindu, literally "dug themselves in," and refused to budge an inch, though hell itself, in all its horror and its fury, was loosed against them.

And thus the battle of the Aisne—also aptly called, from its extent and ramifications, the battle of the Rivers—continued through many weeks while all the world wondered and stood aghast at the slaughter, and the single gleam of brightness that came out of that maelstrom of death and misery was the growing respect of Frenchman, German and Briton for the individual and collective courage of each other and the death-defying devotion that was daily displayed by all.

#### FIGHTING CONTINUOUS DAY AND NIGHT

Beginning as an artillery duel in which the field-guns of the French and Germans were matched against each other from opposite heights as never before, the battle of the Aisne soon resolved itself into a series of daily actions in which every arm of the opposing hosts engaged. There was little rest for the troops day or night. Artillery fire beginning at daybreak and continuing till dusk might break out again at any hour of the night, the range of the enemy's intrenchments being known. Frequently the artillery seemed to open fire in the still watches of the night for no other reason than to prevent the enemy in his trenches from getting any sleep at all, and many a man was borne to the rear on both sides suffering from no wound, but from utter

exhaustion—a state of collapse which is often as deadly as shrapnel to the soldier in the field.

For weeks at a time the only real rest for many of the troops engaged along the line of battle came in snatches of a few hours when they were temporarily relieved by fresh troops brought up from the rear, and these in their turn might be soon exhausted by the continuous strain of keeping on the alert to repel attacks—or, as frequently happened, their ranks might be decimated, or worse, when they were ordered to a charge. Officers and men suffered alike from the strenuous nature of the demands made upon them—and so far as actual casualties are concerned the battle was one in which officers of all ranks, in all the armies, suffered perhaps more severely, in proportion to the number engaged, than in any previous battle. Hundreds of British officers, for example, were among the victims whose bones lie rotting in the valley of the Aisne, as whole pages of their portraits in the London journals, bearing many of the best known names in the British Empire, testified in mute protest against the horrors of war. And both Germany and France have a similar “roll of honor.”

---

#### REPORTS OF THE BATTLE

While the great battle of the Rivers was in progress the most connected stories of its daily developments came through the British official news bureau, and these are reproduced in part in the pages that follow. The author of these reports is believed to be Colonel Swinton, of Field Marshal French's staff, who is generally credited with having contributed to the literature of the war some of the most interesting and enlightening accounts of the operations of the British and French armies in the field. And these reports are given here, because of their general character of apparent truth and fairness, and in the absence of any similar reports from the other side.

#### OPENING OF THE GREAT BATTLE

The following report from the British headquarters covers the period when the Allies' forward movement was halted along the Aisne and also describes the terrain, or country, in which the subsequent fighting occurred:

“From Thursday, September 10, the British army made



In the above view the Rivers Marne, Ourcq, Aisne, Oise, and Meuse are clearly shown, exaggerated in size for convenience of reference. The position of the Allies September 20, 1914, is shown by a black dotted line running from between Amiens and Peronne to Verdun and Nancy. The German front is indicated by the shaded sections, which also show the German lines of communication or retreat, numbered from 1 to 7. At this time the Allies were pushing north to Arras, endeavoring to turn the German right flank in command of General von Kluck.



steady progress in its endeavor to drive back the enemy in co-operation with the French. The country across which it had to force its way, and will have to continue to do so, is undulating and covered with patches of thick wood.

"Within the area which faced the British before the advance commenced, right up to Laon, the chief feature of tactical importance is the fact that there are six rivers running across the direction of the advance, at all of which it was possible that the Germans might make resistance. These rivers are, in order from the south, the Marne, Ourcq, Vesle, Aisne, Ailette and Oise.

"The Germans held the line of the Marne, which was crossed by our forces on September 9, as a purely rearguard operation. Our passage of the Ourcq was not contested. The Vesle was only lightly held, while resistance along the Aisne, both against the French and the British, has been and still is of a determined character.

"On Friday, September 11, but little opposition was met with along any part of our front, and the direction of the advance was, for the purpose of co-operating with our allies, turned slightly to the northeast. The day was spent in rushing forward and gathering in various hostile detachments. By nightfall our forces had reached a line north of the Ourcq, extending from Oulchy-le-Chateau to Longpont.

"On this day there was also a general advance of the French along their whole line, which ended in a substantial success, in one portion of the field Duke Albrecht of Wuerttemberg's army being driven back across the Saulx, and elsewhere the whole of the artillery of a German corps being captured. Several German colors also were taken.

"It was only on this day that the full extent of the victory gained by the Allies on September 8 [at the Marne] was appreciated by them, and the moral effect of this success has been enormous. An order dated September 6 and 7, issued by the commander of the German Seventh Corps, was picked up. It stated that the great object of the war was about to be attained, since the French were going to accept battle, and that upon the result of this battle would depend the issue of the war and the honor of the German armies.

"On Saturday, the 12th, the enemy were found to be

occupying a very formidable position opposite us on the north of the line at Soissons. Working from the west to the east, our Third Army Corps gained some high ground south of the Aisne overlooking the Aisne valley, to the east of Soissons. Here a long-range artillery duel between our guns and those of the French on our left and the enemy's artillery on the hills continued during the greater part of the day, and did not cease until nearly midnight. The enemy had a very large number of heavy howitzers in well-concealed positions.

"At Braisne the First cavalry division met with considerable opposition from infantry and machine-guns holding the town and guarding the bridge. With the aid of some of our infantry it gained possession of the town about midday, driving the enemy to the north. Some hundred prisoners were captured around Braisne, where the Germans had thrown a large amount of field-gun ammunition into the river, where it was visible under two feet of water.

#### FATEFUL ENCOUNTER BEGINS

"On our right the French reached the line of the River Vesle. On this day began an action along the Aisne which is not yet finished, and which may be merely of a rearguard nature on a large scale, or may be the commencement of a battle of a more serious nature.

"It rained heavily on Saturday afternoon and all through the night, which severely handicapped transport.

"On Sunday, the 13th, extremely strong resistance was encountered by the whole of our front, which was some fifteen miles in length. The action still consisted for the most part of a long-range gunfire, that of the Germans being to a great extent from their heavy howitzers, which were firing from cleverly concealed positions. Some of the actual crossings of the Aisne were guarded by strong detachments of infantry with machine-guns.

"By nightfall portions of all our three army corps were across the river, the cavalry returning to the south side. By early next morning, three pontoon bridges had been built, and our troops also managed to get across the river by means of the bridge carrying the canal over the river.

"On our left the French pressed on, but were prevented by artillery fire from building a pontoon bridge at Soissons.

A large number of infantry, however, crossed in single file the top girder of the railway bridge left standing.

"During the last three or four days many isolated parties of Germans have been discovered hiding in the numerous woods a long way behind our line. As a rule they seemed glad to surrender, and the condition of some of them may be gathered from the following incident:

"An officer proceeding along the road in charge of a number of led horses received information that there were some of the enemy in the neighborhood. He gave the order to charge, whereupon three German officers and 106 men surrendered.

#### RHEIMS OCCUPIED BY GERMANS

"Rheims was occupied by the enemy on September 3. It was reoccupied by the French after considerable fighting on September 13.

"On the 12th, a proclamation, a copy of which is in the possession of the British army, was posted all over the town. A literal translation of this poster follows:

"PROCLAMATION—In the event of an action being fought early today or in the immediate future in the neighborhood of Rheims, the inhabitants are warned that they must remain absolutely calm and must in no way try to take part in the fighting. They must not attempt to attack either isolated soldiers or detachments of the German army. The erection of barricades, the taking up of paving stones in the streets in a way to hinder the movement of troops, or, in a word, any action that may embarrass the German army, is formally forbidden.

"With an idea to securing adequately the safety of the troops and to instill calm into the population of Rheims, the persons named below have been seized as hostages by the commander-in-chief of the German army. These hostages will be hanged at the slightest attempt at disorder. Also, the town will be totally or partially burned and the inhabitants will be hanged for any infraction of the above.

"By order of the German authorities.

(Signed) "THE MAYOR."

"Here followed the names of eighty-one of the principal

inhabitants of Rheims, with their addresses, including four priests, and ending with the words, 'And some others.'"

---

#### HOW THE BATTLE DEVELOPED

The following descriptive report from Field Marshal Sir John French's headquarters was issued September 22:

"At the date of the last narrative, September 14, the Germans were making a determined resistance along the River Aisne. The opposition has proved to be more serious than was anticipated.

"The action now being fought by the Germans along their line is naturally on a scale which, as to extent of ground covered and duration of resistance, makes it undistinguishable in its progress from what is known as a 'pitched battle.'

"So far as we are concerned, the action still being contested is the battle of the Aisne. The foe we are fighting is just across that river, along the whole of our front to the east and west. The struggle is not confined to the valley of that river, though it will probably bear its name.

"On Monday, the 14th, those of our troops which had on the previous day crossed the Aisne, after driving in the German rearguards on that evening, found portions of the enemy's forces in prepared defensive positions on the right bank and could do little more than secure a footing north of the river. This, however, they maintained in spite of two counter-attacks delivered at dusk and 10 *p. m.*, in which the fighting was severe.

"During the 14th strong reinforcements of our troops were passed to the north bank, the troops crossing by ferry, by pontoon bridges, and by the remains of permanent bridges. Close co-operation with the French forces was maintained and the general progress made was good, although the opposition was vigorous and the state of the roads, after the heavy rain, made movements slow.

#### FIRST CORPS MAKES CAPTURE

"One division alone failed to secure the ground it expected to. The First Army Corps, after repulsing repeated attacks, captured 600 prisoners and twelve guns. The cavalry also took a number of prisoners.

"There was a heavy rain throughout the night of Sep-



tember 14-15 and during the 15th the situation of the British forces underwent no essential change. But it became more and more evident that the defensive preparations made by the enemy were more extensive than was at first apparent. The Germans bombarded our lines nearly all day, using heavy guns brought, no doubt, from before Maubeuge as well as those with the corps.

"All the German counter-attacks, however, failed, although in some places they were repeated six times. One made on the Fourth Guards Brigade was repulsed with heavy slaughter.

"Further counter-attacks made during the night were beaten off. Rain came on towards evening and continued intermittently until 9 *a. m.*, on the 16th. Besides adding to the discomfort of the soldiers holding the line, the wet weather to some extent hampered the motor transport service, which was also hindered by broken bridges.

"On Wednesday, the 16th, there was little change in the situation opposite the British; the efforts made by the enemy were less active than on the previous day, though their bombardment continued throughout the morning and evening.

"On Thursday, the 17th, the situation still remained unchanged in its essentials. The German heavy artillery fire was more active than on the previous day. The only infantry attacks made by the enemy were on the extreme right of our position, and, as had happened before, they were repulsed with heavy loss, chiefly on this occasion by our field artillery.

#### NATURE OF THE FIGHTING

"In order to convey some idea of the nature of the fighting it may be said that along the greater part of our front the Germans have been driven back from the forward slopes on the north of the river. Their infantry are holding strong lines of trenches amongst and along the edges of the numerous woods which crown the slopes. These trenches are elaborately constructed and cleverly concealed. In many places there are wire entanglements and lengths of rabbit fencing.

"Both woods and open are carefully aligned, so that they can be swept by rifle fire and machine-guns, which are invisible from our side of the valley. The ground in front of the infantry is also, as a rule, under cross fire from the field artillery

placed on neighboring heights, and under high angle fire from pieces placed well back behind the woods on top of the plateau.

"A feature of this action, as of the previous fighting, is the use by the enemy of numerous heavy howitzers, with which they are able to direct long range fire all over the valley and right across it. Upon these they evidently place great reliance.

"Where our men are holding the forward edges of the high ground on the north side they are now strongly intrenched. They are well fed, and in spite of the wet weather of the last week are cheerful and confident.

#### HEAVY BOMBARDMENT BY BOTH SIDES

"The bombardment by both sides has been heavy, and on Sunday, Monday, and Tuesday was practically continuous. Nevertheless, in spite of the general din caused by the reports of the immense number of heavy guns in action along our front on Wednesday, the arrival of the French force acting against the German right flank was at once announced on the east of our front some miles away by the continuous roar of their quick-firing artillery, with which the attack was opened.

"So far as the British are concerned, the greater part of this week has been passed in bombardment, in gaining ground by degrees, and in beating back severe counter-attacks with heavy slaughter. Our casualties have been severe, but it is probable that those of the enemy are heavier.

"The rain has caused a great drop in the temperature and there is more than a distant feeling of autumn in the air.

"On our right and left the French have been fighting fiercely and have been gradually gaining ground. One village already has been captured and recaptured twice by each side and at the time of writing remains in the hands of the Germans.

"The fighting has been at close quarters and of the most desperate nature, and the streets of the village are filled with dead of both sides.

#### CHEERING MESSAGE TO THE FRENCH

"As an example of the spirit which is inspiring our allies the following translation of an *Ordre du Jour* (order of the

day), published on September 9, after the battle of Montmirail, by the commander of the French Fifth Army, is given:

“Soldiers: Upon the memorable fields of Montmirail, of Vauchamps, of Champaubert, which a century ago witnessed the victories of our ancestors over Blücher’s Prussians, your vigorous offensive has triumphed over the resistance of the Germans. Held on his flanks, his center broken, the enemy now is retreating towards the east and north by forced marches. The most renowned army corps of old Prussia, the contingents of Westphalia, of Hanover, of Brandenburg, have retired in haste before you.

“This first success is no more than the prelude. The enemy is shaken but not yet decisively beaten. You have still to undergo severe hardships, to make long marches, to fight hard battles. May the image of our country, soiled by barbarians, always remain before your eyes! Never was it more necessary to sacrifice all for her.

“Saluting the heroes who have fallen in the fighting of the last few days, my thoughts turn toward you, the victors in the last battle. Forward, soldiers, for France!”

#### LETTER FROM A GERMAN SOLDIER

“So many letters and statements of our wounded soldiers have been published in our newspapers that the following epistle from a German soldier of the Seventy-fourth Infantry regiment, Tenth Corps, to his wife also may be of interest:

“My Dear Wife: I have just been living through days that defy imagination. I should never have thought that men could stand it. Not a second has passed but my life has been in danger, and yet not a hair of my head has been hurt.

“It was horrible; it was ghastly, but I have been saved for you and for our happiness, and I take heart again, although I am still terribly unnerved. God grant that I may see you again soon and that this horror may soon be over.

“None of us can do any more; human strength is at an end. I will try to tell you about it. On September 5 the enemy were reported to be taking up a position near St. Prix, southeast of Paris. The Tenth Corps, which had made an astonishingly rapid advance of course, was attacked on Sunday.

“Steep slopes led up to the heights, which were held in

considerable force. With our weak detachments of the Seventy-fourth and Ninety-first regiments we reached the crest and came under a terrible artillery fire that mowed us down. However, we entered St. Prix. Hardly had we done so than we were met with shell fire and a violent fusillade from the enemy's infantry. Our colonel was badly wounded—he is the third we have had. Fourteen men were killed around me. We got away in a lull without my being hit.

“The 7th, 8th, and 9th of September we were constantly under shell and shrapnel fire and suffered terrible losses. I was in a house which was hit several times. The fear of death, of agony, which is in every man's heart, and naturally so, is a terrible feeling. How often I have thought of you, my darling, and what I suffered in that terrifying battle which extended along a front of many miles near Montmirail, you cannot possibly imagine.

“Our heavy artillery was being used for the siege of Maubeuge. We wanted it badly, as the enemy had theirs in force and kept up a furious bombardment. For four days I was under artillery fire. It was like hell, but a thousand times worse.

“On the night of the 9th the order was given to retreat, as it would have been madness to attempt to hold our position with our few men, and we should have risked a terrible defeat the next day. The first and third armies had not been able to attack with us, as we had advanced too rapidly. Our morale was absolutely broken; in spite of unheard-of sacrifices we had achieved nothing.

“I cannot understand how our army, after fighting three great battles and being terribly weakened, was sent against a position which the enemy had prepared for three weeks, but, naturally, I know nothing of the intentions of our chiefs; they say nothing has been lost.

“In a word, we retired towards Coirmontreuil and Rheims by forced marches by day and night. We hear that three armies are going to get into line, intrench and rest, and then start afresh our victorious march on Paris. It was not a defeat, only a strategic retreat. I have confidence in our chiefs that everything will be successful.

“Our first battalion, which has fought with unparalleled



bravery, is reduced from 1,200 to 194 men. These numbers speak for themselves.' "

---

#### EVENTS FROM SEPTEMBER 21 to 24

The next report from the official chronicler at the front, dated September 24, was in part as follows:

"The enemy is still maintaining himself along the whole front, and in order to do so is throwing into the fight detachments composed of units from the different formations, the active army, reserve, and landwehr, as is shown by the uniforms of prisoners recently captured.

"Our progress, although slow on account of the strength of the defensive positions against which we are pressing, has in certain directions been continuous, but the present battle may well last for some days more before a decision is reached, since it now approximates nearly to siege warfare.

"The nature of the general situation after the operations of the 18th, 19th, and 20th, cannot better be summarized than as expressed recently by a neighboring French commander to his corps: 'Having repulsed repeated and violent counter-attacks made by the enemy, we have a feeling that we have been victorious.'

"So far as the British are concerned, the course of events during these three days can be described in a few words. During Friday, the 18th, artillery fire was kept up intermittently by both sides during daylight. At night the Germans counter-attacked certain portions of our line, supporting the advance of their infantry as always by a heavy bombardment. But the strokes were not delivered with great vigor and ceased about 2 *a. m.* During the day's fighting an aircraft gun of the Third Army Corps succeeded in bringing down a German aeroplane.

#### ARTILLERY FIRE BECOMES MONOTONOUS

"On Saturday, the 19th, the bombardment was resumed by the Germans at an early hour and continued intermittently under reply from our guns, which is a matter of normal routine rather than an event.

"Another hostile aeroplane was brought down by us, and one of our aviators succeeded in dropping several bombs over

the German line, one incendiary bomb falling with considerable effect on a transport park near LaFère.

"A buried store of the enemy's munitions of war also was found not far from the Aisne, ten wagonloads of live shells and two wagons of cable being dug up. Traces were discovered of large quantities of stores having been burned—all tending to show that as far back as the Aisne the German retirement was hurried.

"On Sunday, the 20th, nothing of importance occurred until the afternoon, when there was an interval of feeble sunshine, which was hardly powerful enough to warm the soaking troops. The Germans took advantage of this brief spell of, fine weather to make several attacks against different points. These were all repulsed with loss to the enemy, but the casualties incurred by us were by no means light.

"The offensive against one or two points was renewed at dusk, with no greater success. The brunt of the resistance naturally has fallen on the infantry. In spite of the fact that they have been drenched to the skin for some days and their trenches have been deep in mud and water, and in spite of the incessant night alarms and the almost continuous bombardment to which they have been subjected, they have on every occasion been ready for the enemy's infantry when the latter attempted to assault. Indeed, the sight of the troops coming up has been a positive relief after long, trying hours of inaction under shell fire.

#### OBJECT OF GERMAN ATTACKS

"The object of the great proportion of artillery the Germans employ is to beat down the resistance of their enemy by concentrated and prolonged fire—to shatter their nerve with high explosives before the infantry attack is launched. They seem to have relied on doing this with us, but they have not done so, though it has taken them several costly experiments to discover this fact.

"From statements of prisoners, it appears that they have been greatly disappointed by the moral effect produced by their heavy guns, which, despite the actual losses inflicted, has not been at all commensurate with the colossal expenditure of ammunition which has really been wasted.

"By this it is not implied that their artillery fire is not

good. It is more than good—it is excellent. But the British soldier is a difficult person to impress or depress, even by immense shells filled with a high explosive, which detonate with terrific violence and form craters large enough to act as graves for five horses.

“The German howitzer shells are from eight to nine inches in calibre, and on impact they send up columns of greasy black smoke. On account of this they are irreverently dubbed ‘coal boxes,’ ‘Black Marias,’ or ‘Jack Johnsons’ by the soldiers.

“Men who take things in this spirit are, it seems, likely to throw out the calculations based on loss of morale so carefully framed by the German military philosophers.

“The German losses in officers are stated by our prisoners to have been especially severe. A brigade is stated to be commanded by a major; some companies of foot guards by one-year volunteers; while after the battle of Montmirail one regiment lost fifty-five out of sixty officers.

#### LETTER FOUND ON GERMAN OFFICER

“The following letter, which refers to the fighting on the Aisne and was found on a German officer of the Seventh Reserve Corps, has been printed and circulated to the troops:

“‘Cerny, South of Paris, Sept. 17.—My Dear Parents:—Our corps has the task of holding the heights south of Cerny in all circumstances till the Fourteenth Corps on our left flank can grip the enemy’s flank. On our right are other corps. We are fighting with the English guards, Highlanders and Zouaves. The losses on both sides have been enormous. For the most part this is due to the too-brilliant French artillery.

“‘The English are marvelously trained in making use of ground. One never sees them and one is constantly under fire. The French airmen perform wonderful feats. We cannot get rid of them. As soon as an airman has flown over us, ten minutes later we get shrapnel fire in our position. We have little artillery in our corps; without it we cannot get forward.

“‘Three days ago our division took possession of these heights and dug itself in. Two days ago, early in the morning, we were attacked by immensely superior English forces—one brigade and two battalions—and were turned out of our

positions. The fellows took five guns from us. It was a tremendous hand-to-hand fight.

“ ‘How I escaped myself I am not clear. I then had to bring up support on foot. My horse was wounded and the others were too far in the rear. Then came up the Guard Jager Battalion, Fourth Jager, Sixth Regiment, Reserve Regiment Thirteen, and Landwehr Regiments Thirteen and Sixteen, and, with the help of the artillery, we drove the fellows out of the position again. Our machine-guns did excellent work; the English fell in heaps.

“ ‘In our battalion three iron crosses have been given. Let us hope that we shall be the lucky ones the next time.

“ ‘During the first two days of the battle I had only one piece of bread and no water. I spent the night in the rain without my greatcoat. The rest of my kit was on the horses, which have been left miles behind with the baggage and which cannot come up into the battle because as soon as you put your nose up from behind cover the bullets whistle.

“ ‘War is terrible! We are all hoping that a decisive battle will end the war. Our troops already have got round Paris. If we beat the English the French resistance will soon be broken. Russia will be very quickly dealt with; of this there is no doubt.

“ ‘We have received splendid help from the Austrian heavy artillery at Maubeuge. They bombarded Fort Cerfontaine in such a way that there was not ten meters of parapet which did not show enormous craters made by the shells. The armored turrets were found upside down.

“ ‘Yesterday evening about 6, in the valley in which our reserves stood, there was such a terrible cannonade that we saw nothing of the sky but a cloud of smoke. We had few casualties.’

#### TELEPHONE AN AID TO SPIES

“ ‘Espionage is carried on by the enemy to a considerable extent. Recently the suspicions of some of the French troops were aroused by coming across a farm from which the horses had been removed. After some search they discovered a telephone which was connected by an underground cable with the German lines, and the owner of the farm paid the penalty in the usual way in war for his treachery.



"After some cases of village fighting, which occurred earlier in the war, it was reported by some of our officers that the Germans had attempted to approach to close quarters by forcing prisoners to march in front of them. The Germans have recently repeated the same trick on a larger scale against the French, as is shown by the copy of an order issued by the French officials. It is therein referred to as a ruse, but if that term can be accepted, it is a distinctly illegal ruse.

#### REFERS TO RHEIMS CATHEDRAL

"Full details of the actual damage done to the cathedral at Rheims will doubtless have been cabled, so that no description of it is necessary. The Germans bombarded the cathedral twice with their heavy artillery.

"One reason it caught fire so quickly was that on one side of it was some scaffolding which had been erected for restoration work. Straw had also been laid on the floor for the reception of German wounded. It is to the credit of the French that practically all the German wounded were successfully extricated from the burning building.

"There was no justification on military grounds for this act of vandalism, which seems to have been caused by exasperation born of failure—a sign of impotence rather than of strength."

---

#### FIVE MORE DAYS OF BATTLE

On September 29 Field Marshal French's headquarters reported as follows:

"The general situation as viewed on the map remains practically the same as that described in the last letter, and the task of the army has not changed. It is to maintain itself until there is a general resumption of the offensive.

"No ground has been lost. Some has been gained, and every counter-attack has been repulsed—in certain instances with very severe losses to the enemy.

"Of recent events an actual narrative will be carried on from the 25th to 29th, inclusive. During the whole of this period the weather has remained fine.

"On Friday, the 25th, comparative quiet reigned in our sphere of action. The only incident worthy of special mention was the passage of a German aeroplane over the interior of

our lines. It was flying high, but drew a general fusillade from below, with the result that the pilot was killed outright and the observer was wounded. The latter was captured by the French.

"That night a general attack was made against the greater part of the Allies' position, and it was renewed in the early morning of Saturday, the 26th. The Germans were everywhere repulsed with loss. Indeed, opposite one portion of our lines, where they were caught in mass by our machine-guns and howitzers firing at different ranges, it is estimated that they left 1,000 killed or wounded.

"The mental attitude of our troops may be gauged from the fact that the official report next morning from one corps, of which one division had borne the brunt of the fighting, ran thus laconically: 'The night was quiet except for a certain amount of shelling both from the enemy and ourselves.'

#### AN ALL-DAY ATTACK

"At 3:40 *a. m.* an attack was made on our right. At 5 *a. m.* there was a general attack on the right of the —th division, but no really heavy firing. Further ineffectual efforts to drive us back were made at 8 *a. m.* and in the afternoon, and the artillery fire continued all day.

"The Germans came on in 'T' formation, several lines shoulder to shoulder, followed almost immediately by a column in support. After a very few minutes the men had closed up into a mob, which afforded an excellent target for our fire.

"On Sunday, the 27th, while the German heavy guns were in action, their brass bands could be heard playing hymn tunes, presumably at divine service.

"The enemy made an important advance on part of our line at 6 *p. m.*, and renewed it in strength at one point, with, however, no better success than on the previous night. Sniping continued all day along the whole front.

"On Monday, the 28th, there was nothing more severe than a bombardment and intermittent sniping, and this inactivity continued during Tuesday, the 29th, except for a night attack against our extreme right.

#### A TYPICAL BATTLE INCIDENT

"An incident that occurred Sunday, the 27th, serves to illustrate the type of fighting that has for the last two weeks

been going on intermittently on various parts of our lines. It also brings out the extreme difficulty of ascertaining what is actually happening during an action apart from what seems to be happening, and points to the value of good intrenchments.

“At a certain point in our front our advance trenches were on the north of the Aisne, not far from a village on a hillside and also within a short distance of German works, being on a slope of a spur formed by a subsidiary valley running north and a main valley of the river. It was a calm, sunny afternoon, but hazy, and from our point of vantage south of the river it was difficult exactly to locate on the far bank the well-concealed trenches.

“From far and near the sullen boom of guns echoed along the valley, and at intervals in a different direction the sky was flecked with the almost motionless smoke of anti-aircraft shrapnel.

“Suddenly and without any warning, for the reports of the distant howitzers from which they were fired could not be distinguished from other distant reports, three or four heavy shells fell into the village, sending up huge clouds of dust and smoke, which ascended in a brownish-gray column. To this no reply was made by our side.

“Shortly afterwards there was a quick succession of reports from a point some distance up the subsidiary valley on the side opposite our trenches and therefore rather on their flank. It was not possible either by ear or by eye to locate the guns from which the sounds proceeded. Almost simultaneously, as it seemed, there was a corresponding succession of flashes and sharp detonations in the line along the hillside along what appeared to be our trenches.

“There was then a pause and several clouds of smoke rose slowly and remained stationary, spaced as regularly as poplars.

“Again there was a succession of reports from German quick-firers on the far side of the misty valley and like echoes of detonations of high explosives; then the row of expanding smoke clouds was prolonged by several new ones. Another pause and silence, except for the noise in the distance.

“After a few minutes there was a roar from our side of

the main valley as our field guns opened one after another in a more deliberate fire upon the positions of the German guns. After six reports there was again silence save for the whirr of shells as they sang up the small valley. Then followed flashes and balls of smoke—one, two, three, four, five, six—as the shrapnel burst nicely over what in the haze looked like some ruined buildings at the edge of the wood.

#### TRYING TO ENFILADE THE TRENCHES

“Again, after a short interval, the enemy’s gunners reopened with a burst, still further prolonging the smoke, which was by now merged into one solid screen above a considerable length of the trenches and again did our guns reply. And so the duel went on for some time.

“Ignoring our guns, the German artillerymen, probably relying on concealment for immunity, were concentrating all their efforts in a particularly forceful effort to enfilade our trenches. For them it must have appeared to be the chance of a lifetime, and with their customary prodigality of ammunition they continued to pour bouquet after bouquet of high explosives or combined shrapnel and common shells into our works.

“Occasionally, with a roar, a high angle projectile would sail over the hill and blast a gap in the village. One could only pray that our men holding the trenches had dug themselves in deep and well, and that those in the village were in cellars.

“In the hazy valleys, bathed in sunlight, not a man, not a horse, not a gun, nor even a trench was to be seen. There were only flashes, and smoke, and noise. Above, against the blue sky, several round, white clouds were hanging. The only two visible human souls were represented by a glistening speck in the air. On high also were to be heard more or less gentle reports of the anti-aircraft projectiles.

“But the deepest impression created was one of sympathy for the men subjected to the bursts along that trench. Upon inquiry as to the losses sustained, however, it was found that our men had been able to take care of themselves and had dug themselves well in. In that collection of trenches on that Sunday afternoon were portions of four battalions of British



soldiers—the Dorsets, the West Kents, the King's Own Yorkshire light infantry, and the King's Own Scottish Borderers."

---

#### ARMIES IN A DEADLOCK

Later reports from the Aisne valley, up to October 17, when the big battle had been five weeks in progress, indicated little change in the general situation. Bombardments and artillery duels, varied by general attacks, occurred daily all along the line. The main positions of both armies were firmly held, though the French had gained some ground north of Rheims and continually threatened the German center. The left of the Allies' line had crept north to and beyond Arras, where there was severe fighting for several days; and at the end of the thirty-fifth day of the battle of the Rivers the lines of the opposing armies extended almost continuously from beyond Arras on the northwest, south in a great curve to the Aisne valley, thence east to Verdun, where the Crown Prince's army kept hammering away at that fortress without success, and thence southwest to Nancy and the Alsatian border.

By this time the armies of the center were in a species of deadlock. The strain on both sides had long promised to get beyond human endurance and the antagonists of the Aisne were likened by a French officer to two exhausted pugilists, who would soon be unable to inflict further punishment upon each other. But there was no sign of "throwing up the sponge" on either side, though beyond the actual sphere of conflict it was felt that "something must give way soon."

---

#### A BLAZING VALE OF DEATH

Writing on September 16, the fourth day of the battle, a special correspondent behind the British lines by Senlis and Chantilly, said:

"I have passed through a smiling land to a land wearing the mask of death; through harvest fields rich with great stacks snugly builded against the winter to the fields of a braver harvest; by jocund villages where there is no break in the ebb and flow of everyday life to villages and towns that despoiling hands have shattered in ruins.

"And I have passed up this Via Dolorosa toward the very harvesting itself—toward those great plains stretching away

on the banks of the River Aisne, where the second act of this drama of battles is at this moment being played.

"Details of this fight, which, as I write, reaches its fourth day of duration, are very scanty, but partly from personal observation and partly from information which has reached me I know that the struggle so far has been a terrible one, equal to, if not greater than, the struggle on the banks of the Marne.

"The events of Monday (September 14) revealed a foe battling desperately for his life; and this defense of General von Kluck's army demanded of the Allies their utmost strength and determination.

"Picture this battlefield, which will assuredly take its place with that of the Marne as one of the greatest combats of the greatest war. Through the middle of it flows the great river, passing from the east to the west. The banks of the river here are very steep. Above the plain, which sweeps away from the northern bank, rises the "massif" of Laon. It is an ideal area for great movements and for artillery work directed upon the valley of the river. Passing eastward a little, there are the heights behind the city of Rheims and above the Vesle, a tributary of the Aisne. Here again nature has builded a stronghold easy to defend, difficult exceedingly to attack.

"I know of heroic work against these great lines, work that will live with the most momentous of this struggle. I know of smashing attacks the thought of which takes one's breath away. I have heard narratives of the trenches and of the bridges—these engineers, French and English, have indeed 'played the game'—which no man can hear unmoved; how the columns went down again and again to the blazing death of the valley, and how men worked, building and girding in a very inferno—worked with the furious speed of those whose time of work is short.

#### HEROISM IN THE TRENCHES

"And in the trenches, too, the tale of heroism unfolds itself hour by hour. Here is an example, one among ten thousand, the story of a wounded private: 'We lay together, my friend and I. . . . The order to fire came. We shot and shot till our rifles burned us. Still they swarmed on towards us. We took careful aim all the while. "Ah, godd, did you see that?"

I turned to my friend and as I did so heard a terrible dull sound like a spade striking upon newly turned earth. His head was fallen forward. I spoke, I called him by name. He was moaning a little. Then I turned to my work again. They are advancing quickly now. Ah! how cool I was. I shot so slowly, . . . so very slowly.

“‘And then—do you know what it feels like to be wounded? I rose just a little too high on my elbow. A sting that pierces my arm like a hot wire—too sharp almost to be sore. I felt my arm go away from me—it seemed like that—and then my rifle fell. I believe I was a little dazed. I looked at my friend presently. He was dead.’

#### THE GRIM STORY OF SENLIS

“So, on these green river banks and across these fair wooded plains the Germans make their great stand—the stand that if they are defeated will be their last in France. And meanwhile behind them lie the wasted fields and the broken villages. It is impossible adequately to describe the scenes which I have witnessed on the line of the great retreat, but here and there events have had place, which, in truth, cry to high heaven for report. Of such is the grim story of Senlis.

“I spent many hours in Senlis and I will recount that story as I saw it and as I heard it from those who lived through the dreadful procession of days. On Saturday, September 5, the Germans reached this beautiful old cathedral town and entered into occupation. They issued a proclamation to the inhabitants calling upon them to submit and to offer no sort of resistance on pain of severe reprisals.

“But the inhabitants of Senlis had already tasted the bitter draft of war making. The people had become bitter to the point of losing care of their own safety. They were reckless, driven to distraction.

“Bitter was the price exacted for the recklessness! The trouble began when, exasperated beyond measure by their insolence, a brave tobacconist declared to a couple of the Prussians: ‘I serve men, not bullies.’ He followed his words with a blow delivered fiercely from the shoulder.

“The infuriated soldiers dragged him from his shop and hurled him on his knees in front of the door. His wife rushed out shrieking for mercy. Mercy! As well ask it of a stone!





Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

1. Russian Troops Advancing Along Railway in Eastern Prussia.
2. French Grenadiers Making a Flank Attack in Open Order.





Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

1. German Ambulance Corps Removing Wounded from the Field.

International News Service.

2. The Horrors of War—Scene after Battle of Haelen.

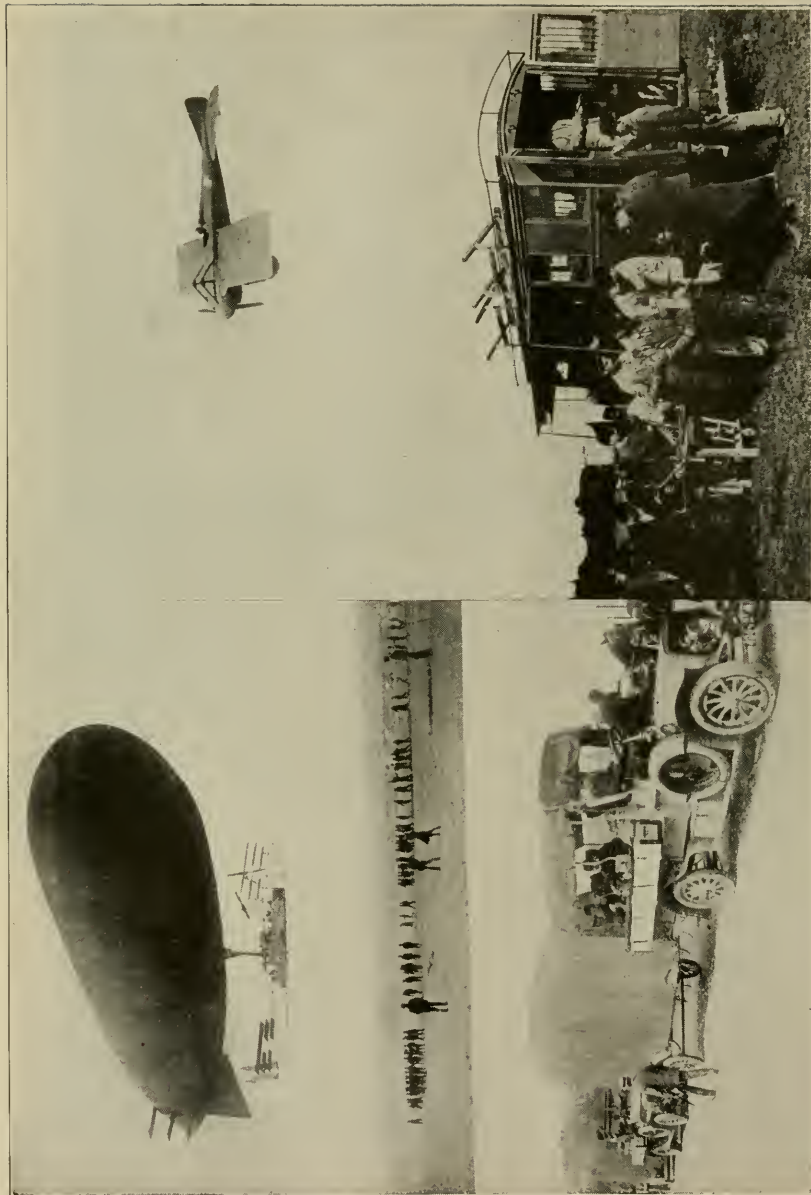


Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

1. Bomb-Throwing Device Used on German Aeroplanes—A Release Clutch Frees Bomb from Sling and Drops It.

Photo by Buck from Underwood & Underwood, New York.

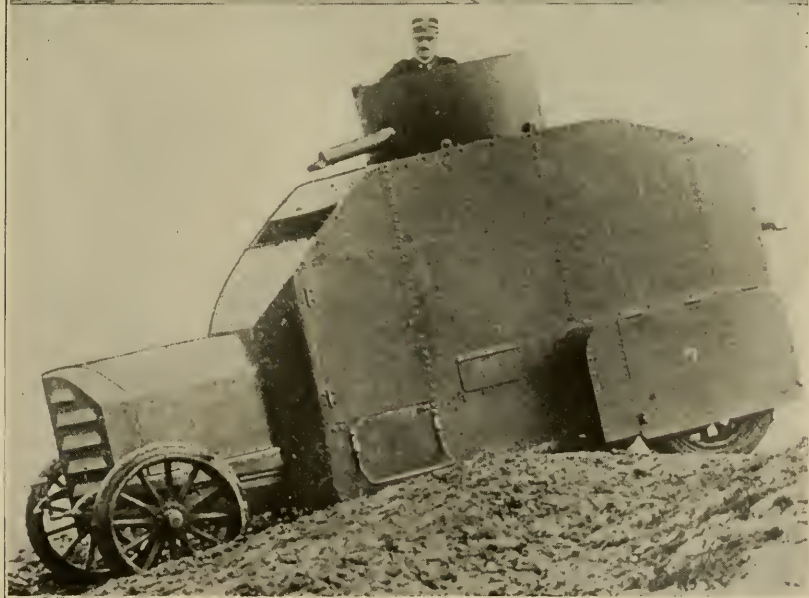
2. Motor Trucks Carrying Water Supply to French Troops at the Front.



Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

1. New French Army Giant Dirigible.
  2. Auto-Trucks Used by French Army Aviators in the Field.
1. The Speediest French Aeroplane—Record 126 Miles an Hour.
  2. Field Repair Shop for French Army Aero-planes.





Belgian Armored Motor Cars with Machine Gun.  
Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

2. Italian "Ironclad" on Wheels with Gun Turret.  
International News Service.





Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

1. FRENCH TURCOS DIVIDING THEIR GERMAN SPOILS AT MEAUX
2. BELGIANS CONGRATULATING PRIVATE LANGE, OF THE 12TH REGIMENT OF INFANTRY, WHO WAS DECORATED BY KING ALBERT FOR KILLING A GERMAN COLONEL AND FOURTEEN MEN AT HORSTAL AUG. 25



Photo by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

Czar Nicholas of Russia and King George of England  
Cousins of the Kaiser now Fighting Against Him in the Bloodiest International Struggle

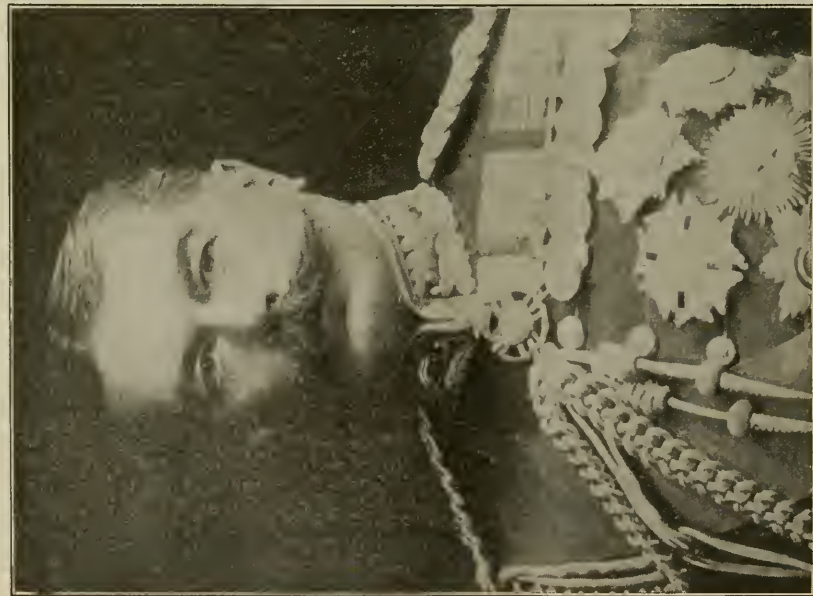


Photo by Underwood & Underwood.

**EARL KITCHENER OF KHARTOUM**  
 England's Famous General now Serving as Secretary of War



**GENERAL JOSEPH JOFFRE**  
 Commander-in-Chief of the French Armies in the Field



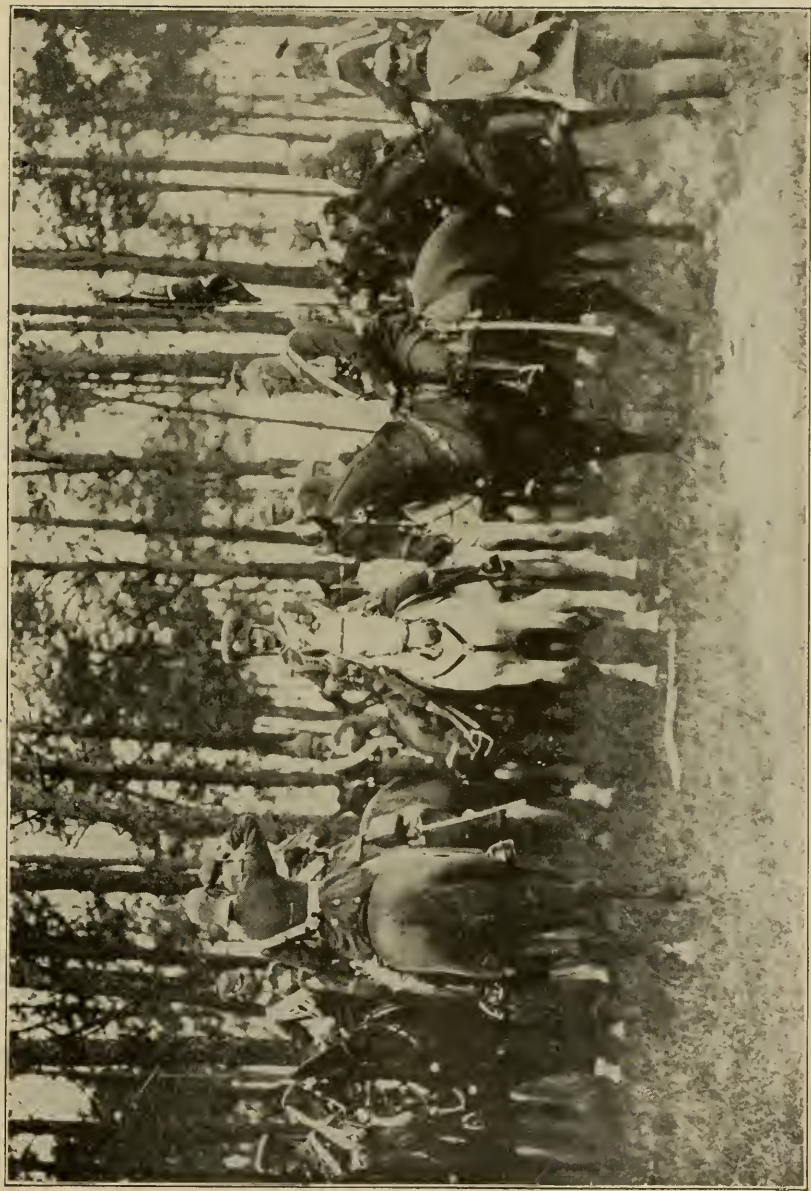
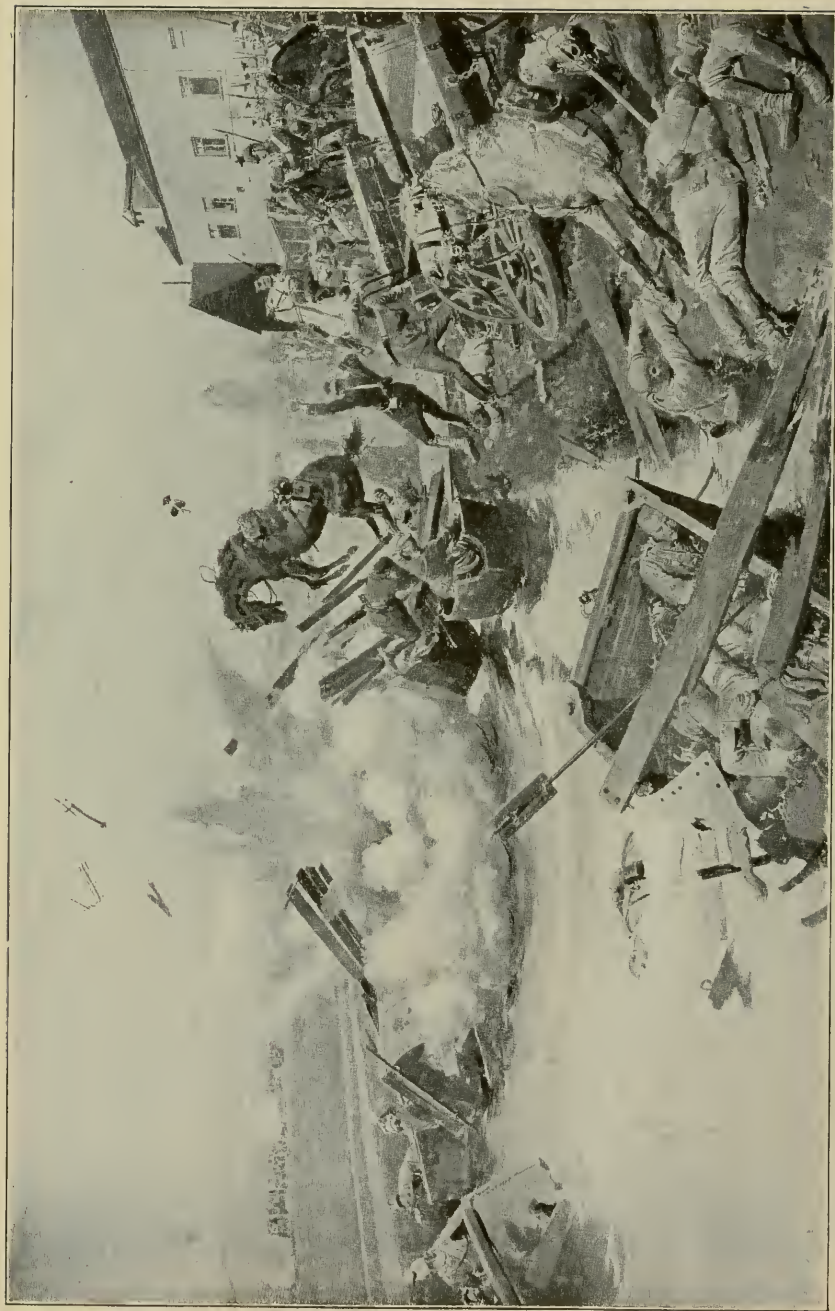


Photo by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.

**Kaiser Wilhelm in Conference with His Staff Officers, Receiving Reports and Planning the German Advance—  
Kaiser in Hussar Uniform on His Favorite White Charger**





**THE BATTLE OF MONS—CROSSING OF THE MONS-CONDE CANAL BY THE GERMAN PONTON COMPANIES**

**This** was one of the most striking incidents in the defense of the British position at Mons. "The battle had become a positive butchery. Ten times the Germans succeeded in throwing pontoons over the water, and ten times the British artillery destroyed them. . . . The bodies of the dead were piled one upon another at several points."—Drawing by F. A. Matania for The Sphere.



Photo by Underwood & Underwood.

1. A Crack Canadian Regiment (Highlanders) Detraining at the Valcartier Mobilization Camp, Quebec, for Service in Europe.
2. A Trainload of Russian Troops En Route to the Prussian Frontier.



Photo by Underwood & Underwood.

Canada Sends Her Bravest Sons to Aid Mother Country in War Against Germany. The upper photo shows members of the 63rd Rifles of Halifax, N. S., ready for service. The lower shows officers of the first companies of volunteers; left to right, Capt. Logan, Lieut. Dennis, Capt. Clarke, Lieut. Jones.





Copyright by Underwood & Underwood, N. Y.  
 German Sailors Lowering Their Wounded Into  
 the Ship's Hospital



Belgian Soldier Wounded at Huy—An Early  
 Victim of the War

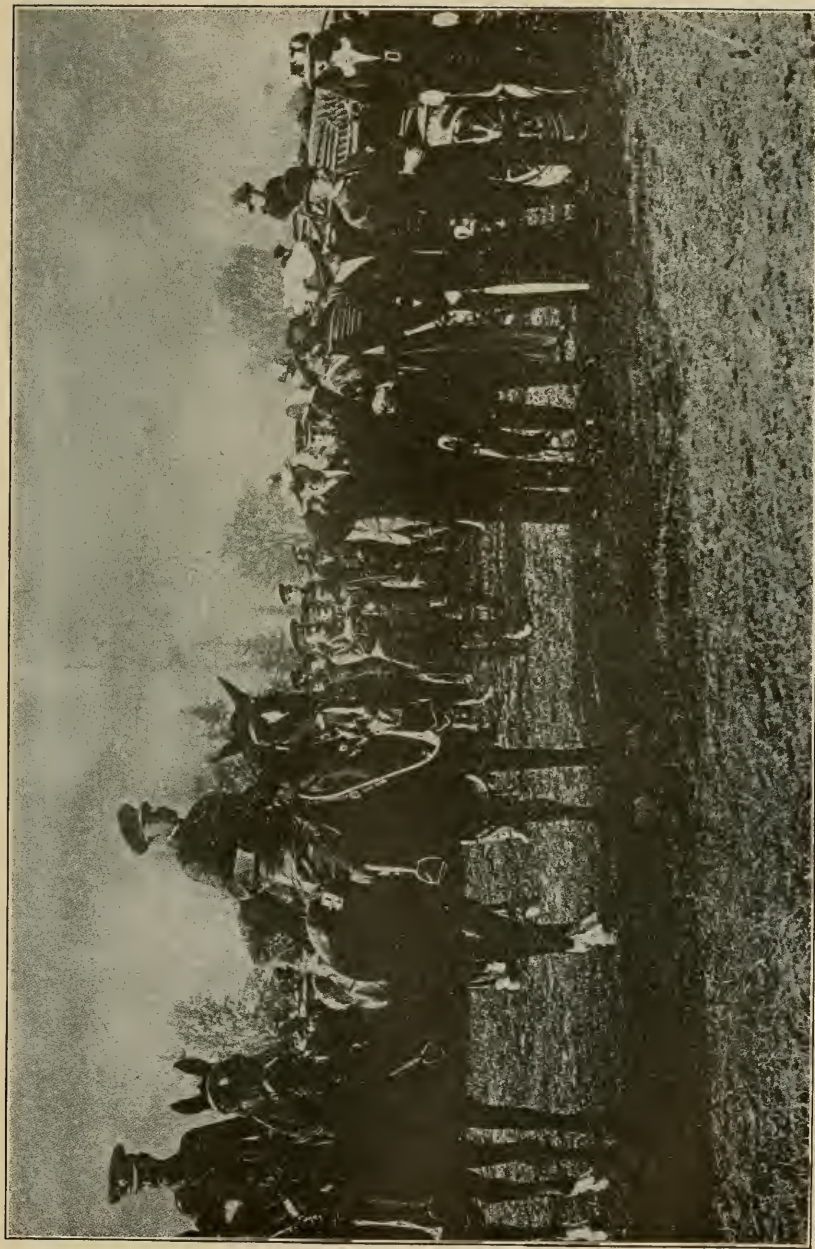




From, the Graphic

#### FRENCH GUNNERS PREPARED TO FACE GAS

French artillerymen, like their brothers in the trenches, provided with masks for protection against the clouds of asphyxiating German gases, the fumes of which often reach the guns far to the rear of the lines of trenches.



THE FINAL REVIEW OF THE CANADIAN CONTINGENT AT VALCARTIER

At the Saluting Point; Right to Left, Princess Patricia, Premier Borden, the Duchess of Connaught, Hon. Robert Rogers, Lt. R. H. the Duke of Connaught, and Col. Williams, Camp Command-r





*Top*—Col. the Honorable Sam Hughes, Minister of Militia of Canada—a Veteran Soldier and Patriotic Statesman

*Bottom*—After Dinner in the Highlanders' Camp at Valcartier.

A shot rang out. . . . Another. . . . Man and wife lay dead.

"Immediately the news of this murderous act flew through the town. Outraged and furious, the conquerors marched instantly to the house of the mayor—their hostage—and arrested him. They conveyed him without a moment's delay to the military headquarters, where he was imprisoned for the night. On Wednesday morning a court-martial sat to decide his fate. A few minutes later this brave man paid for the indiscretion of his people with his life, dying splendidly.

"And then guns were turned on this town of living men and women and children. Shells crashed into the houses, into the shops, into the station. At Chantilly, seven kilometers away, the amazed inhabitants saw a great column of black smoke curl up into the air; they guessed the horrible truth. Senlis was burning.

"The work, however, was interrupted. At midday the glad tidings were heard, 'The Turcos are here.' Within the hour broken and blazing Senlis was re-relieved and rescued. The Turcos pursued and severely punished the enemy.

"Today these streets are terrible to look upon. House after house has been shattered to pieces—broken to a pile of stones. One of the small turrets of the cathedral has been demolished, and a rent has been torn in the stone work of the tower. The station is like a wilderness."

#### RHEIMS CATHEDRAL DAMAGED

A correspondent gives a vivid account of the German bombardment of Rheims, during the battle on the Aisne, as viewed by him from the belfry of the famous cathedral.

"What a spectacle it was!" he said. "Under the cold, drifting gray rainclouds the whole semicircle of the horizon was edged by heights on which the German batteries were mounted, three miles away.

"There was nothing but the inferno of bursting shells, those of the Germans landing anywhere within the space of a square mile. Sometimes it was just outside the town that they fell, trying to find the French troops lying there in their trenches, waiting to go forward to the attack of the hills, when their artillery should have prepared the way.

"The cathedral tower made a wonderful grand stand from



which to watch this appalling game of destruction. It was under the protection of the Red Cross flag, for directly the shells began to hit the cathedral in the morning some German wounded were brought in from a hospital nearby and laid on straw in the nave, while Abbé Andreaux and a Red Cross soldier pluckily climbed to the top of the tower and hung out two Geneva flags.

"The crescendo scream the shells make has something fiendish in it that would be thrilling apart from the danger of which it is the sign. You hear it a full second before the shell strikes, and in that time you can tell instinctively the direction of its flight.

"Then comes the crash of the explosion, which is like all the breakages you ever heard gathered into one simultaneous smash."

#### SAVING THE GERMAN WOUNDED

A few of the German shells struck the cathedral and set it on fire. The scene was thus described by Abbé Camu, a priest of Rheims:

"It was all over in an hour. There were two separate fires. We put the first out with four buckets of water, all we had in the place, but soon another shell struck the roof and the wind drove the flames along the rafters inside of the nave. We rushed up, but it was flaming all along and as we could do nothing, we hurried down.

"There were holes in the ceiling of the nave and sparks began to fall through them into a great heap of straw, ten feet high and twenty yards long, which the Germans had piled along the north aisle. We tried to catch the sparks in our hands as they fell, and such of the German wounded as were able to walk helped us. But the first spark that fell on the pile set it blazing. There was time to think of nothing but getting out the wounded.

"They screamed horribly. We carried many of those that could not walk, while others dragged themselves painfully along to the side door in the north aisle. Those who had only hand and arm wounds helped their comrades. We got out all except thirteen, whose bodies were left behind.

"When at last I came out of the flaming building I found the whole body of wounded huddled together around the doors.

Opposite to them was a furiously hostile crowd of civilians of the town and a number of soldiers with their rifles already leveled.

"I sprang forward. 'What are you doing?' I cried.

"'They shall all burn,' shouted the soldiers in answer. 'They shall go back and burn with the cathedral or we will shoot them here.'

"'You are mad!' I exclaimed in reply. 'Think of what this means. All the world will hear of the crime the Germans have committed here, and if you shoot these men the world will know that France has been as criminal in her turn. Anyhow,' I said, 'you shall shoot me first, for I will not move.'

"Unwillingly the soldiers lowered their rifles and I turned to six German officers who were among the wounded and asked if they would do what I told them to. They said they would and I asked them to tell their men to do the same. Then I formed them up in a solid body, those who could walk unaided carrying or helping those who could not. I put myself at the head and we set off to the Hotel de Ville, which is only a few hundred yards away.

"Well, then the crowd, mad with grief and rage, set on us. I can't describe it. You have never seen anything so dreadful as that scene. They beat some of the Germans and some of them they got down.

"'Can't you help me?' I called to a French officer I caught sight of.

"'You will never get to the Hotel de Ville like this,' he replied, so I forced my wounded through the gateway of a private house and we managed to close the gates after us.

"They had been roughly handled, some of them, and they stayed there a day and a night before we could move them again."

[The damage done to the cathedral at Rheims, by the way, though by no means slight, inexpressibly sad and truly regrettable, was not nearly so great as was indicated by many early reports. The friends of architectural art and beauty hope to see the cathedral fully restored at no distant date.]

"SLAUGHTER" AT SOISSONS

Much of the fighting during the battle of the Aisne centered around Soissons. On September 16 a correspondent described the fighting there as follows:

"For the last three hours I have been watching from the hills to the south of the town that part of the terrific struggle that may be known in history as the battle of Soissons.

"It has lasted for four days, and only now can it be said that victory is turning to the side of the Allies.

"The town itself cannot be entered for it still is being raked both by artillery and rifle fire, and great columns of smoke mark several points at which houses are burning.

"The center of the fighting lies where the British and French pontoon corps are trying to keep the bridges they have succeeded in throwing across the river.

"Men who have come from the front line tell me that the combat there has been a positive slaughter. They say that the unremitting and desperate firing of these four days and nights puts anything else in modern warfare into the shade, that river crossings are as great an objective on one side to take and keep as on the other to destroy."

#### SEVEN DAYS OF HELL

A wounded soldier, on being brought back to the hospital at Paris, after only one week in the valley of the Aisne, said in a dazed sort of way:

"Each day was like the others. It began at 6 o'clock in the morning with heavy shellfire. There was a short interval at which it stopped, about 5:30 every day. Then in the night came the charges, and one night I couldn't count them. It was awful—kill, kill, kill, and still they came on, shoving one another over on to us. Seven days and nights of it and some nights only an hour's sleep; it was just absolute hell!"

None of the wounded found another word to describe the battle and the sight of the men bore it out. Muddled to the eyes, wet, often with blood caked on them, many were suffering from the curious aphasia produced by continued trouble and the concussion of shells bursting. Some were dazed and speechless, some deafened, and yet, strange to say, said a correspondent, no face wore the terrible animal war look. They seemed to have been softened, instead of hardened, by their awful experience.

## CHAPTER XIX

### FALL OF ANTWERP

*Great Seaport of Belgium Besieged by a Large German Force—Forts Battered by Heavy Siege Guns—Final Surrender of the City—Belgian and British Defenders Escape—Exodus of Inhabitants—Germans Reach the Sea.*

WHEN the battle of the Marne ended in favor of the Allies and the Germans retired to take up a defensive position along the Aisne, the Belgian army renewed its activities against the invader. With the fortified city of Antwerp as their base, the Belgians began (on September 10) an active campaign, having for its object the reoccupation of their cities and towns which had been taken and garrisoned by German troops. In some cases they were successful in regaining possession of points which they had been forced to abandon during the German advance in August, and there were many hot encounters with the Germans who were left to hold open the German lines of communication through Belgium. But the forces of the Kaiser were too numerous and too mobile for successful opposition, and soon the Belgian army, despite the most gallant efforts, was compelled once more to retire behind the outer forts of Antwerp and there await the coming of an enemy who was approaching in force.

Great credit must be given to the Belgian army for the patriotic manner in which it met the sudden invasion by the Germans, and for its continued resistance against tremendous odds. Inspired by the example of King Albert and his devoted Queen, who spent most of their time with the Belgian forces in the field, and shared with them the vicissitudes of war, the defenders of Belgium fought with the utmost pertinacity. The resistance



of the Belgians when invaded, and the success of the Allies in halting the advance upon Paris and turning it into a retreat at the Marne, appear to have inflamed the German generals with a desire to crush Belgium completely under an iron heel. An object lesson of the power and possibilities of the great fighting machine must be given somewhere. Halted in France by the Franco-British armies and meeting with varying fortunes against the Russian hosts in the eastern campaign, Germany chose to make Belgium once more the international cockpit and hurled an army against Antwerp. This move, if successful (as it proved to be) would serve two purposes—first, the further punishment of Belgium for her unexpected resistance, and second, the striking of a direct blow at Great Britain, the possession of Antwerp being strategically regarded as “a pistol leveled at the head of London.”

#### THE SIEGE OF ANTWERP

In the third week of September the Germans, having massed a force believed to be sufficient for the capture of Antwerp, brought up their heavy Krupp siege guns which had been used successfully at Liège and Namur, and planted them within their seven-mile range, so as to command the outer belt of forts east and south of the city. [See map of the fortifications of Antwerp on page 102.] These huge howitzers were reinforced by heavy siege guns furnished by Austria. The fortification system of Antwerp was believed by its builders to be practically impregnable, but they had not reckoned with the tremendous shattering power and great range of the latest Krupp siege guns. For Antwerp was destined to fall, her outer and inner defenses broken down, within ten days from the time the siege began in earnest.

#### BRITISH MARINES AID DEFENDERS

The number of German troops engaged before Antwerp was variously estimated at from 80,000 to 200,000. The siege proper began on Tuesday, September 29. For more than a week previously there had been daily engagements in the suburbs of the city and on several occasions the Belgians made a sortie in force, only to encounter overwhelming numbers of the German enemy, before whom they were compelled

to retire behind the shelter of the forts. In all these engagements the Belgians gave a good account of themselves and inflicted severe losses on the enemy. But the odds against them were too great and then when the great siege guns began to thunder, it was soon realized that the city was in imminent danger.

King Albert did all in his power to encourage the defense and by his presence among his troops on the firing lines around the city added greatly to his reputation as a patriotic soldier. A force of several thousand British marines, coming from Ostend, aided the Belgian defense in the last days of the siege, but all efforts were unavailing. One by one the forts succumbed to the German fire with which the Belgian guns could not cope, and German troops penetrated nearer and nearer to the doomed city.

Finally, on October 9, when the inhabitants were in a state of terror as a result of the long-continued bombardment of the forts, and the shelling of the city, further resistance was seen to be useless, the defending forces, Belgian and British, made their escape to Ostend or into the neutral territory of Holland, the city formally capitulated through the Burgomaster, and occupation by the Germans followed immediately. The bulk of the British marines made their way back to Ostend, but a rearguard, consisting of 2,000 British, together with some Belgians, was cut off by the advance of the Germans across the Scheldt, and rather than surrender to them marched across the border into Holland and surrendered arms to the Dutch authorities. The men were interned and will be held in Holland till the end of the war. It is probable that this rearguard was deliberately sacrificed to enable the Anglo-Belgian army to make good its retreat.

The fate of Antwerp shows what might have happened to Paris had the Germans been able to bring up their great siege guns to the outer fortifications of the French capital and protect them while they performed their tremendous task of battering the defenses to pieces. The wrecking of Antwerp's outer and inner forts in ten days proves that solid, massive concrete, chilled steel and well-planned earthworks afford little or no security against the monstrous cannon of the Kai-

ser's armies. There appeared to be but one way of withstanding them.

As seems to have been demonstrated in the valley of the Aisne, they are apparently ineffective against field forces deeply intrenched in a far-flung line.

---

#### THE FIGHTING OUTSIDE ANTWERP

Early on Tuesday morning, October 6, one of the fiercest of the engagements outside Antwerp ended with the crossing of the River Nethe by the Germans and their approach to the inner forts. Monday had been the sixth day of the siege and the Belgian army was fighting with reckless courage to save Antwerp. As a precaution, the boilers of all the German ships lying in the harbor were exploded on Sunday, in order to prevent, if possible, use of these ships as transports for German troops across the North Sea or elsewhere. The detonation of the bursting boilers, resounding through the city, set the excited Sunday crowd very near to a panic. This was accelerated by the constant fear of airship attacks, and most of the population that was not already in active flight from the city sought safety in cellars.

The entire war has presented no greater picture of desolation than that of the hosts fleeing from the last Belgian stronghold. For forty-eight hours before the city fell great crowds of the citizens, dumb with terror as the huge German shells hurtled over their heads, were fleeing toward England and Holland in such numbers that the hospitality of those countries was likely to be taxed to the utmost.

The suburban town of Lierre was bombarded early in the week, the church was destroyed, and a number of citizens killed and wounded. The next day the village of Duffel was bombarded and the population fled into Antwerp. Many still had confidence in the ability of the Antwerp forts to withstand the German attack.

Although the Germans succeeded in crossing the Nethe, their repeated attempts to effect a passage over the Scheldt were repulsed and they then concentrated their attention on an approach to Antwerp from the southeast. In their trenches the Belgians resisted gallantly to the last. "Most wonderful," said an American observer on October 7, "is the patient.

unflinching courage of the average Belgian soldier, who has been fighting for nine weeks. Tired, with hollow eyes, unkempt, unwashed and provided with hasty, though ample, meals, he is spending most of the time in the trenches.

"King Albert, the equal of any soldier in his devotion to duty, daily exposes himself to personal danger, while the Queen is devoting her time to the hospitals."

The effect of the German siege artillery was especially destructive near Vosburg. Several villages suffered heavily and the barracks at Contich were wrecked. The forts at Waelhem and Wavre-St. Catherines were totally destroyed by the terrific shell fire.

Most of the fighting around Antwerp was a battle of Krupps against men. Every day and night the fighting continued with deadly effect against the forts, while the shrapnel and shell made many of the trenches untenable.

As fast as the Belgians were compelled to withdraw from a position the Germans moved up and occupied it. The Belgians fought stubbornly with infantry and frequently they repulsed the Germans, but these repulses always meant a renewal of the artillery attacks by the Germans, with the eventual retirement of the Belgians until the end of endurance was reached and the city defenses were evacuated by their brave garrison.

An instance of the tenacity with which the infantry stuck to their positions was reported from the Berlaere, where the commanding officer and his aid-de-camp were in one of the most exposed positions. Sandbags protected them for some time, but at last the aid-de-camp was struck by shrapnel and had his face virtually blown away. Unperturbed by this terrible proof of the danger of his position, the commanding officer stuck to his post, and for further shelter placed the body of his junior over his body. In this position he lay firing, whenever possible, from 8 o'clock in the morning until 4 in the afternoon.

#### FIERCE FIGHT TO CROSS NETHE

The crossing of the River Nethe was attended by great loss to the Germans. They hurled their infantry recklessly against the Belgian trenches, and while they lost enormous numbers, eventually succeeded in crossing the river.



One of the unsuccessful attempts was described by an independent observer as follows:

"The Germans succeeded in getting a pontoon completed and they came down to the river bank in solid masses to cross it. As they came every Belgian gun that could be turned on the spot was concentrated on them and they were blown away, blocks of them at a time, and still the masses came on.

"The Belgian officers spoke with enthusiasm of the steadiness and gallantry with which, as each German company was swept away, another pushed into its place. But it was a dreadful sight, nevertheless.

"At last the bridge went, shattered and blown to bits. The Belgian guns continued for a while to search the opposite river bank, but the Germans fell back and no more masses of men came down to where the pontoon had been. Allowing for all exaggerations, there can be no doubt that the German loss must have been extremely heavy."

Near Termonde, on Wednesday, the 7th, the fighting was just as fierce. The Belgians had four batteries of field guns there which succeeded in destroying the locks of the river (the Scheldt), thus flooding a part of the river and blocking the Germans. Later they engaged in a hot duel with the German artillery. Two of the Belgian batteries were completely destroyed early in the action and all of the men serving them were killed. Not until the last of the remaining guns were put out of action did the Belgians withdraw.

Of the casualties in and around Antwerp during the siege it is possible only to make an estimate. It was said after the Germans entered the city that their total loss in killed, wounded and missing was near forty-five thousand men. German officers were credited before the attack with saying that they would sacrifice 100,000 men, if necessary, to take Antwerp. It is probable that the German casualties numbered at least twenty-five thousand, while the Belgian losses in actual killed and wounded were probably five thousand. The latter fought from entrenched positions, while the heavy German losses were sustained in the open and at the river crossings. The casualties among the British marines, who arrived only a day or two before the city capitulated, were comparatively insignificant.

STORY OF AN EYEWITNESS—HARROWING SCENES ATTENDING THE  
FALL OF ANTWERP AND THE EXODUS OF ITS PEOPLE

A vivid picture of the pathetic scenes attending the fall of Antwerp was given by Lucien A. Jones, correspondent of the London Daily Chronicle, who wrote on October 11th as follows:

“Antwerp has been surrendered at last. The bitterest blow which has fallen upon Belgium is full of permanent tragedy, but the tragedy is lightened by the gallantry with which the city was defended. Only at last to save the historic buildings and precious possessions of the ancient port was its further defense abandoned. Already much of it had been shattered by the long-range German guns, and prolonged resistance against these tremendous engines of war was impossible. Owing to this the siege was perhaps the shortest in the annals of war that a fortified city has ever sustained. Heroic efforts were made by the Belgians to stem the tide of the enemy’s advance, but the end could not long be delayed when the siege guns began the bombardment.

“It was at three minutes past noon on Friday, October 9th, that the Germans entered the city, which was formally surrendered by Burgomaster J. De Vos. Antwerp had then been under a devastating and continuous shell fire for over forty hours.

“It was difficult to ascertain precisely how the German attack was planned, but the final assault consisted of a continuous bombardment of two hours’ duration, from half past 7 o’clock in the morning to half-past 9. During that time there was a continuous rain of shells, and it was extraordinary to notice the precision with which they dropped where they would do the most damage. The Germans used captive balloons, whose officers signaled the points in the Belgian defense at which they should aim.

## GERMAN GUNS CONCEALED

“The German guns, too, were concealed with such cleverness that their position could not be detected by the Belgians. Against such methods and against the terrible power of the German guns the Belgian artillery seemed quite ineffective. Firing came to an end at 9.30 on Friday, and the garrison escaped, leaving only ruins behind them. In order to gain time for an orderly retreat a heavy fire was maintained against the

Germans up to the last minute and the forts were then blown up by the defenders as the Germans came in at the gate of Malines.

"I was lucky enough to escape by the river to the north in a motorboat. The bombardment had then ceased, though many buildings were still blazing, and while the little boat sped down the Scheldt one could imagine the procession of the Kaiser's troops already goose-stepping their way through the well-nigh deserted streets.

#### MANY HARROWING SCENES

"Those forty hours of shattering noise almost without lull seem to me now a fantastic nightmare, but the sorrowful sights I witnessed in many parts of the city cannot be forgotten.

"It was Wednesday night that the shells began to fall into the city. From then onward they must have averaged about ten a minute, and most of them came from the largest guns which the Germans possess, 'Black Marias,' as Tommy Atkins has christened them. Before the bombardment had been long in operation the civil population, or a large proportion of it, fell into a panic.

"It is impossible to blame these peaceful, quiet-living burghers of Antwerp for the fears that possessed them when a merciless rain of German shells began to fall into the streets and on the roofs of their houses and public buildings. The Burgomaster had in his proclamation given them excellent advice, to remain calm for instance, and he certainly set them an admirable example, but it was impossible to counsel perfection to the Belgians, who knew what had happened to their fellow-citizens in other towns which the Germans had passed through.

#### FOUGHT TO GET ON THE BOATS

"Immense crowds of them—men, women and children—gathered along the quayside and at the railway stations in an effort to make a hasty exit from the city. Their condition was pitiable in the extreme. Family parties made up the biggest proportion of this vast crowd of broken men and women. There were husbands and wives with their groups of scared children, unable to understand what was happening, yet dimly conscious in their childish way that something unusual and terrible and perilous had come into their lives.

“There were fully 40,000 of them assembled on the long quay, and all of them were inspired by the sure and certain hope that they would be among the lucky ones who would get on board one of the few steamers and the fifteen or twenty tugboats available. As there was no one to arrange their systematic embarkation a wild struggle followed amongst the frantic people, to secure a place. Men, women and children fought desperately with each other to get on board, and in that moment of supreme anguish human nature was seen in one of its worst moods; but who can blame these stricken people?

#### APPALLED BY THE HORROR OF WAR

“They were fleeing from ‘*les barbares*,’ and shells that were destroying their homes and giving their beloved town to the flames were screaming over their heads. Their trade was not war. They were merchants, shopkeepers, comfortable citizens of middle age or more; there were many women and children among them, and this horror had come upon them in a more appalling shape than any in which horror had visited a civilized community in modern times.

“There was a scarcity of gangways to the boats, and the only means of boarding them was by narrow planks sloping at dangerous angles. Up these the fugitives struggled, and the strong elbowed the weak out of their way in a mad haste to escape.

“By 2 o’clock Thursday most of the tugboats had got away, but there were still some 15,000 people who had not been able to escape and had to await whatever fate was in store for them.

#### A GREAT EXODUS OF INHABITANTS

“At the central railway station incidents of a similar kind were happening. There, as down by the river, immense throngs of people had assembled, and they were filled with dismay at the announcement that no trains were running. In their despair they prepared to leave the city on foot by crossing the pontoon bridge and marching towards the Dutch frontier. I should say the exodus of refugees from the city must have totaled 200,000 men, women and children of all ages, or very nearly that vast number, out of a population which in normal times is 321,800.



"I now return to the events of Thursday, October 8th. At 12.30 in the afternoon, when the bombardment had already lasted over twelve hours, through the courtesy of a Belgian officer I was able to ascend to the roof of the cathedral, and from that point of vantage I looked down upon the scene in the city.

"All the southern portion of Antwerp appeared to be desolate ruin. Whole streets were ablaze, and the flames were rising to a height of twenty and thirty feet.

"From my elevated position I had an excellent view also of the great oil tanks on the opposite side of the Scheldt. They had been set on fire by four bombs from a German Taube aeroplane, and a huge thick volume of black smoke was ascending two hundred feet into the air. It was like a bit of Gustave Doré's idea of the infernal regions.

#### CITY ALMOST DESERTED

"The city by this time was almost deserted, and no attempt was made to extinguish the fires that had broken out all over the southern district. Indeed there were no means of dealing with them. For ten days the water supply from the reservoir ten miles outside the city had been cut off, and this was the city's main source of supply. The reservoir was just behind Fort Waelthen, and a German shell had struck it, doing great mischief. It left Antwerp without any regular inflow of water and the inhabitants had to do their best with the artesian wells. Great efforts were made by the Belgians from time to time to repair the reservoir, but it was always thwarted by the German shell fire.

#### KILLED BEFORE HIS WIFE'S EYES

"After leaving the cathedral, I made my way to the southern section of the city, where shells were bursting at the rate of five a minute. With great difficulty, and not without risk, I got as far as Rue Lamoiere. There I met a terror-stricken Belgian woman, the only other person in the streets besides myself. In hysterical gasps she told me that the Bank Nationale and Palais de Justice had been struck and were in flames, and that her husband had been killed just five minutes before I came upon the scene. His mangled remains were

lying not one hundred yards away from where we were standing.

"Except for the lurid glare of burning buildings, which lit up the streets, the city was in absolute darkness, and near the quay I lost my way trying to get to the Hotel Wagner. For the second time that day I narrowly escaped death by shell. One burst with terrific force about twenty-five yards from me. I heard its warning whirr and rushed into a neighboring porch. Whether it was from the concussion of the shell or in my anxiety to escape I caromed against the door and tumbled down, and as I lay on the ground a house on the opposite side crashed in ruins. I remained still for several minutes, feeling quite sick and unable to get up. Then I pulled myself together and ran at full speed until I came to a street which I recognized.

#### TAKE REFUGE IN CELLARS

"How many of the inhabitants of Antwerp remained in the city that night it is impossible to say, but they were all in the cellars of their houses or shops. The Burgomaster, M. De Vos, had in one of his several proclamations made many suggestions for safety during the bombardment, for the benefit of those who took refuge in cellars. Among the most useful of them, perhaps, was that which recommended means of escape to an adjoining cellar. The power of modern artillery is so tremendous that a cellar might very well become a tomb if a shell fell on the building overhead.

"Sleep was impossible that night, in the noise caused by the explosion of shells in twenty different quarters of the town. About 6 o'clock I was told that it was time we got out, as the Germans were entering the city. We hurried from the hotel and found the streets completely deserted. I walked down to the quay-side, and there I came across many wounded soldiers, who had been unable to get away in the hospital boat.

"On the quay piles of equipment had been abandoned. A broken-down motor-car, kit-bags, helmets, rifles and knapsacks were littered in heaps. Ammunition had been dumped there and rendered useless. The Belgians had evidently attempted to set fire to the whole lot. The pile of stuff was still smoldering. I waited there for half an hour, and during that

time hundreds of Belgian soldiers passed in the retreat. Just about this time a pontoon bridge which had been the means of the Belgian retreat was blown up to prevent pursuit by the Germans.

"At 8 o'clock a shell struck the Town Hall, and about 8:15 another shell shattered the upper story and broke every window in the place.

#### BURGOMASTER PARLEYS WITH GERMANS

"That was the German way of telling the Burgomaster to hurry up. A quarter of an hour later M. De Vos went out in his motor-car toward the German line to discuss the conditions on which the city should be surrendered.

"At 9:30 o'clock the bombardment of the city suddenly ceased, and we understood that the Burgomaster had by this time reached the German headquarters. Still we waited, painfully anxious to learn what would be the ultimate fate of Antwerp. Belgian soldiers hurried by and at 10:30 proclamations were posted on the walls of the Town Hall urging all in the city to surrender any arms in their possession and begging all to remain calm in the event of the Germans' occupation. A list was also posted of several prominent citizens who were appointed to look after the interests of those Belgians who remained.

"The 'impregnable' city of Antwerp had fallen, but without dishonor to its gallant defenders."

---

#### GERMAN MILITARY GOVERNOR OF ANTWERP APPOINTED—GERMAN OFFICIAL REPORTS

On October 10 Baron von der Schutz was appointed military governor of Antwerp. It was expected that the city would become the base for Zeppelin attacks upon England and also for a German naval campaign in which mines and submarines would play an important part. This was intimated in dispatches from Berlin following the German occupation of the city.

The German General Staff, in announcing the capture, added that they could not estimate the number of prisoners taken. "We took enormous quantities of supplies of all kinds," said the official statement.

## CHAPTER XX

### THE WOUNDED AND PRISONERS

*Typical Precautions Used by the German Army—The Soldiers' First-Aid Outfit—System in Hospital Arrangements—How Prisoners of War Are Treated—Regulations Are Humane and Fair to All Concerned.*

**M**ODERN armies take the best possible care of their wounded and none has brought this department of warfare to greater perfection than the Germany army. One detail of this work shows the German army at its best.

Every soldier has sewn under a corner of his coat a strip of rubber cloth. Under this strip is a piece of antiseptic gauze, a strip of bandage and plaster and cloth for the outer bandage. This cloth bears in simple pictures directions for dressing every sort of wound.

When a soldier is wounded either he or some comrade rips open this package and applies at once the life saving dressing, which will last at any rate until the soldier is brought to a station, where the first scientific attention is given.

Through this simple and inexpensive device thousands upon thousands of German soldiers, who have been slightly wounded in battle, have returned to their comrades within a few days completely well and have taken their places in the ranks once more. Without this care a large percentage of the wounds would become inflamed, as has been the case with hundreds of wounded French prisoners captured by the Germans.

The ordinary procedure of caring for the wounded in the German army is for the sanitary corps, which is well provided with stretchers and bandages, to gather up the wounded on or



near the firing lines and bring them to a gathering point a little way behind the lines.

Here the army surgeons are ready to begin work at once upon the most urgent cases. They are assisted by members of the corps, who remove the temporary bandages, and put on dressings which will last until the soldier reaches a hospital. Then from this first gathering point the wounded soldiers are put on stretchers in Red Cross wagons and carried to the field hospitals a few miles farther back, where doctors and nurses are at work.

#### HOSPITALS IN VILLAGE CHURCHES

These hospitals are usually established in village churches or town halls. One room is cleared and arranged for an operating room, where bullets and pieces of shell are removed and amputations are made if necessary.

"I have just visited such a field hospital," said a correspondent with the right wing of the German army in France, writing on September 28. "It was in a little whitewashed village church heated by a stove. Everywhere were white beds made of straw and covered with sheets. Perhaps twenty wounded were here, including two captured Irishmen. They lay quite still when the army doctor ushered us in, for they were too seriously wounded to pay much attention to anything.

"Near this hospital was another in a town hall. While we were there a consulting surgeon arrived to investigate the condition of a seriously wounded lieutenant, whose leg might need amputation. Two orderlies put the patient on a stretcher, and he was taken into the next room for examination. Later in the day the amputation was performed.

#### MOVED TO HOSPITALS IN CITIES

"From these little field hospitals, as soon as the men can be moved, they are taken to some general hospital in the nearest large city, where several thousands can be cared for. Such a hospital exists in this neighborhood in the building of a normal college, where every corner is used in housing wounded men.

"I made a quick trip through this building and the memory of it is one of the most heartrending pictures I have of the war.

Room after room was filled with the victims of the conflict. Every man was seriously wounded. Some had suffered amputations and the heads of others were so bandaged that no feature could be seen, only a tube to the nose permitting breathing.

HORROR IN HOSPITAL SIGHTS

"In one room a surgeon had a soldier on the operating table and was pulling pieces of shell from a huge hole in the inner side of one of his legs. On a stretcher on the floor, waiting for his turn to come under the surgeon's care, was an officer. His face was covered with blood, he was waving his arms wildly and gasping for air. This scene left an impression of the utmost horror upon me.

"Slightly wounded soldiers, whom it is not necessary to leave for a while in the field hospitals, are sent directly to these larger hospitals and thence, after a short convalescence, are loaded into Red Cross trains and sent home for recovery. Later they return to take their places in the regiments. Such trains can be seen daily along any main line of railroad. In some cases freight cars with straw bedding are used.

"One of the finest examples of charity given during the war is a splendid Red Cross train entirely equipped as a modern hospital, even having a first class operating room. This was given to the German army by the citizens of Wilmersdorff, who also employed an excellent surgeon. Scores of lives will be saved through a small outlay of money.

GRAVEYARDS ON BATTLEFIELDS

"Near the large hospital I visited was a graveyard where there were scores of neatly marked fresh graves, each bearing a cross or tablet with the name of the soldier and his regiment, division and corps marked on it. In some cases comrades had added a word or two of scripture. The deaths are too numerous for an imposing ceremony at each burial, but for every one an army chaplain reads scripture and offers a short prayer, while a few comrades stand by with bared heads.

"The identity of each soldier is easily determined from the name plate which he wears in a little leather purse suspended from around the neck. After a battle these plates are gathered from the dead and from these the death lists are made

out. [It was said that after the battle of the Marne no fewer than 68,000 of these name plates or tags were found collected in one place.—Ed.]

“After a battle where the deaths mount into the thousands some field will be shut off for a cemetery and there the bodies are buried, each grave receiving some kind of a cross wherever it is possible, but here no names can be attached. There will be many homes in which there will be vacant places and where it will not even be known where the absent ones are buried.

#### KAISER INSISTS ON ENTERING

“While here I heard a touching story about a lieutenant who was dying in the hospital, while the Kaiser was inspecting it. The Kaiser came to the room where the officer lay and the attendants asked him not to enter, as a man was dying. The Kaiser immediately pushed his way in, went up to the lieutenant, put his hand on the officer’s shoulder, and said in German: ‘Hello, here I am!’

“The lieutenant began murmuring with his eyes closed.

“‘I have been dreaming and I dreamed that my Kaiser came to me, put his hand on my shoulder and spoke to me.’

“‘Open your eyes,’ said the Kaiser.

“The lieutenant obeyed, smiled a smile of recognition, and then closed his eyes in the final sleep.

#### SURGEONS WIN IRON CROSSES

“So far, according to official announcement, there have been between 50,000 and 60,000 wounded and immediately after a great battle the sanitary corps has been unable to cope quickly enough with the work, but under ordinary circumstances the provision made has been ample. The number of the sanitary corps was determined upon the experience in the Russo-Japanese war, in which the losses were by no means so heavy as they have been in this war, but where in a few cases numbers have been lacking the surgeons and their assistants have put forth herculean efforts. Many surgeons are now wearing the iron cross for bravery, winning the insignia by dragging out wounded from the rain of bullets.

## TREATMENT OF PRISONERS OF WAR

The prisoner of war has been a conspicuous figure in the news that has come from the seething caldron of Europe. Many thousands of prisoners have been taken from the contending armies by their adversaries. For them the average American reader, perusing "war news" in the comfort of his security from the great conflict, has felt perhaps a grain of sorrow and wondered vaguely what horrors befell them after capture.

Early in September the German war department sent broadcast a statement that 30,000 Russians had been taken prisoners by the German soldiers after heavy battles in East Prussia, particularly around Ortelsburg, Hohenstein and Tanenburg. The statement mentioned the fact that among the prisoners were many Russian officers of high rank.

What is done with these prisoners, how they are handled and treated and whether high officials are punished more severely than mere privates, are questions frequently asked and seldom answered, for the procedure followed in such matters is but little known.

## REGULATIONS ARE HUMANE TO ALL

The international laws of warfare, embodied in The Hague conventions, the Geneva convention and the declaration of London, contain provisions that provide expressly what manner of treatment shall be accorded prisoners of hostile nations who are taken in battle. If these provisions of international law are lived up to, the lot of the prisoner of war is not so hard as many people have been led to believe.

After the first year of the war, however, stories of ill-treatment of prisoners in German prison camps began to be told, and before long there were many well-authenticated cases of the kind. Inhuman treatment was reported by English and Canadian prisoners, and protests were duly made by the British government through neutral channels. The growing shortage of food in Germany was alleged as the cause of some of the complaints, but cases of actual brutality, involving cowardly physical abuse and even killing were also reported. The nation which captures its enemy's soldiers and makes prisoners of them is held entirely responsible



for whatever happens and shoulders at once a responsibility that is commensurate with the number of prisoners who are taken and detained.

The law of warfare says that a prisoner must be as fair with his captors as they are with him. He must be "humanely treated," so it is prescribed, and when he is questioned by his captors he must give his true name and the rank he holds in the army which has been defeated and of which he was once a part. Contrary to general belief, he is not stripped of "everything" and thrown into a dungeon and fed on a crust of bread and a mug of stale water. His captors do not deprive him of his personal possessions, except weapons, horses and military papers.

Furthermore, they must give him complete religious liberty, and it is specifically decreed that he must be given opportunity to attend a church of the denomination to which he belongs. And there he may pray as much for the success of his own nation or the much-desired relief from detention as the state of his mind dictates.

#### PRISONERS MAY BE CONFINED

The prisoner of war may be interned in a town or a fort, or even a camp, according to the convenience of his captors, but the enemy may not confine him, except, the law says, as "an indispensable measure of safety," and then only as long as the circumstances make it necessary. Of course the law gives the commanding officer considerable leeway in such matters, for he is left to determine when the "indispensable" occasion arises.

At other times when the prisoner is at liberty, he is subject to all the rules and regulations of the army of the government that captured him, and if he refuses to obey the rules or acts in an insubordinate manner toward the officers in command, he may be punished and disciplined according to his offense. And here it is again left to the discretion of his captors as to what measure of punishment shall be inflicted upon him.

#### ATTEMPTS AT ESCAPE

If a prisoner of war attempts to escape and his captors are vigilant to the extent of retaking him before he leaves the territory they occupy, or before he has a chance to rejoin his own

army, he may be severely punished. On the other hand, if he eludes his captors and makes a clean getaway and his army is again unfortunate, and he is captured the second time, the perfectly good escape from previous captivity must go unpunished and he must be treated as a prisoner of war, just as though he had not made the successful dash for liberty and further glory.

The government that holds prisoners of war is chargeable with their maintenance and must provide them with food, clothing and shelter as good as that provided for its own troops. The officers of the captors are required to keep records of all the prisoners under their charge, and if relief societies, which have been extensively formed by the women of Europe and many American women as well, wish to minister to their needs and comforts, the officers in command must afford them every possible facility. And if the friends of prisoners or the welfare societies see fit to send them presents and clothing, medicine and other necessities, such goods must be admitted to them free of any war duty that might be imposed by the nation holding them, and the railroads owned by the government are bound to carry such supplies free of transportation charges.

#### CAPTIVES MUST BE PAID FOR WORK

Prisoners of war may be put to work by the government that captures them and the duties must be assigned with a view to their aptitude, fitness and rank. The tasks must not be unduly severe, so as to border on cruelty, and they must have no bearing whatever on the operations of the war. The prisoners must be paid for the work they do, moreover, at a rate equal to that being paid to the soldiers of the national army, and prisoners may be authorized to work for the public service, for private persons or on their own account.

The wages of these prisoners, the law says, must go toward improving their condition, and the balance must be paid them after their release, with the proper deduction for their board and keep. When officers of hostile armies who are captured are put to work they must get the same wage rate as is paid to the corresponding officers of the government whose captives they are. All these moneys must be ultimately refunded by their own governments to their captors after the war is over,

peace is declared and the intricate problems of indemnities come up for solution.

A prisoner of war may even be paroled by his captors, and this is done sometimes when he is disabled or there are circumstances that prompt his enemies to let him go to those who are near and dear to him. When parole is granted to a prisoner he makes a solemn pledge and promise that he will live up to the terms under which he is released, and even his own nation may not ask him to perform a service that is inconsistent with that pledge.

#### BREAKER OF A PAROLE

It goes hard with the prisoner on parole who is caught fighting against the nation that released him, for he is not entitled to be treated as a prisoner of war, and the judgment meted out to him is as terrible as it is sure. Certain codes of honor are supposed to be observed even in international warfare, and a soldier who breaks his word of honor is considered the most despicable of men.

## CHAPTER XXI

### HORRORS OF THE WAR

*American Relief for War-Stricken Peoples of Europe—Millions of Dollars Contributed in Cash and Gifts—Canada Aids the Belgians—Devastation of Poland Even Greater and More Terrible than that of Belgium.*

SOON after the world became aware of the fact that the German army's progress through Belgium on its dash to Paris in August of 1914 had resulted in the absolute devastation of the little buffer state, an enterprising and sympathetic American citizen, Mr. James Keeley, editor of the Chicago Herald, penned a remarkable open letter "to the Children of America," in which he suggested the sending of a "Christmas ship" to Europe, filled with gifts of a useful character for the little ones of all the belligerent nations. The response was immediate and most truly generous. Newspapers and civic organizations all over the United States joined in gathering from young and old the contributions that freighted a United States warship with a cargo of gifts worth over two million dollars, and at Yuletide these gifts were systematically distributed among the innocent victims of the war in all the countries concerned.

The idea of the Christmas ship was nobly conceived and splendidly executed. Rulers of the belligerent nations recognized the beauty of the idea and paused awhile in their martial activities to welcome and thank the American commissioner who enacted the role of an international Santa Claus. But the slaughter on the fighting lines of eastern and western Europe went on unabated and the peaceful symbolism of the Christmas ship was soon forgotten in the daily recurrence of battle and bloodshed.



## AWFUL CONDITIONS IN POLAND

While the frightful state of Belgium commanded the sympathy of the civilized world in the winter of 1914-15, the conditions in Poland were even worse. At the end of March the great Polish pianist, Ignace Paderewski, paid a visit to London on behalf of the suffering Poles and his efforts resulted in the formation of an influential relief committee. Among the members were such men as Premier Asquith, ex-Premier Balfour, Chancellor of the Exchequer Lloyd-George, Cardinal Bourne, archbishop of Westminster; Admiral Lord Charles Beresford and the Russian and French ambassadors. An American woman, Lady Randolph Churchill, also took an active part in the work of the committee, which soon succeeded in raising a large sum for the relief of the most urgent distress in Poland. While in London on his mission of mercy, Mr. Paderewski said:

"Is it the death agony or only the birth pangs? That is the question which every Pole throughout the world is asking himself as tragedy follows tragedy in the long martyrdom of our beloved nation. You have only heard the details of Belgium, but I tell you they are as nothing with what has happened in Poland.

"The scene of operations in Poland is seven times larger than that of Belgium, and she has had to endure seven times the torture. Remember, the battle of Europe is being fought in the east, not in the west, and while the tide of battle has reached a sort of ebb along the trenches about the frontiers of Alsace and Flanders, the great waves roll backward and forward from Germany to Russia and break always on Poland.

"Our country, in fact, is just as Belgium was called—the cockpit of Europe, and it may now be called the battlefield of the world, if not of civilization.

"It is only perhaps we Poles who have known to its utmost depths what this war has really meant. It is not only that there are 10,000,000 human beings on the verge of starvation, nay, actually perishing; there is worse than that.

"Remember that both Belgium and Poland are still under the yoke. The Russians, it is true, occupy some fifteen thousand miles of our country, but this is really nothing, for the

Germans occupy five-sixths of it, and the desolation passes all comprehension.

#### CALLS IT COMPULSORY SUICIDE

"As to actual battles, I can hardly speak of them. It is torture even to think of them. Only consider! Our one nation is divided as it were into three sections, which were thrust each against the others to work out their destruction. It is parricide! It is fratricide, nay suicide! Compulsory suicide! That is what it is!

"Listen to what it means to us all. I was told by a man from Austria that an army doctor, a Pole by birth, who was deputed to go over the Austrian battlefields and verify identification marks on the bodies, found among the 14,000 dead hardly any but Polish names. He looked in vain for any others, and in the end went mad with horror at the thought of it. Another story that came to me the other day told of another case of the tragedy of Poland which is almost too terrible for the human mind to contain. The incident took place during a charge. Both armies had been ordered to attack, and the Poles, as usual, were in the front lines. As they met in the shock they recognized each other.

"One poor fellow, as he was struck through by a bayonet, cried out in his death agony, 'Jesu Maria! I have five children! Jesu Maria!' The words went as straight to the brain of his conqueror as a dagger to the heart, and killed his reason. Somewhere among the madhouses of Europe there is a lunatic. He is not violent, but he never laughs. He only wanders about with the words of his dying victim, 'Ah, Jesu Maria! I have five children. Jesu Maria!'

"The promise of Grand Duke Nicholas that Poland shall be a nation once again went straight to the very heart of every one of our 25,000,000 fellow countrymen. That one promise has been sufficient to change the whole mentality of the nation and fill their souls with new hope. It has cleared up any doubt that might have existed in the minds of the Poles in Austria and Prussia as to what it is that the allies are fighting for—namely: the principles of nationality for which we have suffered, ah! how many centuries!"

## MILLIONS OF POLES DESTITUTE

The ruin wrought by war in Belgium affected 7,000,000 people. In Poland more than twice that number have been rendered destitute. Not less than 15,000 villages have been laid waste, burned, or damaged in Russian Poland alone. The loss in property has been estimated at \$500,000,000, but may reach double that sum.

In Galicia the conditions are reported to be equally appalling, though the smashup has not been as complete, because the Russians have been able to maintain their positions more permanently than they have in the district west and northeast of the Polish capital.

The greater part of Poland lying in a broad sweep of country west, southwest and northeast of Warsaw has been swept over and battered to pieces by shot and shell like the strip of Flanders on both sides of the Yser river.

Without any direct interest in the present great conflict, the unhappy Poles found themselves impressed into the armies of these three great powers and fighting against their own racial brethren. That meant that brother was to fight against brother, and as the stress of the war increased and the age limit was raised to 38 years and even higher, nearly every able-bodied Pole was impressed into service.

Almost the first move of the Russians at the outbreak of hostilities was to invade Galicia. This brought with it instantly all the most frightful horrors of war. Embracing as it does a large part of the grain-growing district of the Polish peoples, the devastation of Galicia meant suffering for not only that province, but for Russian Poland as well. The crops had only been partially harvested by August, when the war began.

The panic of war stopped the work in the fields, even where the peasants were not compelled to flee before the invader. The men were called to the colors and the crops were allowed to rot in the fields. Numerous towns were sacked.

The advance to Lemberg by the Russians was swift. In the panic that followed this great city of 200,000 had scarcely 70,000 left when the invaders took possession. Families were broken up; none of the refugees had time to take supplies or clothes.

Germany's first move against Russia came from the great

fortresses along the Oder and Vistula. All of western Poland was overrun. When the Russian advance from Warsaw drove back the invaders, the scars of the conflict left this section of Poland badly battered. Then came Von Hindenburg's victorious armies, and again this section was torn by shot and shell and wasted. While some of the larger places, such as Lodz, Plock, Lowicz, Tchenstochow and Petrokov, were spared, the smaller towns, villages, and hamlets in the direct line of battle suffered equally from the defenders and invaders.

All the section to the northeast of Warsaw between the East Prussian frontier and the Bug, Narew, and Niemen rivers has suffered even a worse fate, as the bitterness engendered by the devastation worked by the Russians in East Prussia led to reprisals that not even the strict discipline of the German army could curb. Not only were the peasants' homes pounded to bits by the opposing artillery fire, but the armies as they fought back and forth took all the cattle, horses, and stock that came to their hands. Disease added to the suffering of the stricken people.

#### THOUSANDS OF VILLAGES DESTROYED

Henry Sienkiewicz, the great Polish writer and author of "Quo Vadis," a refugee in Switzerland, said, on March 15, 1915:

"In the kingdom of Poland alone there are 15,000 villages burned or damaged; a thousand churches and chapels destroyed. The homeless villagers have sought shelter in the forests, where it is no exaggeration to say that women and children are dying from cold and hunger by thousands daily.

"Poland comprises 127,500 square kilometers. One hundred thousand of these have been devastated by the battling armies. More than a million horses and two million head of horned cattle have been seized by the invaders, and in the whole of the 100,000 square kilometers in the possession of the soldiers not a grain of corn, not a scrap of meat, nor a drop of milk remain for the civil population.



"The material losses up to the present are estimated at 1,000,000,000 rubles (\$500,000,000). No fewer than 400,000 workmen have lost their means of livelihood.

"The state of things in Galicia is just as dreadful for the civil population—innocent victims of the war. Of 75,000 square kilometers all except 5,000 square kilometers around Cracow are in possession of the Russians. They commandeered 900,000 horses and about 200,000 head of horned cattle and seized all the grain, part of the salt fields, and the oil wells.

"The once rich province is a desert. Over a million inhabitants have sought refuge in other parts of Austria, and they are in sheer destitution."

Truly, "War is hell!"

#### RELIEF FOR BELGIAN SUFFERERS

Following the invasion and over-running of Belgium by the Germans, the problem of feeding the Belgian population became an urgent one. The invaders left the problem largely to the charitable sympathies of the civilized world, and from almost every quarter of the globe aid was sent in money or provisions for the stricken people. In spite of the enormous war drains upon the resources of the British Empire, every one of the Overseas Dominions did its full share in Belgian relief, while the United States, through the Rockefeller Foundation and other agencies, as well as the South American countries, also contributed to alleviate the suffering in the little kingdom. The contributions continued during more than two years and the relief was administered most efficiently by means of commissions.

#### RELIEF ASKED FOR SERBIA

On April 3, 1915, the leading United States newspapers printed an appeal received from Nish, the war capital of Serbia, which set forth a terrible situation in terms that confirmed a report already made public by Sir Thomas Lipton, who dedicated his famous steam yacht, the *Erin*, as a hospital ship for use in the Mediterranean, and visited Serbia in February and March. The appeal was dated February 23 and said in substance as follows:

"Typhus is raging in Serbia, and unless immediate aid be sent the mortality will be appalling.

"Typhus is a filth disease and is spread by lice, which flourish only in dirt. There are not enough buildings to house the sick and they lie huddled together on dirty straw.

"They have not changed their clothes for six months, and consequently personal cleanliness, which is absolutely essential in checking the disease, is impossible. They cannot get proper nourishment, as there is not enough available, nor is there money to buy it if it were.

"The doctors can usually only work for two weeks before contracting the disease, as they have no means of protecting themselves. Yet they volunteer for typhus hospitals, knowing that they are probably going to their death, for the mortality is over 50 per cent.

"The following four things are most urgently needed:

"1. Tents and portable chicken runs, as these make excellent houses. There is no lumber in Serbia, so nothing can be built here.

"2. Beds and bed linen. It is impossible to keep straw free from lice.

"3. Underclothing. Dirty clothes make an ideal breeding place for lice.

"4. Disinfectants and whitewash.

"Speedy help is essential, as every day's delay costs hundreds of lives."

The response to this touching appeal was immediate and generous, Germans and Austrians in America contributing freely. A large amount of cash and supplies for the Austrian prisoners was sent to the American consul at Nish, who was also acting consul for Germany and Austria in Serbia.

#### GERMAN REPORT OF VILLAGES RAZED

A dispatch from Berlin by wireless March 23 stated that according to a report received there from Cracow, the damages due to the war in Poland and Galicia at that time amounted to 5,000,000,000 marks (\$1,250,000,000).

In Galicia 100 cities and market places and 6,000 villages had been more or less damaged, while 250 villages had been destroyed. Horses to the number of 800,000 and 500,000 head of cattle, with all grain and other provisions in Galicia had been taken away by the Russians.

## CHAPTER XXII

### LATER EVENTS OF THE WAR

*Results of the Battle of the Aisne—Fierce Fighting in Northern France—Developments on the Eastern Battle Front—The Campaign in the Pacific—Naval Activities of the Powers.*

WITH a battle front reaching from the Belgian coast on the North Sea to the frontier of Switzerland, or a total distance of 362 miles, the operations in the western theater of war toward the end of October were being conducted on a more gigantic scale than was ever witnessed before. On both sides reinforcements were being rushed to the front. German efforts to break through the Allies' lines were concentrated on the main center at Verdun and on the right flank of the Allies' left wing, above its elbow, between Noyon and Arras, while powerful coincidental movements were in progress on the extreme western end of the line in Belgium and on the southeastern wing in Alsace. At Verdun continuous fighting of the fiercest character had been going on for over sixty days, surpassing in time and severity any individual battle in history. The army of the Crown Prince had been unable to force the French positions in the vicinity of Verdun and the check sustained by the Germans at this point early in the campaign constituted a principal cause of General von Kluck's failure in his dash toward Paris.

All along the tremendous battle front the allies' lines as a rule held firm in the thirteenth week of the war, when the great conflict had entered upon what may well be called its fourth stage. The third stage may be said to have ended with the fall of Antwerp and the subjugation of all Belgium but a small portion of its southwestern territory. On the main front the Allies were maintaining the offensive at some vital points, while repulsing the German assaults at others. One or two

of the French forts commanding Verdun had fallen but the main positions remained in the hands of the French, and all along the line it was a case of daily give-and-take.

#### FIERCE FIGHTING IN FLANDERS

After capturing Antwerp the Germans pushed on to Ostend, an "open" or unfortified town, and occupied it with slight resistance from the Belgian army, which was reforming its broken ranks to the south, between Ostend and the French frontier, and preparing to contest the passage of the Kaiser's forces across the River Yser. Moving northward from Lille, the Allies encountered the Germans at Armentières, which was occupied by a Franco-British force and there was also fierce fighting at Ypres, where there is a canal to the sea. For more than a week the Belgians gallantly held the banks of the Yser in spite of the utmost endeavors of the Germans to cross, and it was not until October 24 that the latter finally succeeded in getting south of the river, with the French seaport of Dunkirk as their next objective point. Bloody engagements were fought at Nieuport, Dixmude, Deynze and La Bassée.

At this time the battle line formed almost a perpendicular from Noyon in France north to the Belgian coast, south of Ostend. A battle raged for several days in West Flanders and Northern France and both sides claimed successes. The losses of the Allies and the Germans were estimated in the thousands and the wounded were sent back to the rear by the trainful. In the Flemish territory the flat nature of the terrain, with its numerous canals and almost total absence of natural cover, made the losses especially severe. The passage of the Yser cost the Germans dearly and Dixmude was strewn with their dead. And their advance could get no farther.

The necessity of holding the French ports, Dunkirk and Calais, was fully realized by the Allies, who threw large reinforcements into their northern line. The Germans also drew heavily on their center and left wing to reinforce the right, and for a while the forces opposing one another at the extreme western end of the battle front were greater than at any other point. The Germans were firmly held on a line running from south of Ostend to Thourout, Roulers and Menin, the last mentioned place being on the border north of Lille. Flanking attacks being no longer possible, as the western flanks of both



armies rested on the North Sea, the Germans were compelled to make a frontal assault along the line formed by the Belgian frontier. As the Belgian troops, assisted by a British naval brigade, were pushed back from the Yser, they were gradually merged into the army of the allies, by whom they were received with the honors due the men who had made, for twelve long weeks, such a gallant and determined defense of their country against invasion and despoilment.

#### BRITISH WARSHIPS AID BELGIANS

Soon after the German occupation of Ostend, several British warships shelled the German positions in and around the city and aided in hampering the German advance along the coast. The principal vessels engaged in this work were three monitors which were being completed in England for the Brazilian government when the war started and which were bought by the admiralty.

These monitors, which had been renamed Mersey, Humber and Severn, drew less than nine feet of water and could take up positions not far from shore, from which their 6-inch guns and 4.7-inch howitzers, of which each vessel carried two, were able to throw shells nearly four miles across country, the range being given them by airmen.

French warships of light draft later joined the British monitors and destroyers and assisted in patrolling the coast, shelling German positions wherever the latter could be discovered by the aeroplane scouts. One reported feat of the naval fire was the destruction of the headquarters of a German general, Von Trip, in which the general and his staff lost their lives.

From time to time German aerial attacks were made in the vicinity of Dover, across the Straits, but these without exception proved to be without military importance in their results. Steps were taken to organize anti-aircraft artillery forces on the eastern coast of England and the continued failure of Zeppelin attacks, annoying as they were, soon restored the equanimity of the British public in this respect.

#### INDIAN TROOPS IN ACTION

The first word of the employment of British Indian troops at the front came on October 27, when it was reported that in the fighting near Lille a reserve force of Sikhs and Ghurkas,

the former with bayonets and the latter with the kukri (a short, curved sword) played havoc with an attacking force of Germans. "Never has there been such slaughter," said the dispatches. "Twenty thousand German dead and wounded, nearly half the attacking force, lay upon the field, while the British losses did not exceed 2,000."

#### THE FRENCH CAMPAIGN IN ALSACE

At the end of October the French right wing in Alsace-Lorraine was reported to be making distinct progress. It was said to be advancing through the passes of the Vosges in the midst of heavy snowstorms. Paris reported that the Germans, who were attempting a movement against the great French frontier fortress of Belfort, had been driven back with heavy losses, while from other sources the Germans were reported to be bringing up heavy mortars for the bombardment of Belfort. There were persistent reports of German defeats in Alsace, but these were repeatedly denied in Berlin. The situation in the territory coveted by the French appeared to resemble that farther west—neither side was making much headway.

#### THE RUSSIAN CAMPAIGN

In the eastern theater of war the conflict during October was waged with fortunes that favored, first one side and then the other. Contradictory claims were put forth from time to time by Petrograd, Vienna and Berlin, but the net result of the operations at the end of the thirteenth week of the war appeared to be that while the intended Russian march on Berlin had been completely checked, the Germans had been repulsed with heavy losses in all their attempts to cross the Vistula and occupy Warsaw, the capital of Russian Poland, which was at one time seriously threatened.

The fighting along the Vistula was fierce and prolonged for several days at a time. The Germans made numerous attempts to cross the river at different points by means of pontoon bridges, but these were destroyed by the Russian artillery as fast as completed. The slaughter on both sides was considerable. On October 28 the Russian battle front reached from Suwalki on the north to Sambor and Stryj on the south, a distance of about 267 miles. The German opera-

tions on the Vistula were still in progress and Poland furnished the main arena of battle. East Prussia was practically free from Russian troops, save at a few points near the boundary, but they strongly maintained their positions in Galicia.

#### THE AUSTRO-SERVIAN CAMPAIGN

After eleven weeks' bombardment by the Austrians, the Servian defenders of Belgrade were still bravely resisting, although half the city had been destroyed. The situation was such as to cause at once astonishment, pity and admiration.

In the open field the Servians continued to hold their own against the Austrian forces opposed to them. Their Montenegrin allies, under General Bukovitch, were reported to have defeated 16,000 Austrians, supported by six batteries of artillery, at a point northeast of Serajevo. The battle terminated in a hand-to-hand bayonet conflict which lasted four hours. The Austrians are said to have lost 2,500 men, killed and wounded, while the Montenegrins claimed that their losses amounted to only 300 men.

#### THE CAMPAIGN IN THE PACIFIC

Beginning with the loss of its colonies in the China sea, Germany was compelled to witness during the first two years of the war the passing into enemy hands of practically all its colonial possessions, which more than balanced its temporary possession of enemy soil in Europe. One by one its colonies in Asia and Africa were captured, and in these operations not only the Japanese but the Belgians assisted, the latter in Africa.

Late in October, 1914, the Japanese received the surrender of Tsing Tau, the important German city in Kiauchau, China. The place had been battered for weeks by land and sea by the Japanese forces, and the surrender was ordered, it was said, to save the German forces and civilians from certain annihilation if a defense by the garrison to the end were to be carried on. German warships were powerless to assist the beleaguered city, as Japanese and English war vessels had driven them far from the coast of China.

The Japanese cruiser Takachiho was sunk by a mine in Kiauchau Bay on the night of October 17. One officer and nine members of the crew are known to have been saved.

The cruiser carried a crew of 284 men. Her main battery consisted of eight 6-inch guns.

#### MAIN FLEETS STILL INACTIVE

Up to the last week in October the main fleets of the warring powers were still inactive, but rumors of intended German naval activity were frequent. The cat-and-mouse attitude of the British and German fleets in the North Sea was continued, the Germans lying snug in their ports, protected by their mines and submarines, while the British battleships lay in wait at all points of possible egress. The situation tried the patience of the people of both countries and there were frequent demands for action by the great and costly naval armaments. But the Germans apparently were not ready to risk a general engagement, and the British could not force them to come out and fight. The British admirals, therefore had, perforce, to pursue a policy of "watchful waiting," irksome as it was to all concerned, and "the tireless vigil in the North Sea," as it was termed by Mr. Asquith, was maintained day and night. No sea captain becalmed in the doldrums ever whistled for a wind more earnestly than the British Jack tars prayed for a chance at the enemy during those three months of playing the cat to Germany's mouse; and on the other hand, the German sailors were, no doubt, equally desirous of a chance to demonstrate the fighting abilities of their brand-new battleships. All were equally on the *qui vive*, for any hour might bring to the Germans the order to put to sea, and to the British the welcome cry of "Enemy in sight!"

#### CARING FOR BELGIAN REFUGEES

The plight of the Belgian people, including the refugees in Holland, England and France, was pitiable in the extreme and by the end of October had roused the sympathy of the entire world. A conservative estimate placed the number of Belgians expatriated at 1,500,000 out of a population of 7,000,000. On October 26 Mr. Brand Whitlock, United States minister to Belgium, reported that the entire country was on the verge of starvation, while Holland and England had their hands full caring for the Belgians who had sought refuge in those countries. In eight cities of Holland there were said to be 500,000 Belgian refugees. Over 70,000 arrived in London in one week and a central committee in London had twenty-



seven subcommittees at work in different cities in England, Scotland and Wales, placing the refugees in homes as rapidly as possible. The humanitarian problem of taking care of the Belgians was one of tremendous responsibility, but the people of the three countries in which most of them sought refuge rose nobly to the occasion and spared no effort to lessen their sufferings.

#### MORE CANADIANS FOR THE FRONT

It was announced in Ottawa, Canada, on October 19 that the Dominion Government had decided to put 30,000 more men in training in Canada, to be despatched to England when ready. As soon as the first unit of 15,000 was embarked, probably in December, another 15,000 men would be enlisted to replace them, the plan being to keep 30,000 men continuously in training, to be drawn upon in units of 10,000 or 15,000 as soon as equipped, during the continuance of hostilities in Europe. Thus with the 32,000 Canadian volunteers already landed in England, and 8,000 under arms guarding strategic points in the Dominion, Canada would soon raise 100,000 men as part of her contribution to Imperial defense.

But this was only a beginning. Later in the war Canada stood ready to furnish half a million men to the cause of the Empire, if required. Nearly 360,000 of that number had been enlisted when the war was two years old. The greatest problems were encountered in the first year, or rather in the first six months of the war, after which time efforts were systematized, the military machine worked smoothly, and the Dominion's splendid response to the call to arms was maintained throughout. General prosperity in the face of adverse conditions happily attended this record of patriotic achievement, and the predominant spirit in Canada was one of buoyant optimism as to the inevitable outcome of the great conflict.

#### THE "EMDEN" DRIVEN ASHORE A WRECK

During the first three months of the war the German cruiser Emden, operating principally in the Indian ocean, played havoc with British merchantmen, sinking over twenty vessels engaged in far Eastern commerce, besides a Russian cruiser and a French torpedo-boat. But she met her match in the second week of November, when she was engaged off the Cocos or

Keeling group of islands, southwest of Java, by the fast Australian cruiser Sydney and driven ashore a burning wreck after an hour's fight, with a loss of 280 men.

#### NAVAL BATTLE OFF CHILEAN COAST

Early in November a fleet of five German cruisers, under Admiral von Spee, encountered a British squadron composed of the cruisers Good Hope, Monmouth and Glasgow, in command of Rear-Admiral Sir Christopher Cradock, off the coast of Chile, in the Southern Pacific. Despite a raging gale, a long-range battle ensued, resulting in the defeat of the British and the loss of the flagship Good Hope, with the admiral and all her crew, and of the cruiser Monmouth. The Glasgow escaped in a damaged condition. The loss of life was about 1,000, officers and men.

Up to November 15, the struggle in the coast region of Belgium continued with terrific intensity and appalling loss of life on both sides. The Germans occupied Dixmude November 11, only to lose it on November 13, after a fierce attack by reinforced British troops.

#### DAILY COST OF WAR

The daily cost of the present war to the nations engaged in the struggle is estimated at not less than \$54,000,000 a day—a sum which fairly staggers the imagination. This enormous cost of the armies in the field gives a decided advantage to the nation best supplied with the “sinews of war” and may contribute to a shortening of hostilities. War is indeed a terrible drain upon the resources of a nation and only a few there are that can stand many months of war expenditures like those of August-October, 1914, amounting in the grand aggregate to nearly five billions of dollars (\$5,000,000,000).

#### TURKEY ENTERS THE WAR

On October 29 an act which was regarded in Russia as equivalent to a declaration of war by Turkey was committed at Theodosia, the Crimean port, when that town was bombarded without notice by the cruiser Breslau, flying the Turkish flag, but commanded by a German officer and manned by a German crew. The Breslau was a former German ship, and was said to have been purchased by the Turkish government, with the German battleship Goeben, when they sought refuge in the Dardanelles at the beginning of the war, from the French and British fleets in the Mediterranean.

## FOURTH MONTH OF THE WAR

The month of November, the fourth month of the war, was marked by the heaviest losses to all the nations concerned, but made little change in the general situation.

Along the Aisne the battle begun early in September continued intermittently. Both sides literally dug themselves in and along the battle line in many places, the hostile trenches were separated by only a few yards. At the end of the month the burrowing had been succeeded by tunneling, and both sides prepared for a winter of spasmodic action. It was a military deadlock, but a deadlock full of danger for the side that first developed a weak point in its far-flung front.

With the utmost fairness and impartiality it can be said that at the beginning of December both the allied armies and the German forces facing them from the Belgian coast east and south to the borders of Alsace-Lorraine were exhausted by the strenuous efforts of the campaign. By December 5, the 130th day of the war, after a seven-weeks' struggle by the Germans for the possession of the French and Belgian coast, there was a general cessation of offensive operations by both sides and the indications were that this condition was due to pure physical weariness of leaders and men. The world had never before witnessed such strenuous military operations as those of the preceding three months and the temporary exhaustion of the armies therefore was not surprising.

In the last days of November, the city of Belgrade fell into the hands of the Austrians after a siege that had lasted, with continual bombardments, since the war began. The city was finally taken by storm at the point of the bayonet in a furious charge which fairly overwhelmed the gallant defense of the Servians.

In this month it began to be generally realized that the war was likely to be of prolonged duration. Strenuous preparations for the winter campaign were made on both sides and the recruiting for the new British army surpassed all previous records, the serious menace of the war being at last recognized.

The month of November was also marked by enormous contributions of cash and food stuffs by the people of the United States for the relief of the impoverished and suffering

Belgians. The people of Chicago alone contributed over \$500,000 and this was but a sample of the manner in which Americans rose to the opportunity to alleviate the distress in Belgium. "The United States has saved us from starvation," said a Belgian official on December 1.

The casualties of all the armies in the field during the month of November exceeded those of any previous period of the war. Basing an estimate of the total casualties upon the same percentage as that employed in the table given on another page, it is therefore safe to say that up to December 5 the total losses of the combatant nations in killed, wounded and missing aggregated not less than 3,500,000 men.

#### DECEMBER IN THE TRENCHES

The month of December, 1914, the fifth month of the war, registered but little change in the relative positions of the combatant nations. In the west the lines held firm from the North Sea to Switzerland. Daily duels of artillery and daily assaults here and there along the battle fronts proved unavailing, so far as any change in general conditions was concerned. Frequently the assaults were of a desperate character, especially in Flanders, where in the middle of the month the Allies assumed the offensive all along the line and sturdily strove to push back the German front in Belgium. But the utmost valor and persistence in attack were invariably met by resolute resistance. Both sides were strongly entrenched and the gain of a few yards today was usually followed by the loss of a few yards tomorrow.

Never before in the history of warfare had the science of entrenchment been developed to such an extent. The German, French, British and Belgian armies literally burrowed in the earth along a battle front of 150 miles. In many places the hostile trenches were separated by only a few yards, and mining was frequently resorted to. Tunneling toward each other, both the contending forces occasionally succeeded in blowing up the enemy's trench, and whole companies of unsuspecting troops were sometimes annihilated in this way. In the trenches themselves scenes unparalleled in warfare were witnessed. With the arrival of winter the troops on either side proceeded



to secure what comfort they could by all manner of clever and unique devices. Winter clothing was provided as far as possible, but on both sides there was inevitable suffering for lack of suitable supplies for the winter campaign, and individual initiative had frequently to supply the deficiencies of official forethought.

Many unique features of trench life were developed during the first month of winter warfare. Two-story trenches became common on both sides of the firing line. Bombproof underground quarters for staff and commanding officers were constructed, and these were fitted up so as to provide all the comforts of the winter cantonments of old-time warfare. The ever-necessary telephone was installed at frequent points in trenches that stretched for scores of miles in practically unbroken lines. Board roofs were built and provision made for heating the dugouts in which thousands of men passed many days and nights before their reliefs arrived. On the German side miles of trenches were provided with stockade walls, leaving ample room inside for the rapid movement of troops. The British built trenches with lateral individual dugouts at right angles to the main trench, protecting the men against flank fire—and these aroused the admiration even of their enemies. In the French trenches the ingenuity of a French engineer provided a system of hot shower baths on the firing line, and from all points along the deadlocked battle front came stories of the remarkable manner in which the troops of all the armies speedily accommodated themselves to unprecedented conditions and maintained a spirit of cheerfulness truly marvelous under the circumstances, especially as there was no cessation of the constant endeavor to gain ground from the enemy and no end to the daily slaughter.

#### IN THE GERMAN TRENCHES

A correspondent with the German army who visited the firing line in the Argonne forest late in November, by special permission of the German crown prince, described the conditions in the trenches as follows: "Here in the now famous Argonne forest—the scene of some of the war's most desperate fighting—the Germans are trenching and mining their

way forward, literally yard by yard. This afternoon I reached the foremost trench, south of Grandpré. About 160 feet ahead of me is the French trench. Picture to yourself a canebrake-like woods of fishpoles ranging in size from half an inch to saplings of two and three inches thick and so dense that you can hardly see forty yards even now when the leaves have fallen. Among these is a scattering of big trees, the trunks of which are veritable mines of bullets.

"Irregular lines of deep yellow clay trenches zigzag for miles. Other trenches run back from these to what looks like a huge Kansas 'prairie-dog town'—human burrows, where thousands of soldiers are literally living underground. From the lines of trenches running parallel to one another comes a constant spitting, sputtering, popping of rifles, making the woods resound like a Chinese New Year in San Francisco or an old-time Fourth of July. Field guns and hand grenades furnish the 'cannon-cracker' effect. Through the woods the high-noted 'zing zing' of bullets sounds like a swarm of angry bees, while high overhead shrapnel and shell go shrieking on their way. Here and there you may see spades full of earth being thrown up as if by invisible hands, marking the onward work of the German gopher-like pioneers in their subterranean warfare. That is the Argonne forest.

"As the trench I am in was still in the hands of the French three days ago and as the crown prince is advancing steadily, the trenches are temporary and contain little in the way of comforts. In deep niches cut in the side the soldiers rest, play cards or even sleep on damp ledges between fights.

"The trenches also serve as a cemetery. When the enemy's fire is so hot that it is impossible to stick your head out or to take the dead out to bury them, the grave is made in a niche or a ledge cut into the side of the trench."

#### GERMAN ADVANCE HALTED

The western operations in December made it clear that the German advance to the Channel ports of France had been definitely halted. In the terrible battle of Ypres in Flanders, following the prolonged engagements along the Yser river, the Allies succeeded in repulsing the desperate German on-

slaught, and the German offensive was brought to a full stop. Towns and villages in Flanders, in Artois and in Champagne, that had been captured in the early German rush, were retaken one by one by the Belgians, French and British, slowly but surely, until the Germans were forced to act upon the defensive along a line of entrenchments prepared to enable them to keep open their communications through Belgium with their great base at Aix-la-Chapelle.

An incident of the desperate fighting at Ypres, in which British and French troops practically annihilated six German regiments, including the crack Second regiment of Prussian Guards, has been graphically described by an eye-witness as follows:

"A long valley stretches out before us and the little rise on which we stand—about fifty feet above the plain—commands it. The British guns are shooting almost horizontally at the German infantry trudging through the mud 2,000 yards away.

"I count easily five regiments together, but further to the right a sixth one evidently wards off a flank attack on the part of the French colonial troops. The lone regiment is the Second Prussian regiment of the guard, the emperor's own, the élite of the Kaiser's army, 2,500 of the brawniest, most disciplined men in the world. It is now 1 o'clock. In one hour only 300 of these men will leave the field.

"A gust of wind brings to our ears the sound of music. The guards' band is encouraging the men. At the foot of the small hill on which we stand are twenty lines of trenches filled with Scotch and English infantry. The men are silently awaiting the attack. Not a rifle is being fired. The trenches are the Germans' goal; these and the British batteries once taken, the road into Ypres is clear.

"In the valley the Germans halt. The range is only 1,500 yards now and every British shot is telling. The effects are appalling. The gray masses move onward once more, seem to hesitate, but sharp bugle blasts launch them forward again and on the run they come for the trenches.

"At 1,000 yards our batteries again stop them. Whole rows are mowed down, vast spaces appearing between the ranks. The companies intermingle, then the regiments them-

selves seem to amalgamate and melt into one another. Officers are seen galloping along the sides, evidently trying to bring order out of chaos.

"The artillerymen work silently, the perspiration streaming down their cheeks, and continue sending on their messengers of death.

"The Second regiment of the Guard alone, off to the right, seems untouched, and on it comes. Suddenly the sound of a bagpipe is heard. The Scots are awake. From the trenches an avalanche rushes forward toward the disordered Germans.

"At the double-quick Scots and English, a few feet apart, yelling like demons, pounce on the attackers. Rifles are silent. It is cold steel alone. Our battery captains cry 'Stop firing.' There is a risk of shelling our own men now. We become spectators.

"On the right the Guard has suddenly turned toward the hill. A bugle blast and the mass of men half turns and seems to be thrown on the back of the British, outflanked. The situation is desperate. Our artillery is useless.

"Listen! Over the valley, rising louder and still louder, comes a song which the Germans have heard before. A crash of brass, a hoarse roar fills the air, echoing across the valley, drowning the shouts and curses of the human wave fighting below.

"The 'Marseillaise'—the English and Scots have heard it. 'Hold tight, the French are coming,' we scream. They cannot hear us, but we must shout—the strain is too intense.

"Past our batteries a company of Spahis rushes like a cyclone. Two more follow, then the Zouaves. Rifles close to their hips, bayonets low, throwing out over the valley its glorious anthem, the human flood crashes against the Guard.

"The lines waver in an indescribable jumble of gray, yellow, blue, and red uniforms, then seem to bounce back from the very force of the shock. Men appear, raised from their feet, and raised high in the air.

"Caught in a vise between the British and the French, the Guard alone remains. Ten times the shattered remnants of the Kaiser's proud regiment charged, and ten times was thrown back, first against the French, then against the Brit-



ish. Crying, 'Comrades, comrades!' hundreds began throwing their guns aside.

"At 2 o'clock it was over. The Allies had lost 1,200 men. Only 300 prisoners remained of the Second Prussian regiment of the Guard.

#### PROGRESS OF THE EASTERN CAMPAIGN

The campaign in the eastern theater of war attracted the attention of the whole world in December, when the German operations begun in November under Field Marshal Von Hindenburg, the victor of Tannenberg earlier in the war, were continued with varying successes. Early in the month the Germans captured Lodz, the second city and chief manufacturing center of Russian Poland, with a population of about 500,000, after a bombardment of a week's duration, the city being set on fire in many places. The Russians made a desperate resistance, and the fighting around Lodz constituted the most bitter struggle of the entire war on this front. A general Russian retirement in the direction of Warsaw followed, but the Germans failed in their subsequent efforts to envelop the flanks of the Russian army to the north and south. Russian reinforcements from Warsaw coming up promptly, the Germans were in their turn compelled to retire. Two German army corps were then practically cut off by the Russians, but made a successful retreat, fighting their way back to safety with the bayonet in one of the most brilliant exploits of the war. Thus the net result of the German campaign in Poland in December left the general situation there practically unchanged and the Russian front unbroken, while in East Prussia, too, the Russian invasion continued despite German efforts to roll it back across the frontier.

The losses on both sides in the eastern campaign in December were appalling, the fighting being of the fiercest possible nature. A typical struggle occurred a few miles west of Lodz in the little churchyard of Beschici, where the Russians, in one of the final phases of the struggle for the Polish city, showed that in spite of their defeats and discouragements they knew how to fight and die. This churchyard lies on a small eminence which formed a salient into the German lines. The

Germans were able to make an attack from three sides with infantry and artillery. All the Russian trenches were enfiladed by shrapnel from one direction or another, but the Russians clung to their positions obstinately. When the Germans finally captured the trenches 878 Russian corpses were found in a space about eighty yards square.

It was resistance of this nature which the Germans had to overcome in order to capture Lodz. Later in December it became clear that Russia was getting her millions into the field and that the strategy of the commander-in-chief, the Grand Duke Nicholas, would soon be aided by the weight of overwhelming numbers.

#### BELGIUM THANKS AMERICA

During November and December Madame Vandervelde, wife of a member of the Belgian cabinet, toured the United States soliciting aid for her suffering fellow-countrymen. The response everywhere was extremely generous and in appreciation of the aid given the war victims of her country Madame Vandervelde penned the following poem, entitled "Belgium Thanks America:"

Today it's Christmas morning; we hear no Christmas bell,  
But still we tell the story which once we loved to tell.  
"Good will! Good will!" we read it, and "Peace!"—we hear the name,  
And crouch among the ruins, and watch the cruel flame,  
And hear the children crying, and turn our eyes away—  
For them there's neither bread nor home this happy Christmas day.

But look! there comes a message from far across the deep,  
From hearts that still can pity and eyes that still can weep—  
O little lips a-hunger! O faces pale and wan!  
There's somewhere—somewhere—peace on earth, somewhere good will to man.  
Across the waste of waters, a thousand leagues away,  
There's some one still remembers that here it's Christmas day.

O God of Peace, remember, and in thy mercy keep  
The hearts that still can pity, the eyes that still can weep,  
Amid the shame and torment, the ruins and the graves,  
To theirs, the land of freedom, from ours, the land of slaves,  
What answer can we send them? We can but kneel and pray:  
God grant—God grant to them, at least, a happy Christmas day.

## GRIM REALITIES OF THE WAR

A vivid picture of the horrible realities of the war, as seen in a field hospital near the firing line, was given in "The New Republic" of November 28 by Mr. Henry W. Nevinson, who described his experiences at Dixmude in Belgium as follows:

"When I entered Dixmude one night in the middle of October the first bombardment was over, but from both sides the heavy shells flew across the town. From the end of the main street came an incessant noise of rifles and machine guns. Unaimed bullets wailed through the air, and pattered as they struck the walls. Flaming houses shed a light upon the ruined streets, but only one house looked inhabited, and all the others which were not burning stood silent and empty, expecting destruction.

"That one house was used as an outlying hospital or dressing-place nearest the firing line, and the wounded had to be led or carried only two or three hundred yards to reach it. They sat on the dining-room chairs or lay helpless on the floor. A few surgeons were at work upon them, cutting off loose fingers and throwing them into basins, plugging black holes that welled up instantly through the plug, straining bandages, which in a minute ceased to be white, round legs and heads. The smell of fresh, warm blood was thick on the air. One man lay deep in his blood. You could not have supposed that anyone had so much in him. Another's head had lost on one side all human semblance, and was a hideous pulp of eye and ear and jaw. Another, with chest torn open, lay gasping for the few minutes left of life. And as I waited for the ambulance more were brought in, and always more.

"In a complacent and comfortable account of hospital work I lately read that 'deaths from wounds are happily rare; one surgeon put the number as low as 2 per cent.' Happy hospital, far away in Paris or some Isle of the Blest! The further from the front the fewer the deaths, because so many have died already.

"In the nearest hospitals to the front, half the wounded, and on some days more than half, die where they are put. Often they die in the ambulance, and one's care in drawing them out is wasted, for they will never feel again. I found

one always took the same care, though the greenish-yellow of the exposed hands or feet showed the truth. Laid on the floor of the main hospital itself, some screamed or moaned, some whimpered like sick children, especially in their sleep, some lay quiet, with glazed eyes out of which sight was passing. Mere fragments of mankind were there extended, limbs pounded into mash, heads split open, intestines hanging out from gashes. Did those bones—did that exquisite network of living tissue and contrivances for life—cost no more in the breeding than to be hewed and smashed and pulped like this? Shrapnel—shrapnel—it was nearly always the same. For this is, above all, an artillery war, and both sides are justly proud of their efficiency in guns.”

#### GOVERNMENT RETURNS TO PARIS

Confidence of safety having been restored in the French capital, the Paris bourse reopened on December 7, after having been closed since September 3. President Poincaré transferred his official residence back to Paris from Bordeaux on December 9 and a meeting of the French cabinet was held in Paris on December 11, for the first time since the capital was threatened by the German advance at the end of August.

#### BRITISH NAVAL VICTORY

In the second week of December the British navy avenged the defeat of Rear Admiral Cradock's squadron off the Chilean coast in November, when a powerful special fleet, under Vice-Admiral Sir Frederick Sturdee, encountered the German cruiser fleet, under Admiral von Spee, off the Falkland Islands and practically destroyed it. Only one of the five German cruisers escaped. The flagship *Scharnhorst*, the *Gneisenau*, the *Leipzig* and the *Nurnberg* were sunk in the action, which lasted for five hours, and the German admiral with three of his sons and most of the officers and men of the German crews perished. The British losses were inconsiderable.

This sea fight in the South Atlantic was the most important engagement in which British men-of-war had participated since the era of Napoleon. The sailing of the British fleet in quest of Admiral von Spee's squadron had been kept secret and the news of the victory was therefore especially welcome to the people of England, who had been considerably worried



by a succession of minor naval losses inflicted by German cruisers, submarines and mines. The action was gallantly fought on both sides. The advantage in weight of metal and range of guns lay on the side of the British, and the battle was decided at long range. Admiral von Spee, refusing to surrender, in spite of the odds against him, went down with his ship. The flagship of the victorious admiral, Sir Frederick Sturdee, was the modern battle cruiser *Invincible*. A number of the German sailors were rescued by the British after the engagement and sent as prisoners of war to England. The total German loss was over 2,000 officers and men.

Fine strategy was shown by the British admiralty in sending Admiral Sturdee to South American waters. He was ordered to sea from his desk as chief of the British naval board, after Von Spee's Chilean victory in November, and was placed in command of some of the fastest and most powerful cruisers of the British fleet. The entire affair, from the time the admiral left London until he succeeded in finding and sinking the German squadron in the South Atlantic, took about a month—a truly remarkable exploit.

#### RULERS AT THE FRONT

During December all the armies in the field were visited by the rulers of their respective countries. The Czar spent some time with his troops near the firing lines in Poland; King George of England visited the British forces in Belgium and Northern France and conferred the Victoria Cross ("For Valor") on a number of officers and men; and President Poincaré made several trips to the front, conferring decorations upon General Joffre, commander-in-chief, and other French officers, for distinguished service. The gallant and devoted soldier-king, Albert of Belgium, remained steadfastly at the front with his troops, sharing all their privations and dangers during the fierce fighting in Flanders. Kaiser Wilhelm was also at the front, both east and west, but was forced to return to Berlin early in the month by an attack of illness. On his recovery after two weeks he again visited the western field headquarters in Belgium, but in the first week of January, 1915, he was again compelled by his ailment to make a hurried return to Berlin for medical treatment and rest.

## BRITISH AND GERMAN SEA LOSSES

British and German naval losses in the world war to January 1, 1915, are shown in the following, compiled from admiralty reports, and, where these are missing, from other authoritative sources. The figures are approximately correct.

### BRITISH LOSSES

Date	Name and Type	How Sunk	Tonnage	Lives lost	Complement
Aug. 7	Amphion, protected cruiser.....	Mined .....	3,440	136	320
Sept. 4	Speedy, torpedo gunboat.....	Mined .....	810	...	85
Sept. 5	Pathfinder, protected cruiser.....	Mined .....	2,940	250	268
Sept. 7	Warrior, protected cruiser.....	Stranded .....	13,500	...	704
Sept. 9	Oceanic, auxiliary cruiser.....	Wrecked .....	17,000	...	500
Sept. 18	Fishguard II, training ship.....	Pounded .....	.....	21	65
Sept. 19	AE-1, submarine .....	Lost .....	800	25	25
Sept. 20	Pegasus, protected cruiser.....	Shelled .....	2,200	25	224
Sept. 22	Aboukir, protected cruiser.....	Torpedoed .....	12,000	510	700
Sept. 22	Cressy, protected cruiser.....	Torpedoed .....	12,000	561	700
Sept. 22	Hogue, protected cruiser.....	Torpedoed .....	12,000	362	700
Oct. 15	Hawke, protected cruiser.....	Torpedoed .....	7,350	350	544
Oct. 18	E-3, submarine .....	Shelled .....	800	25	25
Oct. 27	Adadalous, dreadnought .....	Torpedoed .....	25,000	2	900
Oct. 31	Hermes, protected cruiser.....	Torpedoed .....	5,600	...	456
Nov. 1	Monmouth, armored cruiser.....	Shelled .....	9,800	540	540
Nov. 1	Good Hope, armored cruiser.....	Shelled .....	14,100	875	900
Nov. 5	D-5, submarine .....	Mined .....	550	21	21
Nov. 11	Niger, torpedo gunboat.....	Torpedoed .....	810	...	85
Nov. 26	Bulwark, battleship .....	Explosion .....	15,000	800	814
Jan. 1	Formidable, battleship .....	Torpedoed .....	17,000	579	850
Number of vessels lost, 21.			Totals .....	5,082	9,426

### GERMAN LOSSES

Date	Name and Type	How Sunk	Tonnage	Lives lost	Complement
Aug. 5	Panther, gunboat .....	Shelled .....	900	75	130
Aug. 6	Koenigin Luise, mine layer.....	Torpedoed .....	1,800	70	150
Aug. 7	Augsburg, protected cruiser.....	Shelled .....	4,280	150	379
Aug. 9	U-15, submarine .....	Shelled .....	400	12	12
Aug. 27	Kaiser Wm. der Grosse, aux. cruiser.....	Shelled .....	14,349	30	450
Aug. 27	Magdeburg, protected cruiser.....	Shelled .....	4,478	200	370
Aug. 28	Mainz, protected cruiser.....	Shelled .....	4,280	300	370
Aug. 28	Koeln, protected cruiser.....	Shelled .....	4,280	200	370
Aug. 28	Ariadne, protected cruiser.....	Shelled .....	2,620	200	275
Aug. 28	V-186, V-187, destroyers.....	Shelled .....	1,290	100	166
Sept. 14	Cap Trafalgar, auxiliary cruiser.....	Shelled .....	26,000	14	310
Sept. 15	Hela, small cruiser.....	Torpedoed .....	2,000	10	191
Oct. 17	S-115, 117, 118, 119, 4 destroyers.....	Shelled .....	1,660	193	224
Oct. 20	S-90, destroyer .....	Ran ashore.....	400	...	56
Oct. 25	Submarine .....	Shelled .....	400	12	12
Oct. 30	Submarine .....	Shelled .....	400	12	12
Nov. 4	Yorck, armored cruiser.....	Mined .....	9,350	266	633
Nov. 7	Jaguar, gunboat .....	Shelled .....	880	50	126
Nov. 7	Litke, gunboat .....	Shelled .....	880	50	126
Nov. 7	litis, gunboat .....	Shelled .....	880	50	126
Nov. 7	Cormoran, gunboat .....	Shelled .....	1,600	100	162
Nov. 7	Tiger, gunboat .....	Shelled .....	880	50	126
Nov. 7	Taku, destroyer .....	Shelled .....	280	25	49
Nov. 7	Ruchin, mine layer .....	Shelled .....	.....	...	...
Nov. 9	Emden, protected cruiser.....	Shelled .....	3,540	200	361
Nov. ..	Wilhelm der Grosse, battleship.....	Mined .....	10,790	400	658
Nov. ..	Hertha, cruiser .....	Mined .....	5,569	200	400
Dec. 8	Scharnhorst, armored cruiser.....	Shelled .....	11,420	764	764
Dec. 8	Gneisenau, armored cruiser.....	Shelled .....	11,420	700	764
Dec. 8	Leipzig, cruiser .....	Shelled .....	3,200	280	280
Dec. 8	Nurnberg, cruiser .....	Shelled .....	3,200	256	280
Dec. 10	Three submarines .....	Shelled .....	1,200	36	36
Number of vessels lost, 38.			Totals .....	5,005	8,868

## CANADIANS AT THE FRONT

Late in December the first of the Canadian troops to leave their English training camp on Salisbury Plain were sent to the front in Northern France. The Princess Patricia regiment had the military honor of leading the Canadians to the firing line. It was made up largely of men who had seen previous service and promptly proceeded to give a good account of itself. A British guardsman returning wounded from the front on December 28 paid a characteristic tribute to the efficiency and daring of the Canadian troops, when he said: "They are all old soldiers. They knew as much about the game as we did and a blooming sight more than the enemy's infantry."

The Canadians first went into action at one of those ticklish spots where yards count. The trench of the British ended at a village which was vigorously shelled by the Germans, and was practically in ruins. Another trench on the right of a little town held by unmounted French cavalry made it impossible for the Germans to reach the village, but their "snipers" had ensconced themselves in some farm buildings to the north-east, making it extremely hazardous for supplies to reach the advanced British posts.

"About twenty of the Canadians," said the wounded guardsman, "managed to gain the ruins at the extreme end of the village during Christmas night and when daylight came they accounted for practically all the German 'snipers' and dashed back into safety before the German artillery fire was directed to the stronghold."

## SERVIANS REOCCUPY BELGRADE

Just when it appeared likely that Serbia might share the fate of Belgium, a turn in the fortunes of war changed the entire situation of affairs in the little Slav kingdom. Aided by a fresh advance of Russian troops across the Carpathians, which caused the hurried withdrawal of three Austrian army corps from Serbian territory to defend the threatened cities of Hungary, the Serbs again took the offensive and, inspired by the presence in the field of old King Peter, a gallant soldier of France in 1870, they reoccupied Belgrade and drove the Austrians before them in a disorderly rout, so that by Decem-

ber 15 Servia was free of the Austrian enemy. Budapest, capital of Hungary, became panic-stricken at the Russian advance and the Servian victory, and the year 1914 closed with every evidence that the people of Austria, at any rate, were tired of the war, discontented at the prospect, and desirous of peace.

#### GERMAN ATTACK ON BRITISH COAST

For the first time in history since the days of the American commander, Paul Jones, British coast towns were bombarded on December 16, when a squadron of German cruisers, slipping across the North Sea in a fog, from their Heligoland base, appeared off Scarborough, Hartlepool and Whitby, on the eastern coast of England, and shelled each of them in turn. The loss of life in the three towns was about 100, men, women and children, and a considerable number of buildings were partially wrecked by the German shells. Comparatively speaking, of course the damage inflicted was trifling and from a military point of view the incident was unimportant, the German ships disappearing in the fog after a half-hour's bombardment. But the moral effect upon the British public was tremendous. The event came as a distinct shock to their over-confidence and as a reminder that the German navy was still to be reckoned with. The warships of the Kaiser brought home to the people of the United Kingdom the meaning of the war, as no previous incident had done, and fear of further attacks took possession of them. This fear, however, soon turned to rage, and then to a fierce determination to prosecute the war to a bitter end. The attack stimulated recruiting for Lord Kitchener's new army, and this was its chief result, though Germany had proved that her ships could reach British shores and bombard their defenseless towns, in spite of all the vigilance of the British fleet.

#### BRITISH RAID GERMAN PORT

By way of answer to the German attack on Scarborough and Hartlepool, a daring raid was made Christmas Day by the British navy on the German naval base at Cuxhaven, at the mouth of the Elbe. The chief participants were seven British naval airmen. They were assisted in the attack by several light cruisers, destroyers and submarines. The air-



men piloted seaplanes and succeeded in dropping a number of bombs in the vicinity of Cuxhaven, in an attempt to bring out into the open a portion of the German fleet lying there. The affair resulted in a contest between the most modern of war machines. No surface warships were sent out by the Germans, but the attack was repelled by means of Zeppelins, seaplanes and submarines. No great damage was done on either side and the British airmen all escaped without injury, though four of them lost their machines. One, Flight Commander Hewlett, fell with his plane into the North Sea at a considerable distance from Cuxhaven and was picked up by a Dutch trawler, which landed him in Holland several days afterward. The British vessels remained off Cuxhaven for three hours, engaged in the most novel combat in naval history.

A short time previous to the attack on Cuxhaven, the British submarine B-11 accomplished one of the most remarkable exploits of the war when it penetrated into the Dardanelles and torpedoed the Turkish battleship *Messudieh*. In doing so the submarine successfully passed and repassed five lines of submerged mines and returned to its base in safety after being under water for many hours at a stretch.

#### U. S. PROTEST ON MARINE CONDITIONS

On December 31, by mutual agreement between the State Department at Washington and the British Foreign Office, the text of a note sent by the United States to England, requesting an early improvement in the treatment of American shipping by the British fleet, was made public. The note of protest had been presented on December 29. It dealt with the manner in which American ships suspected of carrying contraband of war had been held up on the high seas and sent into British ports for examination. Sir Edward Grey, the British foreign secretary, and Walter Hines Page, United States ambassador, conferred on the subject in London, and it was announced on January 1, 1915, that an answer to the American note would be drawn up as soon as possible and that it would be in the same friendly spirit in which the American note was written.

#### ON THE WESTERN BATTLE FRONT

The battle lines in the western theater of war held firm and fast during the first two months of 1915. Along the entire

front, from Flanders to the Swiss frontier, there were few changes in the relative positions of the German forces and the Allies up to March 1, at which time both sides were occupied with preparations for the spring campaign. British reinforcements, forming part of Lord Kitchener's new army, were being transported to the front, while the far-flung lines of trenches were filled with battle-weary veterans of the winter campaign. In many places the entrenchments of the opposing forces were only a few yards apart and trenches were frequently destroyed by mines, resulting in losses to both sides, but without materially changing the general aspect of the conflict.

#### NAVAL BATTLE IN THE NORTH SEA

One of the most important naval battles of the war took place on January 24 in the North Sea between a British battle cruiser squadron under Vice-Admiral Sir David Beatty, comprising the battle cruisers *Tiger*, *Lion*, *Princess Royal*, *New Zealand* and *Indomitable*, assisted by a few light cruisers and destroyers, on the one hand, and on the other a German squadron, consisting of the battle cruisers *Derfflinger*, *Seydlitz* and *Moltke*, the armored cruiser *Bluecher*, one of the finest in the Kaiser's navy, and several light cruisers.

It was a running fight, covering over one hundred miles and lasting four hours. At the end of this time the German armored cruiser *Bluecher* was at the bottom of the sea and two of the German battle cruisers had been damaged. Two of Vice-Admiral Beatty's ships were seriously damaged, namely, the giant battle cruiser *Lion*, which was Sir David's flagship, and the torpedo boat destroyer *Meteor*, one of the largest and fastest of this class afloat. However, both of these vessels were safely towed into port. The loss in men on the British side was fourteen killed and twenty-nine wounded, while on the side of the Germans only 125 of the crew of 850 men on the *Bluecher* were saved; the other 725 went down with the ship.

The loss of the *Bluecher* was the hardest blow the German navy had sustained up to this time, as she was one of the newest and best vessels of her class. She was built at a cost of \$6,750,000. Her speed was slower than that of the other vessels in the German squadron, which doubtless accounted for her loss. The battle began about 150 miles from Heligoland and ended within about fifty miles of this German naval base.

Early in the month of February, England threatened to put all foodstuffs destined for German ports on the contraband list. In retaliation, Germany, on February 4, through Admiral von Pohl, chief of the admiralty staff, issued a proclamation designating the waters around Great Britain and Ireland as a war area, to become effective February 18 and to be enforced by a formidable fleet of submarines, the object being to conduct war operations in this area for the purpose of destroying commercial ships of the enemy.

Just at this time the great passenger steamship *Lusitania*, in her passage from New York to Liverpool, hoisted the American flag while sailing through the Irish Sea, and Germany charged that the British Admiralty had issued confidential orders to captains of all British ships to sail under the stars and stripes or other neutral flags when necessary to use this means of protection against destruction by the warships of the enemy. This situation seriously menaced the commerce of the United States as well as that of all other neutral nations, and the American Government, therefore, promptly issued a note of warning to both belligerents and demanded in strong terms the protection of American neutral rights on the high seas. Germany responded promptly and promised to use every precaution to protect neutral shipping, but pointed out that the use of the American flag by British ships would make it difficult to distinguish neutral vessels from those of the enemy; hence neutral shipping was urged to avoid the indicated war area. Great Britain, on the other hand, claimed the right to use neutral flags when necessary to protect human life and ships, when endangered by the war vessels of the enemy; and under the laws of warfare and customs of the nations this contention was correct.

It can readily be seen that this situation placed the sea commerce of the United States, as well as that of all other

neutral countries, in a most dangerous position. Up to March 1, 1915, about twenty merchant vessels of various nationalities were destroyed or damaged in the war zone established by Germany, including Dutch, Norwegian, Danish, American and British ships.

#### GREAT GERMAN VICTORY IN EAST PRUSSIA

After a difficult campaign against the Russian invaders in East Prussia, the German army, by the masterly strategy of Field Marshal von Hindenburg, practically annihilated the Russian Tenth Army of 150,000 men, completing the task February 20. It was the most spectacular campaign in the history of modern warfare.

The object of the German commander was not only to free East Prussia from the Russian invasion, but to completely capture the Russian Tenth Army. He sent one column in from the south to drive back the Russians who occupied the Mazurian lake gateway to East Prussia, and another column from the north was swung around in wide circles to the east and south, aiming to join hands with the southern German column, thus cutting off the Russian retreat. This movement would have succeeded absolutely except for delay in passing through the swamps, caused by mild weather which broke up the ice. A commander of one of the German corps said: "Nature has always helped Russia. Two days of hard frost and we should have had every man."

In the south also nature aided the Russians. There the German hosts attacked the enemy in the face of a driving snowstorm from the north, which hindered their operations but did not prevent them from gaining a victory which resulted in freeing Prussian territory from the invader.

#### ALLIES FORCE THE DARDANELLES

On March 1 a great allied fleet of forty British and French warships, having reduced the forts at the entrance to the Dardanelles, was on its way through the straits and the Sea of Marmora to Constantinople, with the object of capturing the city. Panic prevailed in the Turkish capital at the approach of the fleet, while for the first time in history hostile flags flew over the forts at the mouth of the Dardanelles.



The naval operations of the Allies in the Dardanelles, which began on February 17, proceeded without any serious check for a month. Mine sweepers were in daily use, to clear the channel of submerged and floating mines, and the forts at the Narrows, several miles inside the entrance of the straits, were subject to bombardment every fine day. High winds and fog hampered the operations to a considerable extent, but the purpose of the Allies under Vice-Admiral Carden was adamant and would not be denied. They were determined to hammer their way through to the Turkish capital. The greatest battle of all history between warships and shore forts was the result. Soon after the bombardment began it became known that the allied fleets were led by the great new British superdreadnaught *Queen Elizabeth*, launched after the war began and armed with 15-inch guns of immense range which proved most effective in reducing the forts at the mouth of the straits.

#### FROM THE DARDANELLES TO THE BLACK SEA



This Map Shows the Route of the Allied Fleets on the Way to Constantinople. The Principal Fortified Places Are Clearly Indicated.

## THREE WARSHIPS SUNK

On March 18 three of the allied warships were sunk inside the Dardanelles and two crippled by the Turks during a bombardment in which ten vessels of the combined fleet participated. The official report of the battle was as follows:

"Mine-sweeping having been in progress during the last ten days inside the straits, a general attack was delivered by the British and French fleets on Thursday morning upon the fortresses at the Narrows. At 10:45 A. M. the Queen Elizabeth, Inflexible, Agamemnon, and Lord Nelson bombarded forts J, L, T, U and V, while the Triumph and Prince George fired at batteries F, E and H. A heavy fire was opened on the ships from howitzers and field guns.

"At 12:22 o'clock the French squadron, consisting of the Suffren, Gaulois, Charlemagne and Bouvet, advanced up the Dardanelles and engaged the forts at closer range. Forts I, U, F and E replied strongly. Their fire was silenced by the ten battleships inside the straits, all the ships being hit several times during this part of the action.

"By 1:25 P. M. all the forts had ceased firing. The Vengeance, Irresistible, Albion, Ocean, Swiftsure and Majestic then advanced to relieve the six old battleships inside the straits. As the French squadron, which had engaged the forts in a most brilliant fashion, was passing out, the Bouvet was blown up by a drifting mine. She sank in 36 fathoms north of Arenkeuf village in less than three minutes.

"At 2:23 P. M. the relief battleships renewed the attack on the forts, which again opened fire. The attack on the forts was maintained while the operations of the mine-sweepers continued.

"At 4:09 P. M. the Irresistible quitted the line, listing heavily, and at 5:50 o'clock sank, having probably struck a drifting mine. At 6:05 o'clock the Ocean, also having struck a mine, sank. Both vessels sank in deep water, practically the whole of their crews having been removed safely under a hot fire. The loss of the ships was caused by mines drifting with the current, which were encountered in areas hitherto swept clear.

"The British casualties in personnel were not heavy considering the scale of the operations, but practically the whole of the crew of the Bouvet were lost with the ship, an internal

explosion having apparently supervened on the explosion of the mine." [About 500 lives were lost on the Bouvet.]

On March 16 Vice-Admiral Carden, who had been incapacitated by illness, was succeeded in the chief command by Rear-Admiral John Michael De Robeck, with the acting rank of vice-admiral.

#### ADMIRAL DE ROBECK'S TRIBUTE TO THE FRENCH

After the engagement of March 18 Admiral De Robeck telegraphed to the British Admiralty the following tribute to the gallantry of the French in action:

"I desire to bring to the notice of your Lordships the splendid behavior of the French squadron. Their heavy loss leaves them quite undaunted. They were led into close action by Rear-Admiral Guepratte with the greatest gallantry."

About this time it was noted by the press and generally commented upon, in both England and America, that the Admiralty had not made public a single word of commendation for the work of the British navy since the war began. This unusual fact was interpreted as evidence of the inflexible purpose of the British to ignore minor losses and even defeats until the main battleship fleets of the belligerents should come to grips in the open sea. English newspapers began to taunt the Germans with permitting their navy to "rust in the Kiel Canal."

The sinking of the battle cruisers *Irresistible*, *Ocean* and *Bouvet* was the heaviest loss sustained by the Allies since the war began. The British crews were rescued, almost to a man, and the loss of the French crew was due mainly to the internal explosion following that of the mine. All the ships sunk were of the earlier pre-dreadnought type. On the same day, March 18, the British battle cruiser *Inflexible* and the French battleship *Gaulois* were put out of commission temporarily by the fire of the Turkish forts.

The *Irresistible*, the *Ocean* and the *Bouvet* were all sunk in portions of the straits which had been swept clear of anchored mines, and the drifting mines which proved so deadly were undoubtedly set afloat by the Turks, probably under the direction of German officers, on the swift current of the Dardanelles at points near the allied ships after the action began.

On March 24 the allied fleets renewed with vigor their attack upon the forts at the Narrows of the Dardanelles. A large body of troops was also landed upon the peninsula of Gallipoli, commanding the approach to Constantinople, and the Russian Black Sea fleet co-operated by a bombardment of the Turkish naval base, which left the Turkish fleet without supplies and practically paralyzed its movements.

#### BATTLE OF NEUVE CHAPELLE

The presence of part of Earl Kitchener's new British volunteer army at the western front in Belgium and France was signalized between March 10 and March 16, when the British gained a series of successes that drew marked attention to their operations. To the south of Ypres in Flanders the British army, which a German attack had compelled to fall back beyond St. Eloi, recaptured that village and almost all of the neighboring German trenches, in spite of several counter-attacks.

On March 11 Field Marshal Sir John French described the fighting which led to the capture of Neuve Chapelle in Northern France as follows:

"Since my last communique the situation on our front, between Armentières and La Bassée, has been materially altered by a successful initiative on the part of the troops engaged. Shortly after 8 A. M. on March 10 these troops assaulted and carried German trenches in the neighborhood of Neuve Chapelle.

"Before noon we captured the whole village of Neuve Chapelle. Our infantry at once proceeded to confirm and extend the local advantage gained. By dusk the whole labyrinth of trenches on a front about 4,000 yards was in our hands. We had established ourselves about 1,200 yards beyond the enemy's advanced trenches.

"During the 11th the enemy made repeated efforts to recover the ground lost. All his counter-attacks were repulsed with heavy loss.

"We continue to make steady progress and hard fighting continues. The local initiative displayed by our troops daily is admirable. It says much for the spirit which animates the army. The success achieved on the 10th and 11th is a striking example."



“THE END OF THE WORLD”

An officer who was wounded in the fighting thus vividly describes the battle of Neuve Chapelle:

“Modern warfare is such an infernal business that any man who is not killed ought to be cheerful. It all seems like a wild dream to me. I never heard such a row in all my life. And the bullets and the shells—it was like passing through the most awful hail storm.

“We were in our trenches at dawn when suddenly a most infernal din commenced. You never saw such a sight; you never heard such a noise. I heard one of my men say, ‘This is the end of the world,’ and I did not blame him for thinking so. We could see in the distance great masses of flame, earth and brick in great clouds of smoke, all ascending together as enormous shells screamed over our heads and burst among the German entrenchments and the houses of the village. At the end of a half-hour’s bombardment the fire ceased as suddenly as it had begun.

“All this time we were awaiting the order to advance towards Aubers. At length we jumped out into the open. The air seemed alive with bullets and shells. There was a buzzing noise, such as you hear in a tropical forest on a hot summer day. On we moved, until we came to an open stretch, which was being swept by an infernal shell fire. We crossed this in rushes to gain the shelter of a few houses, losing some 40 or 50 men. There we remained for some little time, reforming the battalion and awaiting further orders. When these came we moved forward over rough, open ground, coming upon lots of our poor fellows lying dead. They were from the only battalion which had preceded us.

“Then we entered the German trenches which had been captured. Again we halted. All this time our shells, German shells and rifle and machine gun bullets were shrieking overhead.

“Thank goodness, in an action like this you seem to lose your senses! A kind of elevation above all ordinary feelings comes over you and you feel as though you were rushing through air. There is so much to frighten you that you cease to be afraid. Then your senses gradually come back. That is why all infantry attacks should be carried through with one overwhelming rush.”

## GERMAN ADVANCE IN POLAND

On March 12 two German armies were on the move in Poland, seeking to pierce the Russian lines. One of these armies was advancing along the road to Przasnysz with the bank of the River Narew as its objective. This was the main German attack and inaugurated one of the biggest battles of the war.

Farther south, on the Pilica, a German feint was in progress with the object of weakening the Russian defense in the north. But while Petrograd seemed to be resigning itself to the idea of a second withdrawal from before Przasnysz, there was little doubt of the ultimate outcome of this German attempt to gain a firm footing on Russian soil. The German troops were moved forward in close order and only in the daytime, and were entirely dependent on what natural cover they could find between the rushes, as the ground was frozen too hard to permit the use of intrenching tools.

These tactics naturally involved very heavy losses. The German casualties are also understood to have been extremely severe around Simno, especially on their extreme left, where they lost the greater part of their transport. It appeared certain that the Russians had fallen back before an onrush of forces of overwhelming numerical superiority, but it was equally certain that with every yard of the German advance from their railways the shock of their impact weakened while the Russian powers of resistance were enhanced.

## BRITISH RELIEVE THE PRESSURE

Just as the French attacked the Germans in the western campaign when Field Marshal von Hindenburg made his rush from East Prussia in February, so the British army operating in Flanders undertook the task of relieving the pressure on its Russian ally when the Russians again were attacked in north Poland. This was part of the general plan of the allied generals. When one was attacked the other attacked, so as to compel the Germans and Austrians to keep strong forces at every point, and endeavor to prevent them from sending new troops where they could do the most good.

In March the Germans were occupied in an attempt to crush the Russians. For this purpose they had an army estimated at nearly half a million men marching along the roads

toward Przasnysz. To prevent this army from being further strengthened the British began to thrust at the German line north of La Bassée, and besides reporting the capture of the village of Neuve Chapelle, they advanced beyond that town.

#### BRITISH AUXILIARY CRUISER LOST

On March 12 the Admiralty issued a report of the loss of the large British auxiliary cruiser *Bayano* while on naval patrol duty in the Irish Sea. Evidence pointed to her having been torpedoed by a German submarine. Only 27 of the *Bayano's* crew of 250 were saved. Fourteen officers, including the commander, went down with the ship. The *Bayano* was a new twin screw steel steamer of 5,948 tons. The survivors were afloat on a raft when rescued. The loss of the *Bayano* was the most serious of the submarine blockade of the British coasts up to that time.

#### GERMAN CRUISER DRESDEN SUNK

For several months British warships in the South Atlantic and South Pacific oceans sought in vain for the German cruiser *Dresden*, one of the German squadron defeated off the Falkland Islands by Admiral Sturdee in December, when she was the only German vessel to escape. On February 27 she sank the British ship *Conway Castle* off Corral in the South Pacific, and on March 14 she was caught near Juan Fernandez Island by the British cruisers *Glasgow* and *Kent* and the auxiliary cruiser *Orama*. An action ensued and after five minutes' fighting the *Dresden* hauled down her flag. She was much damaged and set on fire, and after she had been burning for some time her magazine exploded and she sank. The crew were saved. Fifteen badly wounded Germans were landed at Valparaiso, and the remainder of the crew were taken on board the auxiliary cruiser *Orama* as prisoners of war.

The *Dresden* was a sister ship of the famous *Emden*, and was commissioned in October, 1907. In the spring of 1914 the *Dresden* was on the Caribbean station, and was lying off Tampico when the American forces captured Vera Cruz. Later on in the summer the *Dresden* was the vessel on which Victoriano Huerta, upon abandoning Mexico, traveled from Puerto to Jamaica. Upon the outbreak of the war the *Dresden* was still stationed in Central American waters, and for a



time was hunted by the British and French cruisers in the North Atlantic. She steamed south, however, and after sinking the British steamer *Hyades* and the *Holmwood* off the coast of Brazil, respectively, on August 16 and 26, went through the Strait of Magellan and joined Admiral Count Von Spee's fleet in the southern Pacific.

The sinking of the *Dresden* left at large on the high seas, so far as was known, only the German cruiser *Karlsruhe*, last reported as operating in the West Indies, and the auxiliary cruiser *Kronprinz Wilhelm*, which was still raiding commerce in the South Atlantic.

#### THE FALL OF PRZEMYSL

On March 22 the long siege of Przemyśl, the formidable Galician fortress that had been called the "key to the Austrian empire," ended with the surrender of the city to the Russians. The siege stands as the fifth longest in 136 years, having lasted 185 days, surpassed in duration only by the sieges of Gibraltar, Sebastopol, Vicksburg, Richmond and Port Arthur. The news of the Austrians' surrender was the most important that had come from the eastern front in weeks. For six months the stronghold had withstood assault, remaining a constant menace in the rear of the Russian advance in Galicia. From 120,000 to 150,000 Russians had been held in the neighborhood by the necessity of masking the fortress. Numerous efforts had been made to reach the beleaguered city by relieving armies, but each in turn proved unavailing, though for a time in December it appeared likely that a combined German and Austrian army would succeed in raising the siege.

The fall of Przemyśl was preceded by a sortie of the garrison in a last desperate attempt to hack its way through the enemy's lines. After a seven hours' battle they were compelled to retreat with a loss of nearly 4,000 prisoners. Only three days' rations were left. In the surrender of the city the Russians announced the taking of nearly 120,000 prisoners, including nine generals, 93 officers of the general staff, 2,500 officers and officials, and 117,000 soldiers.

Twenty-four thousand soldiers of the Przemyśl garrison were killed during the long siege, according to dispatches from Petrograd. Twenty thousand more were wounded making the total casualties of the Austrian defenders 44,000 men.



Depleted by disease, subsisting on horseflesh, and surrounded by a superior force of Russians, the garrison of Przemyśl was forced to surrender, but fell with honor, the gallant character of the defense under General von Kusmanek being conceded on all sides. The Russian commander who received the surrender was General Seliwanoff. In the early days of the siege a Bulgarian, General Radko Dimitrieff, was in command of the investing forces. General Seliwanoff commanded the Russian forces at Vladivostok during the Russo-Japanese war of 1904-05.

The duration of the siege compared with the length of time it took the Germans to capture such strongholds as Liège, Namur and Antwerp was due to two causes, one being the desire of the Russians to keep the loss of life among the besieging army at a minimum, the other to the lack of great guns which the Germans had in Belgium.

The investment was not a close one, the garrison having had a radius of about twelve miles in which to move about. An aeroplane post was maintained almost up to the last, and it is said that even some scanty food supplies were carried in by aeroplane.

Although the victory was a big one, it cost the Russians dearly. It is estimated that 150,000 Russians were killed and wounded during the months that the siege went on. Not only were many Russians killed by the efficient fire of the Austrian gunners, but the fierce sorties where attackers and defenders fought hand-to-hand resulted in heavy casualties.

Przemyśl was the greatest fortress in the Austrian empire. Hill, rock, marsh and river combined to give it strength and the work of nature had been supplemented by the labors of the finest military engineers in central Europe. The gallant defense which the garrison put up for 185 days is recorded as Austria's most noteworthy contribution to the war. For a long time the fortress had faced famine.

With the fall of Przemyśl the only important fortified town in Austrian Galicia which was not in the hands of the Russians was Cracow, close to the German border. A large Russian army with artillery was released for action. The Russian left wing stretched from the province of Bukowina on the southeast to Tarnow and the Vistula River near Cracow on the west.

## ON THE EASTERN FRONT

On the eastern front of the stupendous battle line in March the most sanguinary fighting of the war occurred. Losses on both sides were appalling, while the gains in territorial acquisition amounted to little or nothing.

Describing the enormous losses on both sides in Poland, a neutral observer, Mr. Stanley Washburn, said in the *American Review of Reviews*:

"The German program contemplated taking both Warsaw and Ivangorod and the holding for the winter of the line between the two formed by the Vistula. The Russians took the offensive from Ivangorod, crossed the river, and after hideous fighting fairly drove Austrians and Germans from positions of great strength around the quaint little Polish town of Kozienice. From this town for perhaps ten miles west, and I know not how far north and south there is a belt of forest of fir and spruce. Near Kozienice the Russian infantry, attacking in flank and front, fairly wrested the enemy's position and drove him back into this jungle. The Russians simply sent their troops in after them.

"The fight was now over a front of perhaps twenty kilometers; there was no strategy. It was all very simple. In this belt were Germans and Austrians. They were to be driven out if it took a month. Then began the carnage. Day after day the Russians fed troops in on their side of the wood. Companies, battalions, regiments, and even brigades, were absolutely cut off from all communication. None knew what was going on anywhere but a few feet in front. All knew that the only thing required of them was to keep advancing.

"Yard by yard the ranks and lines of the Austrians were driven back, but the nearer their retreat brought them to the open country west of the wood the hotter was the contest waged. The last two kilometers of the woody belt are something incredible to behold; there seems hardly an acre that is not sown like the scene of a paperchase—only here with bloody bandages and bits of uniform. Men fighting hand to hand with clubbed muskets and bayonets contested each tree and ditch. The end was, of course, inevitable. The troops of the dual alliance could not fill their losses, and the Russians could.

"At last came the day when the dirty, grimy, bloody soldiers of the Czar pushed their antagonists out of the far side of the woodland—and what a scene occurred in that open bit of country with the quaint little village of Augustowo at the crossroads! Once out in the open the hungry guns of the Russians, so long yapping ineffectively without knowing what their shells were doing, had their chance. Down every road through the forest came the six-horse teams with the guns jumping and jingling behind, with their accompanying caissons heavy with death-charged shrapnel, and the moment the enemy were in the clear these batteries, eight guns to a unit, were unlimbered on the fringe of the wood and pouring out their death and destruction on the wretched enemy now retreating hastily across the open. And the place where the Russians first turned loose on the retreat is a place to remember.

"Dead horses, bits of men, blue uniforms, shattered transport, overturned gun-carriages, bones, broken skulls, and grisly bits of humanity strew every acre of the ground.

#### ENORMOUS LOSSES ON BOTH SIDES

"A Russian officer who seemed to be in authority on this gruesome spot volunteered the information that already they had buried at Koziernice, in the wood and on this open spot, 16,000 dead. Those that had fallen in the open and along the road had been decently interred, as the forests of crosses for ten miles along that bloody way clearly indicated, but back in the woods themselves were hundreds and hundreds of bodies that lay as they had fallen. Sixteen thousand dead means at least 70,000 casualties all told, or 35,000 on a side if losses were equally distributed. And this, figured on the basis of the 16,000 dead already buried, without allowing for the numbers of the fallen that still lie about in the woods. And yet here is a battle the name of which is hardly more than known in America, yet the losses on both sides amount to more than the entire army that General Meade commanded at the Battle of Gettysburg.

"He who has the heart to walk about in this ghastly place can read the last sad moments of almost every corpse. Here one sees a blue-coated Austrian with leg shattered by a jagged bit of a shell. The trouser perhaps has been ripped open

and clumsy attempts been made to dress the wound, while a great splotch of red shows where the fading strength was exhausted before the flow of life's stream could be checked. Here again is a body with a ghastly rip in the chest, made perhaps by bayonet or shell fragment. Frantic hands now stiffened in death are seen trying to hold together great wounds from which life must have flowed in a few great spurts of blood. And here it is no fiction about the ground being soaked with gore. One can see it,—coagulated like bits of raw liver, while great chunks of sand and earth are in lumps, held together by this human glue. Other bodies lie in absolute peace and serenity. Struck dead with a rifle ball through the heart or some other instantly vital spot. These lie like men asleep, and on their faces is the peace of absolute rest and relaxation, but of these alas! there are few compared to the ones upon whose pallid, blood-stained faces one reads the last frantic agony of death.

“The soldiers themselves go on from battlefield to battlefield, from one scene of carnage to another. They see their regiments dwindle to nothing, their officers decimated, three-fourths of their comrades dead or wounded, and yet each night they gather about their bivouacs apparently undisturbed by it all. One sees them on the road the day after one of these desperate fights marching cheerfully along, singing songs and laughing and joking with one another. This is *morale* and it is of the stuff that victories are made. And of such is the fiber of the Russian soldier, scattered over these hundreds of miles of front to-day. He exists in millions and has abiding faith in his companions, in his officers, and in his cause.”

#### TERRIFIC FIGHTING IN MIDWINTER

Writing of the desperate fighting in Poland in midwinter when the Germans made a tremendous effort to pierce the Russian lines on the Bzura and Rawka front, with Warsaw as their objective point, an American correspondent, Mr. John F. Bass, said: “The fighting was terrific. The detonations of the cannon came in such rapid succession that they sounded like giant machine guns and the windows of the dressing stations for the wounded shook as if from an earthquake. It was not possible to distinguish individual gun explosions from the rattle of the infantry fire. All were mingled in one inarticu-



late battle shriek. At night, as in a furious thunderstorm, the darkness was pierced with the unintermittent flashes of the guns, while sickly green rockets shed a ghastly light over the fighting lines. The wounded brought in filled the hospitals to overflowing.

"It was estimated by the Russians that the Germans lost 60,000 men. I was told by an officer that the bodies of German soldiers were piled up before the Russian trenches in many of the assaults so high that German shells bursting among them threw mangled pieces of human beings into the trenches among the Russians.

"At night, under the glare of search-lights, the undulating mass of wounded made efforts to extricate themselves. Then, toward 2 o'clock in the morning, they moved no more." The winter cold had done its deadly work.

#### FRENCH MAKE GAINS IN MARCH

In the Champagne country of northern France the month of March was marked by almost continuous fighting of the fiercest character. French advices from Chalons-sur-Marne on March 29 were to the effect that 11,000 German dead had been taken from the trenches won by the French in the previous twenty days and that the total German losses during that time in the Champagne district exceeded 50,000 in killed, wounded and prisoners.

#### STIRRING EVENTS OF THE SPRING

All through the month of April the days were crowded with important occurrences east and west along the battle lines. The Russian movement across the Carpathians was pressed with vigor and some of the fiercest fighting of the war resulted, as the combined German and Austrian troops resisted the Russian advance into Hungary.

Early in the spring the British forces gained a notable victory at Neuve Chapelle in the western theater of war. Then the German forces in Flanders were heavily reinforced until it was estimated that they numbered not less than half a million men, gathered for the purpose of smashing the line of the Allies at the strategic point where the British and the Belgian troops were in touch with one another. Here, for three days, the Germans succeeded in pushing forward, driving a wedge for several miles into the line of the allied armies of England, France and Belgium. And here, too, the

Canadian division of the British army covered itself with glory and once more demonstrated the value to the British empire of the "lion's whelps." On one notable occasion, destined to be recorded in history as a red-letter day for Canadian arms, the gallant fellows from the great Dominion "saved the situation," to quote from the report of Field Marshal French, by a splendid charge, during which they recaptured from the Germans four of their field guns that had been lost the day before.

#### HOW CANADIAN COMMANDER DIED LEADING YPRES CHARGE

*From Sir Max Aitken's official account of the battle of Ypres.*

"It did not seem that any human being could live in the shower of shot and shell which began to play on the advancing troops. They suffered terrible casualties. For a short time every other man seemed to fall, but the attack was pressed even closer and closer. The 4th Canadian battalion at one moment came under a particularly withering fire. For a moment it wavered.

"Its most gallant commanding officer, Lieut.-Col. Birchall, carrying, after an old fashion, a light cane, coolly and cheerfully rallied his men and at the very moment when his example had infected them, fell dead at the head of his battalion.

"With a cry of anger they sprang forward as if to avenge his death. The astonishing attack which followed, pushed home in the face of direct frontal fire made in broad daylight by battalions whose names should live forever in the memories of soldiers, was carried to the first line of German trenches. After a hand-to-hand struggle the last German who resisted was bayoneted and the trench was won.

"It was clear that several German divisions were attempting to crush or drive back the Third Brigade and to sweep around and overwhelm our left wing. The last attempt partially succeeded. German troops swung past the unsupported left of the brigade and, slipping in between the wood and St. Julien, added to our torturing anxieties by apparently isolating us from the brigade base.

"In the exertions made by the Third Brigade during this supreme crisis, Major Norsworthy, already almost disabled by a bullet wound, was bayoneted and killed. Captain McQuaig of the same battalion was seriously wounded.

"General Curry flung his left flank around and in the crisis of this immense struggle held his trenches from Thursday afternoon until Sunday afternoon. He did not abandon them then. There were none left. They had been obliterated by artillery.

"He withdrew his undefeated troops from the fragments of his field fortifications and the hearts of his men were as completely unbroken as the parapets of his trenches were completely broken.

"The Ninetieth Winnipeg Rifles, which held the extreme left

of the brigade position at the most critical moment, was expelled from the trenches early Friday morning by an emission of poisonous gas, but recovering in three-quarters of an hour it counter-attacked, retook the trenches it had abandoned and bayoneted the enemy.

"General Alderson, commanding the reinforcements, directed an advance by a British brigade which had been brought up in support.

"As the troops making it swept through the Canadian left and center, many of them going to certain death, they paused for an instant with deep-throated cheers for Canada, indicating the warm admiration which the Canadians' exertions had excited in the British army.

"On Monday morning General Curry was again called upon to lead his shrunken Second Brigade, reduced to a quarter of its original strength, into action at the apex of the line, which position the brigade held all that day. On Wednesday it was relieved and retired to the rear. 'Not a Canadian gun was lost in the long battle of retreat.'"

Concluding his account, Sir Max wrote: "The empire is engaged in a struggle without quarter and without compromise against an enemy still superbly organized, still immensely powerful, still confident that its strength is the mate of its necessity. To arms then, and still to arms! The graveyard of Canada in Flanders is very large."

#### GERMAN DRIVE TO THE COAST

Before the beginning of the spring campaign, it was realized by the Allies that the German general staff was preparing for a determined drive to the coast through the British and Belgian lines that protected the approach to Calais. It was for this reason that the British took the offensive at Neuve Chapelle and at the important strategic point known as Hill 60. The purpose of Field Marshal French was to strike the first blow, and the attacks were seemingly successful; but later news from the front showed that "something went wrong" at Neuve Chapelle, which in a large measure upset the British plans.

At Hill No. 60, though the British captured that important position, they were held back from further advance. Then came the long-expected German attack in the direction of Ypres, which was considered as one of the keys to the French seaport of Calais. By this attack the Allies were forced back from the Ypres canal, and the positions gained by the Germans brought them within twenty-five miles of the coast at Dunkirk.

The fighting at Neuve Chapelle, Hill 60 and Ypres was probably the most sanguinary of the entire war up to that time. The losses on both sides were enormous. Germans, British, Belgians and French were killed literally by the thousand, the British losses

at Neuve Chapelle alone being estimated at 20,000, while the German casualties in forcing the passage of the Ypres canal a few days later exceeded 9,000 men.

#### PRAISE FOR THE CANADIANS

It was in the most furious conflict of the western campaign—a battle between Langemarcke and Steenstrate, in Flanders—that the Canadian troops saved the British army from what seemed almost inevitable defeat. The Canadian division was in the front line of the British forces on April 23, when the Germans made their sudden assaults and broke through the line for a distance of five miles. Only the brilliant counter-charges of the Canadians saved the situation. They had many casualties, but their gallantry and determination brought success and, in the language of the official report of the prolonged battle, “their conduct was magnificent throughout.”

The correspondent, describing the harrowing scene of the battle on April 23, said: “Long ago Kitchener’s army was given its baptism of fire, but yesterday it got its initiation into hell.”

In their great effort to smash the Allies on the Yser the Germans also sustained terrible losses. By April 27 it was asserted that the German force that managed to pass the Yser and took possession of the town of Lizerne had been practically annihilated. The fighting was said to have been far more terrible than that of the autumn of 1914, when the Yser canal ran red with blood.

It was charged by the Allies that in the fighting in Flanders late in April the Germans used asphyxiating gases, which placed thousands of the allied troops *hors de combat*, including many of the Canadian division. Strong protests against the German use of such methods were voiced by the allied generals, and a formal denunciation was made by Lord Kitchener in the British parliament.

#### ALLIED TROOPS AT THE DARDANELLES

On April 25-27, a strong force of British and French troops under General Sir Dan Hamilton effected a landing on both sides of the Dardanelles, to co-operate with the allied fleets seeking to force a passage through the straits to the Bosphorus. The landing was resisted by Turkish troops, but the Allies succeeded in establishing themselves on the Gallipoli peninsula by May 1, and made several thousand Turks prisoners of war. The bombardment of the Turkish forts in the Dardanelles by the allied warships was continued.

The French cruiser *Leon Gambetta*, with a displacement of 12,351 tons and crew of 714 men, commanded by Rear Admiral Fenet, cruising at the entrance of the Otranto canal in the Ionian sea, was torpedoed the night of April 26th by the Austrian submarine U-5, and went to the bottom in ten minutes; 578 lives were lost; all officers on board, including Rear Admiral Fenet, perished.



## CHAPTER XXIII

### SINKING OF THE LUSITANIA

*Destruction of the Great Cunard Liner by a German Submarine Causes a Serious Crisis in German-American Relations—Over a Hundred Americans and Many Canadians Drowned, Including Citizens of Prominence and Wealth—Prompt Diplomatic Action by President Wilson—The German Campaign of Frightfulness and Its Results.*

STEAMING majestically over a smiling sea, with the green hills of Erin in sight over the port bow and all well aboard, the greatest, fastest and most beautiful transatlantic liner in commission was nearing the end of her voyage from New York to Liverpool. It was the hour after luncheon on the great ship, the hour of the siesta or the promenade, the most peaceful hour of the day. Little children by the score played merrily about the great decks; families and friends foregathered in the lounges or beside the rail to watch the Irish coast slip by; all the internal economy of the giant ship moved smoothly, as if by clockwork.

It was more than a floating hotel, replete with comfort and luxury. It was a floating town, with a whole townful of people. Over fourteen hundred men, women and children were on the passenger list and six hundred men in the Cunard uniform constituted the crew. Among the passengers were many citizens of the United States and Canada, and there was an unusually large proportion of women and children on board, the families of men who had been drawn into the maelstrom of war.

For in spite of the calm and peace prevailing on the great passenger ship, the shadow of war impended over all. The bloody struggles of the great European cataclysm were proceeding at the other end of the English Channel and dire hints of dangers on the sea in the "war zone" had accompanied the sailing of the ship. But on this bright May day, as the liner approached its destination, danger seemed far distant and few indeed among passengers or crew gave serious thought to its imminence.

All was truly well on board. The skies were clear, the sea was smooth, and though the myriad passengers realized that they had entered a danger zone of the world's greatest war they had abounding confidence in the giant ship, in its veteran commander, and in the line to which it belonged, that had never yet lost the life of a single passenger committed to its care. And confidently they looked forward to a safe arrival in port next morning, the happy ending of a wartime voyage which the children on board, and their children's children, should recall with pride for a century to come. BUT—

Right ahead in the path of the floating palace, athwart the prescribed course of the *Lusitania* there lurked the deadliest slinking serpent of the seas—the tiny volcanic hull of an enemy submarine, most dangerous of war's new weapons. Lying leisurely in wait, its body submerged just beneath the swelling undulations of a summer sea, invisible, ruthless, insatiable; only the protrusion of a foot or so of periscopic tube betokened its presence without betraying its purpose. But in that innocent-looking tube lay vast potentialities for evil—nay, devilish certainties of dealing death and destruction. For the little steel-encased arrangement of lenses and mirrors peeping from the depths was the mechanical eye of the submarine and sufficed to betray to watchful Teutons below the approach of the great ship, treasure laden with human freight of non-combatants and neutrals, but flying the flag of the German's foe.

For the crew of the submarine "*der Tag*" had come. Without a thought of the innocents and neutrals aboard; reckless alike of immediate results and ultimate consequences, animated only by the deadly designs of a war-madness and a deliberate campaign of frightfulness, the firing signal was flashed from the German commander's station and the fatal torpedo was launched against the unsuspecting and unprotected leviathan. Traveling true to its mark, it tore its frightful way through the thin sheathing of the ship and, exploding on impact, pierced her vitals and sealed her doom. \* \* \*

Barely a quarter of an hour elapsed before the giant vessel disappeared from sight, plunging bow foremost to the bottom in waters scarcely more than one-third of her length in depth, so that the shock of her bow striking the bottom of the sea was felt by the gallant captain on the bridge before he was torn loose from his ill-fated vessel.

And when the waters of the Atlantic closed over the hull of the *Lusitania*, within sight of the Irish coast on that fatal Friday, the lives of over eleven hundred non-combatant men, women and children, including more than a hundred American neutrals, were ruthlessly sacrificed to the Teuton god of war.

## CHAPTER XXIV

### A SUMMER OF SLAUGHTER

*Submarine Activities—Horrors in Serbia—Bloody Battles East and West—Italy Enters the War and Invades Austria—Russians Pushed Back in Galicia.*

The Lusitania was the twenty-ninth vessel to be sunk or damaged in the first week of May, 1915, in the war zone established by Germany about the British isles. Most of these vessels were torpedoed by German submarines, although in some cases it has not been established whether the damage was inflicted by mines or underwater boats.

Sixteen of the twenty-nine vessels were British trawlers. There were four British and one French merchantman in the list. The others were vessels of neutral nations.

One of them was the American steamer Gulfight, torpedoed off Scilly islands on May 1, with the loss of three lives. There were three Norwegian, two Swedish, and one Danish merchant vessel sunk.

#### BLOODY BATTLES EAST AND WEST.

The second week in May saw minor German successes on the western front, but these were immediately succeeded by determined efforts on the part of the Allies to retrieve lost ground. The week of May 10 to 15 was marked by fierce assaults by the British and French upon the German positions in Flanders and northern France. Thousands of lives were sacrificed on both sides. At one point on the Yser where the Germans were beaten back, they left 2,000 dead on the field, but this was only a small percentage of the total losses during this series of engagements in May. Around Ypres early in the month the Canadians lost heavily, but made a splendid record for gallantry and endurance in the face of odds. The Germans began at this time the use of asphyxiating gases in their attacks. The results were horrifying in the extreme, and as these inhuman

assaults with gas were continued, the Allies prepared to adopt the use of similar noxious gases by way of retaliation.

#### BRITISH WARSHIP TORPEDOED.

On May 12 the British warship *Goliath* was sunk by a Turkish torpedo during the continued attack by the Allies on the Dardanelles. Twenty officers and 160 men of the crew were saved and over 500 lives were lost. The *Goliath* was one of the older British battleships of the pre-dreadnaught type. She was built in 1898, was 400 feet long and 74 feet wide, with a displacement of 12,950 tons. Her armament consisted of four twelve-inch and twelve six-inch guns, twelve twelve-pounders, six three-pounders, and two machine guns.

In the determined attack on the Dardanelles, land forces of British and French troops co-operated with the combined fleets. The Turks made a stubborn resistance, but were compelled to give way gradually before the terrific bombardment of the warships and the persistent attacks by land. In the fighting on the Gallipoli peninsula the British colonial troops from New Zealand covered themselves with glory, fighting like veterans and breaking down Turkish opposition with the bayonet. On May 19 one of the most important forts at the Narrows, guarding the entrance to the Sea of Marmora, was silenced by the warships' fire, and this was an important step on the Allies' way to Constantinople.

Meanwhile an immense German army, said to number 1,600,000 men, had been forcing the Russians back in Galicia to the San River and the gates of Przemyśl. A German bombardment of this fortress seemed imminent on May 20.

#### ITALY ENTERS THE WAR.

On Sunday, May 23, Italy finally plunged into the great conflict with a declaration of war against Austria. The formal declaration, presented to the Austro-Hungarian foreign minister, Baron von Burian, by the Duke of Avarna, Italian ambassador at Vienna, asserted that Italy had "grave motives" for annulling her treaty of alliance with Austria and "confident in her good right," resumed her liberty of action. The declaration of war continued as follows:

"The government of the King, firmly resolved to provide by all means at its disposal for safeguarding Italian rights and interests, cannot fail in its duty to take, against every existing and future menace, the measures which events impose upon it for the fulfillment of national aspirations.

"His majesty, the King, declares that he considers himself from tomorrow (May 24, 1915), in a state of war with Austria-Hungary."

Thus the ninety-sixth anniversary of the birth of Queen Victoria, of England, found eleven of the countries of Europe at war, their rulers including three of her grandsons, two arrayed in a bitter struggle against the third. The Triple Alliance on this date became the Quadruple Alliance, when Italy joined the Allies. Austria was of course supported by Germany. Italy was expected to put 3,000,000 men in the field.



## WHY ITALY WANTED WAR

The reasons why Italy entered the great conflict were succinctly stated on May 19 by Signor Enrico Corradini, nationalist leader, as follows:

"1. The necessity for Italy to take advantage of the present revolution in European affairs to settle her national irredentist problem at the expense of Austria. Our right to the Trentino, Trieste and Istria, now held by Austria, is not questioned by reasonable people anywhere in Europe.

"2. The necessity for Italy to arrive at a secure and definite settlement of her military frontiers on the north and east.

"3. The necessity for Italy to create for herself by her intervention a new moral and political position in the new European order of the future, to replace that which she had, thanks to her alliance with the central empires, a position which was liquidated at the outbreak of the war.

"4. The necessity for Italy to contribute to repelling the danger of a German hegemony which would flourish at the expense of the various individual cultures and civilizations."

## INVASION OF AUSTRIA

Italy promptly threw an army across the Austrian frontier and began active operations in the direction of Trent and Trieste. The fortified city of Luzerne soon fell into Italian hands and continued successes marked the progress of the invaders all through the month of June. The Austrian strategy at first appeared to provide for a series of withdrawals after skirmishing; but late in the month a more determined resistance developed, the defenses of the Austrian troops being skilfully prepared. The loss of life during the month was comparatively light on both sides, but on June 26 the Italians—already masters of Plava on the left bank of the Isonzo river, and the heights dominating that town—were massing heavy bodies of troops before Gorizia and Tolmino for crucial battles at those two points, both of which blocked the way to the coveted Austrian seaport of Trieste.

## STRUGGLE FOR THE DARDANELLES

All through the month of June the Allies continued their desperate struggle for the possession of the Dardanelles, the gateway to Constantinople. Under the direction of German officers and engineers, the Turkish troops and gunners offered determined resistance and the British, Colonial and French troops co-operating with the allied fleets, gained headway but slowly and at tremendous

cost. But it was declared that the Allies were bent upon forcing a passage through the straits regardless of cost and that every effort would be made to complete the operation during the summer. Several German submarines appeared in the Gulf of Saros during the month and effectively interfered with the activity of the British and French fleets. The results of the operations on the Gallipoli peninsula during the month indicated that the Dardanelles would prove a veritable slaughter pen before the Allies succeeded in winning their way to Stamboul.

#### LEMBERG IS RECAPTURED

On June 22 the city of Lemberg, capital of the Austrian province of Galicia, was recaptured from the Russians, who had held it for nearly ten months, by combined German-Austrian forces, under General Mackensen. This marked the culmination of a successful Teuton campaign in Galicia, including the recapture of the strong fortress of Przemyśl, as well as Lemberg, and the driving of the Russian invaders back to their own borders.

The eastern battle front in June extended for 680 miles north and south, and while the German drive through Galicia was entirely successful, the Russians gained some victories in the north. They were sorely handicapped by the lack of supplies and ammunition for their forces, and at the end of June the Russian authorities were organizing every possible industry for the production of ammunition.

The fiercest fighting of the war, as far as the Baltic provinces of Russia are concerned, occurred in a battle for the mastery of the Dubysa River early in June. The river changed hands five times in one day, and at nightfall the stream was completely choked with the bodies of thousands of dead, so that a plank roadway for artillery was laid by the Russians across a solid bridge of bodies.

#### HEROIC FEAT OF A CANADIAN

A thrilling and unprecedented feat was performed by Lieut. R. A. J. Warneford, a Canadian aviator, when alone in an aeroplane, he destroyed a Zeppelin airship with its crew of twenty-eight men in Belgium. He received the Victoria Cross for his exploit, but a few days later was killed while testing a new aeroplane near Paris. He was buried with naval honors in London, June 23.

On July 3, 1915, when the twelfth month of the Great War began, it was conservatively estimated that the total losses on all sides, including killed, wounded and missing, had exceeded six millions of men. Over 500 vessels had been destroyed, including 120 ships of war.

## DEADLOCK IN THE WEST

During July and August there were no general engagements of importance in the Western theatre of war. The deadlock continued. The troops along the Western battle lines were, however, subjected almost daily to violent artillery bombardment.

By August 22 the British line in northern France and Flanders had been lengthened from 40 miles to over 100 miles, with over 800,000 troops on the firing line. German submarines were very active in the war zone during the month of August, over 170 merchant steamships of more than 500 tons displacement and nearly 2,000 noncombatant lives being the awful toll to date of this new method of warfare.

The British transport *Royal Edward* was torpedoed and sunk August 14 by a German submarine in the *Ægean* Sea. Nearly 1,000 lives were lost. The transport had on board a force of 32 officers and 1,350 men, in addition to the ship's crew of 220 officers and men. The troops consisted mainly of reinforcements for the 29th Division and details of the Royal Army Medical Corps.

## FALL OF WARSAW

Warsaw, the capital of Poland, was taken by the Germans August 5. Bavarian troops under the command of Prince Leopold carried the forts of the outer and inner lines of the city's defenses, where the rear guards of the Russian troops made a tenacious resistance.

The German armies under Gen. von Scholz and Gen. von Gallwitz advanced in the direction of the road between Lomza, Ostrov and Vyszkoy and fought a number of violent engagements. The brave and desperate resistance of the Russians on both sides of the road between Ostrov and Rozan was without success.

Twenty-two Russian officers and 4,840 soldiers were taken prisoners. The Germans also captured seventeen machine guns.

The fall of Warsaw marked the culmination of the greatest sustained offensive movement of the war. Thrice before Teutonic armies had knocked at its gates, only to be denied by the strength of its defenses and the resistance of the forces holding it.

Warsaw lies on the Vistula, 625 miles southwest of Petrograd and 320 miles east of Berlin. It is an important industrial center and its population is estimated at not far from 900,000.

The great Russian fortress of Kovno was captured by the Germans August 17. More than 400 cannon were taken. The fortress was stormed in spite of the most stubborn Russian resistance.

The capture of Kovno was the most important German victory in the East after the taking of Warsaw.

Kovno fell under the eye of General von Hindenburg. The capture of the fortress was the first personal triumph of the "old man of the Mazurian lakes" since the great Austro-German campaign

in the East was inaugurated. The six great forts defending the city from the west and southwest were simply blown to pieces by the incessant pounding of Germany's great 42-centimeter guns and a host of minor pieces.

The forts were under direct attack for scarcely a week, demonstrating again the superiority of modern artillery over fort structures built by man.

Kovno, capital of the Russian province of that name, is on the right bank of the Niemen. It is a fortress of the first class. The civilian population of the city is more than 75,000.

The important Russian fortress of Novo Georgievsk, the last halting place of the Russians in Poland, fell into the hands of the Germans on August 19, after a most stubborn resistance. The garrison consisted of 85,000 men and of these over 20,000 were taken prisoners. Over 500 cannon were captured and a large amount of war ammunition seized.

#### BATTLE OF THE BAY OF RIGA

Russian naval forces aided by British submarines, in the Gulf of Riga won a decided victory August 18 over the German fleet which penetrated the gulf on August 13.

The great German battle cruiser Moltke, one of the finest ships of its kind afloat, was destroyed in the engagement. The cruiser had a displacement of 23,000 tons and carried a crew of 1,107 men and officers. Its main battery consisted of ten 11-inch guns, mounted in pairs in five turrets. Its secondary battery contained twelve 6-inch guns. Twelve 24-pounders and four torpedo tubes completed its armament. The Moltke was 610 feet long over all, with a beam of  $96\frac{3}{4}$  feet, and cost \$12,000,000.

With the Moltke three German cruisers and seven torpedo boats, all unnamed, were destroyed.

The Russians lost the destroyer Novik of 1,260 tons, largest in the navy, and the gunboats Sivutch and Koriets, of 875 tons displacement.

The Russian victory did not end with the defeat of the German naval forces. The invading fleet was accompanied by four enormous transports, all crammed with troops. These soldiers attempted to make a landing on Pernau bay, on the northeastern shoulder of the Gulf of Riga. They were permitted to land and were then attacked and exterminated by the Russian forces at that point. The loss was estimated at 6,000 men.

#### WHITE STAR LINER ARABIC SUNK

The White Star liner Arabic, which sailed August 18 from Liverpool for New York, was sent to the bottom by a German torpedo August 19 off Fastnet on the south coast of Ireland, not far from the point at which the Lusitania was sunk by a German submarine.



Out of 429 persons aboard including crew, 39 lost their lives. Two Americans perished—Mrs. Josephine Bruguière, widow of Emil Bruguière, California millionaire banker, and Dr. E. F. Wood, of Janesville, Wis.

Capt. Finch, who commanded the steamer, gave the following graphic account of the disaster: "We were forty-seven miles south of Galley Head at 9:30 in the morning when I perceived the steamer Dunsley in difficulty. Going toward her, I observed a torpedo coming for my ship, but could not discern a submarine. The torpedo struck 100 feet from the stern, making terrible havoc of the hull. The vessel began to settle immediately and sank in about eight minutes.

"My order from the bridge about getting the boats launched was promptly obeyed. Two boats capsized. We had taken every precaution while in the danger zone. There were plenty of life-belts on deck and the boats were ready for immediate launching. The officers and crew behaved excellently and did everything possible in the circumstances, getting people into the boats and picking up those in the sea.

"I was the last to leave, taking the plunge into the sea as the ship was going down. After being in the water some time I was taken aboard a raft, to which I had assisted two men and women.

"If the submarine had given me a little more time, I am satisfied I could have saved everybody."

The *Arabie's* tonnage was 15,201 gross. It was 600 feet long, 65 feet beam and 47 feet in depth. It was built at Belfast in 1903 by Harland & Wolff.

On September 4 the German forces under General von Beseler stormed and captured the bridgehead at Friedrichstradt, the most important defense of Riga. The furiousness of the attacks in this region led military critics to believe that the fall of the city of Riga was imminent.

Everywhere as Russians retreated they left a trail of utter devastation, causing the Teutons to march around burning cities, finding the country devoid of food or shelter. This destructive policy, however, resulted in saving the Czar's army and rendering futile the hope of the Kaiser that the military forces of Russia could be crushed.

With the Russian armies in full retreat and their double line of fortresses all fallen to the invader, the apparent calm on the Western front continued to be the marvel of the European campaign, as up to September 7 no development on the Western front indicated that any effort was being made to distract the Kaiser's attention from his victorious expedition into the territory of the Czar.

## THE DARDANELLES CAMPAIGN.

The struggle of combined land and sea forces of the Allies to gain control of the Dardanelles, and thus open the way for the British and French fleets to Constantinople and the Black Sea, continued through the autumn of 1915 and furnished some of the most sanguinary battles of the war. From the day of the landing of British troops on the Gallipoli peninsula up to the end of November the fighting was continuous and bloody. The British losses were tremendous, while the Turkish defenders of the supposedly impregnable straits also suffered heavily, but with Mohammedan stoicism.

A terrible picture of the slaughter at Seddul-Bahr, where the British troops landed from transports under the guns of their fleet, in the face of an awful Turkish bombardment, was painted on his return to England in November by Lieutenant-Commander Josiah Wedgwood, a Liberal member of Parliament, who had received special mention for bravery at the front, and the coveted stripes of the Distinguished Service order.

“Our school books told us,” said Commander Wedgwood, “that the bloodiest battle in history was that between the confederates and federals at Sharpsburg during the American civil war, when one-third of all the men engaged were left on the field. But Sharpsburg was a joy ride compared with Seddul-Bahr.”

Paying a tribute to the enemy, he said: “The Turks are the finest fighters in the world, save only the Canadians and Australians. And they proved to be humane. They could easily have killed all those who went to succor the wounded, but I found them extraordinarily merciful as compared with the enemy in Flanders.”

Commander Wedgwood's first view of fighting at the Dardanelles was at the so-called V beach, where a steamship, the

"River Clyde," was run aground to furnish cover for the landing of the British troops.

"This modern 'wooden horse of Troy,' " said Commander Wedgwood, "was run ashore on a beautiful Sunday morning, 400 yards from the medieval castle of Seddul-Bahr. I was on the vessel, but never noticed her grounding for the horrors ahead of us in the shallow waters on the beach. Five tows of five boats each, loaded with men, were going ashore alongside of us. One moment it had been early morning in a peaceful country, with rustic sights and sounds and smells; the next moment, while the boats were just twenty yards from shore, the blue sea around each boat was turning red. It was truly horrible. Of all those brave men two-thirds died, and hardly a dozen reached unwounded the shelter of the five-foot sand dune.

"About 9 o'clock a dash across the row of lighters from the Wooden Horse was led by Gen. Napier and his brigade major. Would they ever get to the end of the lighters and jump into the sheltering water? No; side by side they were seen to sit down. For one moment one thought they might be taking cover; then their legs slid out and they rolled over.

"It was the Munsters that charged first, with a sprig of shamrock on their caps; then the Dublins, the Worcesters, the Hampshires. Lying on the beach, on the rocks, on the lighters, they cried on the Mother of God. There, now, was Midshipman Drury swimming to a lighter which had broken loose, with a line in his mouth and a wound in his head. If ever a boy deserved his Victoria Cross, that lad did. And there was the captain of the River Clyde, now no longer a ship to be stuck to but a part forever of Gallipoli, alone with a boat by the spit of rock, trying to lift in the wounded under fire.

"All these things I saw as in a dream. Columns of smoke rose from the castle and town of Seddul-Bahr as the great shells from the fleet passed over our heads and burst, and in every lull we heard the wounded.

“At 1 o'clock the Lancashires were appearing over the ridge to the left from 'Lancashire landing.' We saw fifteen men in a window in the castle on the right by the water. They signaled that they were all that remained of the Dublins who had landed at the Camber at Seddul-Bahr. At 3 o'clock we got 150 men alive to shore. We watched our men working to the right and up into the castle ruins—at each corner the officer crouching in front with revolver in rest.

“When night came a house in Seddul-Bahr was burning brightly and there was a full moon. We disembarked men at once. All around the wounded cried for help and shelter against the bullets, but there was no room on boats or gangway for anything but the men to come to shore.

“For two nights no one had slept and then another day dawned. We were firmly ashore at Lancashire landing, and at Du Toit's battery to the northeast, and the Australians were dug in at Anzac. An end had to be made of V beach. The whole fleet collected and all morning blew the ridge and castle and town to pieces.

“And all the time that wonderful infantry went forward up the hill and through the ruined town. The troops that went in that attack had already lost half their strength; the officers that led up those narrow streets were nearly all killed. Dead beat, at 1 o'clock, before the final rush, they hesitated. Then our last colonel, a staff man, Col. Doughty Wylie, ran ashore with a cane, ran right up the hill, ran through the last handful of men sheltering under the crest, took them with a rush into the Turkish trench, and fell with a bullet through his head. But the Turks ran and the ridge was ours.”

Many weeks of bloody fighting followed and while there was talk early in November of a possible abandonment of the Dardanelles campaign, the end of the month found the struggle still in progress, with no end in sight.



Official figures made public October 15, show that the British casualties at the Dardanelles up to October 9 were 96,899, of whom 1,185 were officers. The casualties among the Australian troops on the Gallipoli peninsula up to the same date amounted to 29,121 officers and men.

#### THE ATTITUDE OF GREECE.

On September 23, acting upon the advice of Premier Venizelos, King Constantine of Greece ordered a general mobilization of the Greek army, "as a measure of elementary prudence in view of the mobilization of Bulgaria." Ten days later Premier Venizelos resigned upon official notice that the King could not support his war policy, which was believed to reflect the sentiments of the Greek people and to support the Allies. King Constantine then endeavored to form a coalition ministry. The great point at issue was whether Greece should support or oppose the passage of the Allies through Greek territory to the aid of Serbia. British and French troops to the number of 70,000 had meanwhile been landed at Saloniki, the great Greek seaport, and were being hurried to the support of the Serbians in their central territory, to oppose the incursion of the Austro-Germans and the Bulgarians. In November King Constantine and his military chiefs were visited by Field-Marshal Earl Kitchener, the British Secretary of War, who made such demands upon them in the interest of the Allies, backed by a temporary blockade of the Greek coasts by the British and French fleets, that on November 25 it was announced that cordial relations between Greece and the entente powers had been established. The Greek government gave assurances that no attempt would be made to interfere with the Allies' troops should they under any contingency be forced to cross the Greek frontier, but that railway and other facilities would be afforded them. It was understood that the Allies also promised Greece a mone-

tary indemnity after the war for any damage that might be done through the occupation of Greek territory.

With the question of Grecian intervention out of the way, the Allies then occupied themselves with the attitude of Rumania and the intervention of Russia in behalf of Serbia, in order that the latter country might be saved from the fate of Belgium. It was generally understood that Rumania could not afford to incur the enmity of Germany by active interference in behalf of Serbia, even though the Serbians and Rumanians were natural allies against Bulgaria.

On November 26, M. Pachitch, the Serbian premier, received a personal telegram from the Russian emperor, in which the latter promised the early appearance in Bulgaria of Russian troops and the Italian government also promised the Serbians to send to their aid an expeditionary force of 40,000 men. It was believed possible that the Russian forces might seek to advance through Rumania, instead of forcing a landing on the Black Sea coast of Bulgaria—in which case the crossing of Rumanian territory by Russian troops would bring Rumania into a serious situation both economically and politically, and render it difficult if not impossible for her to preserve her neutrality. At this time Russia had concentrated a great army near the Rumanian frontier, and it was understood that a large number of heavy guns had arrived at Odessa for its use. The direction in which this Russian army would move depended entirely upon the policy adopted by the Rumanian government.

#### AMERICAN LOAN TO THE ALLIES.

On September 28, formal announcement was made in New York of the terms of an American loan to Great Britain and France, arranged by a commission of British and French financial authorities after conferences with American bankers; a bond issue of \$500,000,000 was soon floated, drawing 5 per

cent interest and issued to the syndicate at 96; the money to remain in the United States and to be used only in payment for commodities.

Late in November the French people were called upon to subscribe to a "loan of victory." The response from the people of Paris alone in one day amounted to \$5,000,000,000, thus exceeding the records of all former popular war loans, including British and German issues, and typifying the patriotic ardor of the French people and their determination to continue the war to an issue successful to allied arms.

#### THE WESTERN CAMPAIGN.

After a week's heavy bombardment of the German lines, an important offensive movement was undertaken on September 25 by the French and British against the German lines on the western front. The forward movement occurred simultaneously in the Champagne district, between Rheims and Verdun, by the French and in the Artois district, between Ypres and Arras, by combined British and French forces. While the Allies did not succeed in gaining much ground, and both sides suffered heavy losses, it was claimed by the French war office on September 29 that as a result of the four days' assaults of the Anglo-French forces the Germans suffered losses amounting to the effective strength of 120,000 men, while 23,000 men and 120 cannon were captured from the Teutonic enemy. This constituted the result of what was described as the great Anglo-French drive of the autumn, and the situation on the western front then settled down once more into a state of siege. The first-line trenches of the opposing forces along a wide-flung front were within a short distance of each other. A new method of warfare had been developed and the world began to realize that all historic conditions of war had been revolutionized by the use of scientific weapons of destruction like the machine gun, which mowed down men like hay, and the high explosive shell that destroyed protective works as if they were made of card-

board and filled the trenches with dead and dying bodies.

Such was the situation on the western front in the beginning of December. No let-up in the determination of either side; no advance seemingly possible, no attack that was not followed by a counter-attack; no gain of any consequence anywhere; no possibility seemingly of any decisive battle; nothing in sight but an absolute deadlock.

#### ON THE EASTERN FRONT.

Late in September the German campaign against Russia appeared to lose most of its force. Continued attempts were made by Field Marshal von Hindenburg to fight his way to Riga, but without avail, and Russian successes at various points along the eastern battle front were numerous in October and November. The Russians declared on November 15 that they deemed the city of Riga safe, and by November 26 it was apparent that the Germans were engaged in a general retirement all along the River Dvina. The Allies then became interested in the Kaiser's probable choice of a line of defense for the winter on the northern section of his Russian front. The breakdown of the German offensive was attributed by the Allies to three things—the increase in the Russian ammunition supply, a German shortage of munitions, and the weakening of the German line for the Balkan campaign.

#### BULGARIA ENTERS THE WAR.

On October 1, 1915, it was evident that Bulgarian forces would shortly be employed on the side of the central powers. Bulgarian troops from Sofia were moving on to the Serbian frontier. King Ferdinand had ordered the mobilization of all men under sixty-five years of age and martial law was proclaimed, no citizen under forty-five being allowed to leave the country. On October 4 Russia sent an ultimatum to Bulgaria and the Russian minister was ordered to leave Sofia if by 4 p. m., October 5, Bulgaria did not definitely break with Germany, Austria and Turkey. All the allied powers sup-



ported Russia in this demand. Bulgaria did not reply within the time specified and the Russian minister was reported too ill to move from Sofia, thus indicating that the diplomats of the great contending powers were still at work in an effort to secure the important support of Bulgaria in the Balkan campaign which was imminent.

On October 6, when Bulgaria was said to have sent an ultimatum to Serbia demanding the territory ceded after the recent Balkan wars, the envoys of the Allies at Sofia requested their passports, and Bulgaria became an active participant in the war. The Bulgarian minister at Nish, the Serbian capital, received his passports on October 8, and on the same day the Bulgarian minister at Paris was handed his passports. On the following day, October 9, Belgrade, the former Serbian capital, was occupied by Austro-German forces and the invasion of Serbia by Austria and Germany from the north and by Bulgaria from the east began in earnest. The Serbian capital was removed the same day to Ishtib, in the south.

#### THE SERBIAN CAMPAIGN.

When the great army of Germans and Austrians entered Serbia at Belgrade and other points along the Danube and began to drive the Serbian forces to the south, they met with immediate and continued successes. Bulgarian troops meanwhile pressed the Serbians on the west and by the end of November it seemed as if the entire territory of Serbia was doomed to the fate of Belgium. But on the south, allied troops, including a great body of French who had been landed at Saloniki in Greece and made their way northward, disputed the advance of the invaders and at several points drove back the Bulgarians, thus holding the southern territory of Serbia for their ally in the same manner that Flanders was being held by the Allies for Belgium.

## CHAPTER XXV

### SECOND WINTER OF WAR

In all the arenas of the great struggle, the winter campaign of 1915-16, the second winter of the war, was accompanied by unparalleled hardships and sufferings. It was, in fact, described by Major Moraht, military expert of the Berliner Tageblatt and the best known German military critic, as "the most terrific campaign in the world's history." Hundreds of thousands of men of all classes, in all the armies stretched along the battle fronts east and west, struggled against wind, weather, and winter amid conditions of the most extreme self-denial. Speaking for the Teutonic forces in January, Major Moraht said: "On our western and eastern fronts and along the lines held by our Austro-Hungarian allies, the conditions under which we must stubbornly hold out are such as never in the history of the world's most terrible campaign had to be endured before." The winter was exceptionally severe and men were invalided by the thousands, owing to frost-bites, despite ingenious precautions and the fact that their spells in the trenches were reduced considerably.

The conditions faced by the Austrians and Italians in the Alps and on the Isonzo were especially appalling. Thus a detachment of Austrian and Alpine troops, engaged in patrol duty, met its doom in an avalanche in southern Tyrol. Only one out of twelve was rescued alive, and he lay buried under snow for fourteen hours before he was rescued.

Added to the sufferings of the fighting men during the winter the sum total of human misery in Europe when 1916 dawned was vastly increased by the awful conditions prevailing in Poland and in Serbia. Poland, a land long recognized as given over to sorrows, had been crossed and recrossed by hostile armies. It had been harried, almost destroyed. Towns and food supplies, fields and granaries, were obliterated. The cattle had been driven off by the invaders and the people were left starving. The misery of Belgium a year before was as nothing compared with the misery of Poland amid the rigors of winter, and the unhappy country clamored for the help of happier peoples. It had become a land of graves and trenches, of ruin and destruction on a scale that had been wrought nowhere else by the war. Many of the abandoned trenches were the temporary "homes" of countless refugees, mostly women and children, who had been driven from their homes in the burned and ruined villages that dotted the land. And there was little or no relief in sight for the

stricken Poles, innocent victims of a ruthless war and pitiful playthings of Fate.

#### ON THE WESTERN FRONT

Artillery fighting with mortars and long-range cannon was a continuous performance during December and January in nearly every section of the western battle line. Every day tens of thousands of shells, both high explosive and shrapnel, were hurled at the trenches and men were killed or wounded by the score at a time. To the war-hardened men behind the guns on both sides this business of slaying and running the risk of being slain or crippled became so prolonged and monotonous that they thought no more of it than of cutting down a forest or building a pontoon bridge.

Early in January the city of Nancy, just behind the French lines, was bombarded for three days by German 15-inch guns. Much damage was done and a number of the inhabitants were killed and wounded. As a consequence there was an exodus from the city, safe conducts being issued to more than 30,000 persons.

Estimates made in Vienna of the total booty of the Teutonic allies during the first seventeen months of the war, up to January 1, 1916, were as follows: Nearly 3,000,000 prisoners, 10,000 guns, and 40,000 machine guns, while 470,000 square kilometers of enemy territory had been occupied.

About the same time the German losses, as compiled from official lists, were estimated at 2,588,000, including over 500,000 killed and 350,000 taken by the Allies as prisoners of war.

#### CONSCRIPTION IN ENGLAND

After every effort had been exhausted in the British Isles to raise troops by voluntary enlistment, first under Lord Kitchener and then under Lord Derby, the British government was finally compelled to resort to conscription, although nearly 3,000,000 men had voluntarily responded to the call to the colors. A bill was presented in the House of Commons by Premier Asquith on January 5, 1916, providing for compulsory service by "all men between the ages of 18 and 41 who are bachelors or widowers without children dependent on them." Ireland was excluded from the terms of the measure, which finally passed the Commons on January 20, the opposition having dwindled to a meager handful of votes. Four members of the Cabinet, however, resigned as a protest against conscription.

#### BRITISH BATTLESHIPS SUNK

On January 9 the British battleship King Edward VII foundered at sea as the result of striking a mine. Owing to a heavy sea it had to be abandoned and sank shortly afterward. The entire crew of

nearly 800 men were saved. The vessel was a predreadnaught of 16,350 tons and cost nearly \$8,000,000. A week previously the British battleship *Natal*, a vessel of similar character, was sunk by an internal explosion.

The main battle fleets of both Britain and Germany remained "in statu quo" up to March 1, 1916. British cruisers and patrol ships maintained a constant watch upon the waters of the North Sea, and visitors permitted to see the battle fleet at its secret rendezvous reported efficiency and eternal vigilance as its watchwords. The German fleet lay in safety in the Kiel Canal, still awaiting orders to put to sea and enjoy "der Tag," after nineteen months of inactivity.

#### RUSSIA'S WINTER CAMPAIGN

After several months of comparative inactivity Russia launched a forward movement against the Austro-German forces late in December. This winter drive was not unexpected, as the Russian armies had had time to recover from their reverses of the summer and autumn of 1915 and had received much-needed supplies of guns and ammunition.

The fact that Russia was vigorously on the offensive again was soon demonstrated. The first week of 1916 was marked by a progressive development of a forward Russian movement extending along the Styre and Strypa rivers from the Pripiet marshes to Besarabia. The main attack seemed to be directed against Bukowina and Eastern Galicia, and for some time the pressure of the Russian attacks forced back the lines of the Austro-German right along the eastern front.

During January the Russians were also actively engaged against the Turks in the Caucasus, where the battle front was over 100 miles long, and against the Turks, aided by Germans in Persia. They began a general offensive in the Caucasus on January 11 and made steady gains over the Turks, while similar successes attended their efforts in Persia, where revolutionists had entered the field against the Russians and British.

#### THE BALKAN CAMPAIGN

The month of December saw the end of the Austro-German and Bulgarian drives through Serbia. By the end of the year the remnants of the Serbian army had been driven across the frontiers and some 50,000 of them found refuge in January on the Greek island of Corfu, which was seized by the Allies for that purpose. King Peter found an asylum in Italy; Belgrade and Nish were occupied by Austrians and Germans, and the Bulgarians halted at the Greek border. The small British and French forces in Serbia, greatly outnumbered, retired before the enemy's advance from north and east,



but saved the Serbian army from total annihilation by protecting its retreat to the southern frontier. Then the British and French retreated across the Greek border to Saloniki, where they were largely reinforced and proceeded to fortify themselves against possible German or Bulgarian attacks. King Constantine of Greece, brother-in-law of the Kaiser, feebly protested against the proceedings of the Allies on Greek soil, saying that he wished his country to remain neutral—but his protest was offset by the facts that the great majority of the people of Greece were favorable to the Allies and that their landing at Saloniki was for the purpose of aiding Serbia, Greece's friend and ally, which Greece had notably failed to do. Frequent threats of the bombardment of Saloniki by the Germans or by the Bulgars were made during January, but up to February 10 the threatened attack had failed to materialize and the Allies were strongly intrenched in a 30-mile arc around the town, while the guns of a powerful fleet of British and French warships commanded the approaches and protected transports and landings.

#### SINKING OF THE PERSIA

On December 30 the Peninsular & Oriental liner *Persia* was torpedoed by a submarine, probably Austrian, in the Mediterranean about 300 miles northwest of Alexandria, and sank in five minutes. One hundred and fifty-five out of the 400 passengers and crew were landed at Alexandria on January 1, and eleven others were subsequently reported safe. Among those lost was Robert N. McNeely, who was on his way to take up his duties as American consul at Aden.

#### FROM BERLIN TO CONSTANTINOPLE

By the middle of January German engineers had succeeded in repairing the railroad bridges and roadbed destroyed during the Serbian campaign and thus reopened direct communication between Berlin and Constantinople.

#### CANADIAN PARLIAMENT BUILDING BURNED

On the night of February 3 the beautiful Gothic structure which housed the Canadian Parliament at Ottawa—the architectural pride of the Dominion—was wrecked by a fire which started in a reading room adjacent to the chamber of the House of Commons. Six persons, two of them women friends of the Speaker's family, lost their lives. The House was in session when the fire broke out, and many members and other occupants of the building escaped narrowly and with great difficulty. The money loss from the fire was enormous, and priceless paintings, books and national documents were destroyed.

Opinions differed as to the causes of the fire, but the occurrence about the same time of several highly suspicious fires in Canadian **munition** factories and the unexplained rapidity with which the

Parliament Building fire spread with mysterious volumes of suffocating smoke, caused widespread suspicion that the disaster was of incendiary and enemy origin. A tidal wave of resentment flooded the Dominion and deep feeling was aroused against men of German birth or extraction remaining in Canada, some of them occupying public positions of responsibility. A Commission was appointed by the Government to investigate the causes of the fire, and, pending its report, official denials were made that German spies had anything to do with the burning of the Houses of Parliament. These denials, however, failed to convince the Canadian people that German sympathizers were entirely innocent of any participation in the origin of the conflagration.

The ruined building was the central structure of the magnificent group of Government buildings at Ottawa, and one of the finest examples of Gothic architecture on the Continent. The Library of Parliament, occupying a separate structure in the rear of the building wrecked, was fortunately spared by the fire. It was announced by the Premier, Sir Robert Borden, that steps would be taken to replace the Parliament Building with a still finer structure, and the Houses of Parliament continued their sessions in temporary quarters. One immediate result of the fire and of the suspicions attached to its origin was to stimulate recruiting in the Dominion and stiffen the resolve of the Canadian people to do their utmost to aid the success of British arms at the European front. Canada became more than ever an armed camp of determined patriots. The general sentiment was expressed by the *Toronto Globe*, which said: "If German agents see a way to injure Canada, they will stop at nothing to compass their ends. Arson to them is a commonplace and murder an incident in the day's work. The destruction of the Parliament Building may have been the result of an accident, but the general belief at Ottawa is that it was the work of an incendiary."

#### RUSSIAN SUCCESSES IN ASIA MINOR

On February 15, following a five days' siege, Erzerum, the great Armenian fortress, where the main Turkish army of the Caucasus had taken refuge, fell into the hands of the Russians. The Turkish army numbered 160,000 men and was under the chief command of the German general, Field Marshal von der Goltz, formerly military governor of Belgium. The main body of the Turks managed to avoid capture at Erzerum, but the Russians took 15,000 prisoners there, besides hundreds of guns and immense quantities of munitions and supplies. Then began a determined and deadly pursuit of the Turkish army, with the object of driving it out of Armenia, and the efforts of the Russians met with continued successes. Turkish opposition in Asia Minor was swiftly broken down, and steps were taken by the Russians to relieve the British force which had been long

beleagured by the Turks at Kut-el-Amara, in Mesopotamia, 150 miles from Erzerum.

On February 27-28 the Turks hastily evacuated the important Black Sea port of Trebizond and neighboring cities before the victorious Russian advance. On March 1 two Russian armies were moving rapidly on Trebizond, one along the shores of the Black Sea through Rizeh, and the other in a northwesterly direction from Erzerum. The capture of Erzerum was effected in bitter wintry weather. During the assault on the fortress several Turkish regiments were annihilated or taken prisoners with all their officers. Many Turks perished from the cold.

#### GREAT BATTLE BEFORE VERDUN

One of the greatest and most sanguinary battles of the war began before Verdun on February 20, when the army of the Crown Prince of Germany, in the presence of the Kaiser, started a determined and desperate drive against the great French fortress. Ever since the battle of the Marne halted the German advance on Paris early in September, 1914, the forces of the Crown Prince had been striving unsuccessfully to break through the French lines north and east of Verdun, but the fortress had well maintained its reputation for impregnability and continued to bar the high road to Paris.

For ten days the battle raged on the plains, in the forests and on the hills before Verdun, and the loss of life was appalling on both sides. By February 26, after six days of continuous fighting, the Germans had penetrated the French lines along several miles of front, had occupied several villages a few miles north of Verdun, driven the French from the peninsula of the Meuse formed by a bend of the river about six miles from the city, and carried by storm the outlying fort of Douaumont, at the northeast corner of the Verdun fortifications. But their advance was then halted by the French in a series of the most brilliant counter-attacks, and the German offensive appeared to die down by March 1, when their losses in the ten days' battle were estimated at 175,000, including between 40,000 and 50,000 killed. The French losses were heavy, but the nature of the German attacks, in which huge masses of men were hurled against the French entrenchments, exposed the Teuton forces to the most withering and destructive fire from the French 75-centimeters and machine guns. The battle exceeded in violence and losses even the great battle of the Yser earlier in the war. Heavy reinforcements had been brought to the Verdun front by the Germans, and it was estimated that their forces engaged in the attack numbered at least 500,000 men, supported by numerous 15-inch and 17-inch Austrian mortars, with all the heavy German artillery used in the Serbian campaign and part of that formerly employed on the Russian front.

While the battle of Verdun was in progress, the Germans also made determined attacks in the Champagne region, gaining some ground;

but on March 1 the Allied lines were holding fast all along the western front.

Wounded soldiers returning from the front during the bloody struggle before Verdun told tragic tales of the fighting. "I watched the assault of the Germans upon the village of Milancourt, near the Meuse," said a wounded Frenchman. "They came in solid ranks, without a word, loading and reloading their rifles without cessation. Our seventy-fives fell among them, and then the mitrailleuses entered into action. It was no longer a battalion. It was a few scattered groups of men that one saw, torn by a rain of shells and bullets, squeezing close against each other as though for mutual protection.

"On the border of Montfaucon I saw one of these groups disappear at one blow, as if they had been swallowed into a marsh. Our shells! What frightful work they did. Never will I forget those fragments of human beings that fell just at my feet. Never can I forget that terrible picture.

"I followed the attack on Haumont and Samogneux. The field of battle was lighted as if in full day by star shells. Black masses of Germans advanced, protected by their artillery, while ours remained silent. Finally our artillery began, and then the enemy ranks wavered, halted and disappeared.

"Our guns had waited until the Germans were in a little hollow all arranged for the massacre. In a little while there lay the bodies of some 2,000 or 3,000 Germans. They occupied some villages, but their attack on Verdun has failed after terrible losses."

#### GERMAN SUBMARINE ACTIVITIES

The sinking of British and French ships, and sometimes neutral vessels, by German and Austrian submarines continued during the month of February. On February 27 the Peninsular & Oriental Line steamship *Maloja*, of 12,431 tons, was sunk by a torpedo or mine only two miles off the Admiralty pier at Dover, with a loss of 155 lives, including many passengers, men, women and children, en route to India. Dozens of craft went at once to the rescue, and one of them, the *Empress of Fort William*, a vessel of 2,181 tons, was also torpedoed or struck a mine and sank nearby. Of the *Maloja's* passengers and crew, 260 were rescued.

On February 28 the great French liner *La Provence* was sunk in the Mediterranean with a loss estimated at 900 lives. It had a displacement of 19,200 tons, length 602 feet, beam 65 feet, and had been in the service of the French Government as a troop transport.

Under new orders to their submarine commanders, in spite of protests by the United States Government, Germany and Austria inaugurated on March 1 the policy of sinking without warning all Allied merchant vessels believed to carry any armament for defensive purposes, and the world waited with bated breath for fresh developments of the Teutonic campaign of frightfulness.



## CHAPTER XXVI

### CLIMAX OF THE WAR.

*Prolonged Battle of Verdun the Most Terrible in History—  
Enormous Losses on Both Sides—Submarine Activ-  
ity Imperils Relations of America and Germany.*

Beginning with the first infantry attack by the Germans on Monday, February 21, after twenty-four hours of continuous bombardment, the battles incident to the siege of Verdun were fought at brief intervals during the next two months, down to the middle of April, and marked the climax of the War. The losses on both sides were enormous and extraordinary, and taken as a whole the struggle on the semicircular front north and east of the great French stronghold fully justified its description as "the most terrible battle in the world's history."

When spring of 1916, arrived, the struggle seemed to be a pretty even draw, but the end was not in sight. Both sides showed the greatest confidence in the outcome. In France the confidence of the nation found expression in the voice of M. Alexandre Ribot, the veteran minister of finance, who, having Verdun before his eyes, told the Chamber of Deputies: "We have reached the decisive hour. We can say without exaggeration, without illusion, and without vain optimism, that we now see the end of this horrible war."

But while the French were certain that victory would ultimately be theirs, the German papers and people were just as fully persuaded that this finest of the fortresses of France would finally fall before the determined assaults of the Kaiser's army, which no fort had, as yet, stopped.

Both sides recognized that this was the supreme moment of the War. The Germans had gained by April 15 from three to five miles along a front of about 15 miles, but had taken only two of the ring

of minor forts around Verdun. The French claimed that the configuration of the ground occupied by the contending forces at that time made their line impregnable. Although Verdun was said by the German military experts to be only an incident in the German offensive which was planned to secure the final "decision," they realized the importance of Verdun to their whole line on the Western front, and knew its value too well not to make the most desperate and exhaustive efforts for its conquest.

#### A TERRIFIC ARTILLERY DUEL.

For many weeks the battle for Verdun was signalized by the most terrific artillery fire in history. No words can tell of the ear-stunning roar of the guns, or depict the horror of the tons of steel daily crashing and splintering amid massed bodies of men, while the softly-falling snows of late winter covered, but could not conceal, the ensanguined landscape. Modern warfare was seen at Verdun in all its panoply of terror. Amid fire and fury, the rich and fertile countryside was transformed into a vast scene of ruin and desolation, while heroism and self-sacrifice abounded on both sides, men were maddened by the frenzy of the fight and the ghastly horrors of night and day, and Death stalked gloatingly and glutted, but never surfeited, over the bloody field.

The German attacks followed one another so fast and so furiously that the weeks of fighting became one prolonged battle, and a description of one attack will almost serve for all. Thus, a wounded French officer said of the seven days of continuous fighting which opened the German offensive against Verdun: "The first symptom of the battle favorable to the French was the inability of the Germans to silence the French artillery. The attack opened with strong reconnoitering parties advancing, wherein was noted an unusually large proportion of officers. For the first time the German officers were seen to be leading their men into battle, instead of driving them, as had been the rule—and this was said to be at the behest of the watching Kaiser. Then came the infantry in great numbers. During the next two days the fighting waxed fiercer and fiercer.

"At first fourteen German divisions were engaged, then sixteen,

and finally seventeen divisions (340,000 men). The French command at this point carried out a maneuver which will be recorded as a masterpiece in military history.

"If the Germans had been only fifteen yards away, the French could have been submerged by the attack, providing the attacking forces were prepared to make any sacrifice, but the distance being 1,500 yards there was little chance for the Germans against the opposing artillery. The French troops were accordingly swung back to positions from which they could see the Germans approaching over exposed ground. The effect was that the immediate front of the attack, which was originally twenty-five miles in extent, was reduced to nine miles, but even this soon proved too wide. The German losses were so great that the attack could not be kept up at all points; and at the end of the seventh day the offensive dwindled to fragmentary attacks,—but only to be renewed with added vigor after a brief period of rest for the infantry on both sides, while the artillery kept up its daily and nightly duel without ceasing, until the entire terrain became an earthly inferno, thickly scattered over with the dead and the dying."

#### THE DEADLY MINE IN CAURES WOOD.

Frightful in result, too, was the tragic stratagem played on the Germans in Caures Wood, near the village of Beaumont. The whole wood had been mined by the French, and was connected electrically with a station in the village. When the Germans had advanced, fully a division strong, to attack the wood, the French regiment holding it ran, as if seized with panic, back toward the village. The Germans pursued them with shouts of victory. Soon the last Frenchman had emerged from the trees, but the French commander waited until the Germans were all in the mined area. They were just beginning to debouch on the other side when he pressed the button. There was a tremendous roar, drowning for a moment even the boom of the cannon. The wood was covered with a cloud of smoke, and even on the French trenches in Beaumont "there rained a ghastly dew." When the French re-entered the wood, unopposed, they found not a single German unwounded, and hardly a score alive.

## GERMAN LOSSES AT VERDUN.

The German successes during the weeks of fighting in the vicinity of Verdun, consisting of a series of advances along the front, without any decisive result so far as the strength of the defense of the main fortress was concerned, were gained at the cost of enormous losses in killed and wounded. These losses were estimated on April 7 to have reached the huge total of 200,000—one of the greatest battle losses in the whole range of warfare. During the period from February 21, when the battle of Verdun began, to April 1, it was said that two German army corps had been withdrawn from the front, having lost in the first attacks at least one-third of their force. They subsequently reappeared and again suffered like losses, the German reinforcements being practically used up as fast as they were put in line.

Declarations gathered from prisoners and the observations of the French staff led the latter to estimate that at least one-third of the total number of men engaged were the minimum losses of the German infantry during the first forty days of the battle, or 150,000 men of the first fighting line alone.

Concerning the German losses before Verdun, Col. Feyler, a Swiss military expert, wrote on April 10 as follows: "It is certain that the first great attacks in February and March caused the German assailants very exceptional losses. The 18th army corps lost 17,000 men and the 3d corps lost 22,000. These are figures which in the history of wars will form a magnificent eulogy on the heroism of these troops. It will become a classic example, like that of the Prussian Guard at St. Privat, France, August 18, 1870. It is probable that before Verdun, as at St. Privat, the leaders underestimated the defenders' strength, especially in cannon and machine guns.

"There are other examples. In the unfruitful attack on Fort Vaux, the 7th reserve regiment was literally mowed down by machine guns, while the 60th regiment lost 60 per cent of its effectives. In the attack on the Malancourt and Avocourt woods, March 20, three regiments of the 11th Bavarian division, whose record in this war seems to have been particularly praiseworthy, lost about 50 per cent of their men."

## LOSSES OF THE FRENCH.

While the greater bulk of the total losses in killed and wounded before Verdun was sustained by the Germans, however, it must not be imagined for an instant that the French defenders of the fortress escaped lightly. On the contrary, their losses were likewise enormous, being estimated by the German general staff at a total of



not less than 110,000 from February 20 to April 1. A considerable number of French troops, officers and men, were also captured by the Germans during the numerous attacks in February, March and April upon the French trenches and other positions before Verdun.

#### A MILLION MEN ENGAGED.

Some idea of the tremendous forces engaged on both sides in what will probably be called in history "the Siege of Verdun," may be gained from the brief summary made on April 1 by an observer present with the army of the Crown Prince of Germany on the north front of the Verdun battlefield, from which point of vantage he telegraphed as follows:

"Probably not far from a million men are battling on both sides around Verdun. Never in the history of the world have such enormous masses of military been engaged in battle at one point.

"On the forty-mile semicircular firing-line around the French fortress, from the River Meuse above St. Mihiel to Avocourt, the Germans probably have several thousand guns, at least 2,500, in action or reserve. Were each gun fired only once an hour, there would be a shot every second.

"As probably half the guns are of middle and heavy caliber, the average weight per shell is certain to be more than twenty-five pounds. It follows that even in desultory firing about 160,000 pounds of iron, or from four to five carloads, are raining on the French positions every hour. And this is magnified many times when the fire is increased to the intensity which the artillerymen call 'drumming' the positions of the enemy.

"To the German guns must be added the tremendous amount of artillery used by the French in their defense, estimated to be almost as large now as that of the Germans. The conclusion is that more than 6,000 cannon, varying from 3-inch field guns to 42-centimeter (16-inch) siege mortars, are engaged in hurling thousands of high explosive shells hourly in the never-ceasing, thunderous artillery duels of the mighty battle of Verdun."

#### FROM A GERMAN OFFICER'S VIEWPOINT.

The stories told by those who, on the German side, lay in trenches under shell-fire before Verdun for days at a time and week after week, freezing, thirsting, in mud and water, between the dead and the dying, thrilled the hearer with their pathos and devotion. These were the men who, like the waves of the sea, beat almost incessantly against the obstinate fortifications of Verdun, and there learned a new respect for the French enemy. Such a story was written from the front in April by a German officer named Ross—

a man of Scottish descent—who, before the war, was editor of a newspaper in Munich. In the Berlin Vossische Zeitung he said:

"It is a worthy, embittered foe against whom this last decisive struggle is aimed. France is fighting for her existence. She is no weaker than we are in men, guns, or munitions. Only one thing decides between us—will and nerves. Every doubting, belittling word is a creeping poison which kills joyful, strong hope and does more damage than a thousand foes. Only if we are convinced to our marrow that we shall win, shall we conquer.

"In this colossal combat, where numbers and mechanical weapons are so utterly alike, moral superiority is everything. We have more than once had the experience that the effective result of a battle has depended upon who considered himself the victor and acted accordingly. Often the merest remnant of will and nerves was the factor that influenced the decision.

"War, which only smoldered here and there during the endless trench fighting, like damp wood, burns here with such all-consuming fire that divisions have to be called up after days and hours in the trenches, and are ground to pieces and burned up into so many cinders and ashes.

"Such intensity of battle as is here before Verdun is unheard of. No picture, no comparison, can give the remotest conception of the concentration of guns and shells with which the two antagonists are raging against each other. I have seen troops who had held out in the fire for days and weeks, to whom in exposed positions food could hardly be brought, on whose bodies the clothes were not dry, who, yet reeking with dirt and dampness, had the nerve for new storming operations."

#### BATTLE OF CAILLETTE WOOD.

Among the fiercer struggles before Verdun, the battle of Caillette Wood, east of the fortress city, will have a place in history as one of the most bloody and thrilling.

The position of the wood, to the right of Douaumont, was important as part of the French line. It was carried by the Germans on Sunday morning, April 2, after a bombardment of twelve hours, which seemed to break even the record of Verdun for intensity. The French curtain of fire had checked their further advance, according to a special correspondent of the Chicago Herald, and a savage countercharge in the afternoon had gained for the defenders a corpse-strewn welter of splintered trees and shell-shattered ground that had been the southern corner of the wood. Further charges had broken against a massive barricade, the value of which as a defense paid good interest on the expenditure of German lives which its construction demanded.

A wonderful work had been accomplished that Sunday morning in the livid, London-like fog and twilight produced by the lowering clouds and battle smoke.

#### FORMED A HUMAN CHAIN UNDER FIRE.

While the German assaulting columns in the van fought the French hand to hand, picked corps of workers behind them formed an amazing human chain from the woods to the east over the shoulder of the center of the Douaumont slope to the crossroads of a network of communicating trenches 600 yards in the rear.

Four deep was this human chain, and along its line nearly 3,000 men passed an unending stream of wooden billets, sandbags, chevaux-de-frise, steel shelters, and light mitrailleuses—in a word, all the material for defensive fortifications passed from hand to hand, like buckets at a country fire.

Despite the hurricane of French artillery fire, the German commander had adopted the only possible means of rapid transport over the shell-torn ground covered with debris, over which neither horse nor cart could go. Every moment counted. Unless barriers rose swiftly, the French counter-attacks, already massing, would sweep the assailants back into the wood.

Cover was disdained. The workers stood at full height, and the chain stretched openly across the hillocks, a fair target for the French gunners. The latter missed no chance. Again and again great holes were torn in the line by the bursting melinite, but as coolly as at maneuvers the iron-disciplined soldiers of Germany sprang forward from shelters to take the places of the fallen, and the work went on apace.

#### USE THE DEAD AS A SHELTER.

Gradually another line doubled the chain of the workers, as the upheaved corpses formed a continuous embankment, each additional dead man giving greater protection to his comrades, until the barrier began to form shape along the diameter of the wood. There others were digging and burying logs deep in the earth, installing shelters and mitrailleuses or feverishly building fortifications.

At last the work was ended at fearful cost; but as the vanguard sullenly withdrew behind it, from the whole length burst a havoc of flame upon the advancing Frenchmen. Vainly the latter dashed forward. They couldn't pass, and as the evening fell the barrier still held, covering the German working parties, burrowed like moles in the mass of trenches and boyeaux.

#### FRENCH PLAN TO BLAST BARRICADE.

So sound was the barricade, padded with sandbags and earth-







## THE VERDUN BATTLEFIELD

## Key to Map on Opposite Page

Battle lines showing the approximate positions of the German troops at Verdun at various dates are designated in the map as follows:

- A. Positions Feb. 21, 1916, when German offensive was begun.
- B. Positions on Feb. 23.
- C. Positions on Feb. 25.
- D. Positions on Feb. 27.
- E. Bethincourt salient, April 7, before French retired.
- F. Positions on April 18.

The more important actions of the Verdun campaign in their chronological order are indicated as follows:

- 1. Germans open offensive against Verdun, piercing French lines.
- 2. French evacuate Haumont, Feb. 22.
- 3. French recapture Forest of Caures, Feb. 22, but lose it again.
- 4. Germans pierce French line, taking 3,000 prisoners.
- 5. Germans capture Brabant, Haumont, Samogneux, etc., Feb. 23.
- 6. Berlin reports capture of four villages and 10,000 French prisoners, Feb. 23.
- 7. Germans capture Louvemont and fortified positions Feb. 25. Fort Douaumont stormed by Brandenburg corps, then surrounded by French, but relieved by Germans March 3.
- 8. Germans take Champneuville Feb. 27, with 5,000 prisoners.
- 9. Bloody encounters at village of Eix on Woivre plain, Feb. 27.
- 10. Germans occupy Moranville and Haudiomont, Feb. 27.
- 11. Champlon and Manheulles fall Feb. 28; 1,300 French prisoners.
- 12. Verdun battered and set on fire by 42-centimeter guns.
- 13. French evacuate Fort Vaux, after heavy bombardment, March 1.
- 14. Germans begin violent bombardment of Dead Man's Hill, March 1.
- 15. Germans capture village of Douaumont, March 2; 1,000 prisoners.
- 16. Fresnes captured by Germans, March 5.
- 17. Germans capture Forges, March 5; drive against French left wing.
- 18. Germans take Regneville, west of Meuse, March 6.
- 19. Germans capture heights of Cumieres, etc., March 7.
- 20. Village of Vaux taken and retaken by Germans, March 8-10.
- 21. Crown Prince brings up 100,000 reinforcements, March 10-12.
- 22. French recapture trenches March 14, with 1,000 German prisoners.
- 23. Struggle for heights of Le Mort Homme, March 16.
- 24. Germans capture positions north of Avocourt, March 20.
- 25. Artillery duels east of Verdun, March 25.
- 26. French recapture part of Avocourt Wood, March 28.
- 27. Germans capture Malancourt, March 29-31.
- 28. Heavy fighting south of Douaumont, April 2-5; French successes in battle of Caillette woods, etc.
- 29. Germans recapture Haucourt, April 6.
- 30. Germans close in on Bethincourt salient, April 7.
- 31. French withdraw from Bethincourt April 9, but hold lines south.
- 32. French lines bombarded continuously, April 10-15, with violent assaults but no decisive results.

works, that the artillery fire fell practically unavailing, and the French general realized that the barrier must be breached by explosives, as in Napoleon's battles.

It was 8 o'clock and already pitch dark in that blighted atmosphere when a special blasting corps, as devoted as the German chain workers, crept forward toward the German position. The rest of the French waited, sheltered in the ravine east of Douaumont, until an explosion should signal the assault.

In Indian file, to give the least possible sign of their presence to the hostile sentinels, the French blasters advanced in a long line, at first with comparative rapidity, only stiffening into the grotesque rigidity of simulated death when the searchlights played upon them, and resuming progress when the beam shifted. Then as they approached the barrier they moved slowly and more slowly. When they arrived within forty yards the movement of the crawling men became imperceptible.

The blasting corps lay at full length, like hundreds of other motionless forms about them, but all were working busily. With a short trowel, the file leader scuffed the earth from under his body, taking care not to raise his arms, and gradually making a shallow trench deep enough to hide him. The others followed his example until the whole line had sunk beneath the surface.

Then the leader began scooping his way forward, while his followers deepened the furrow already made. Thus literally inch by inch the files stole forward, sheltered in a narrow ditch from the gusts of German machine-gun fire that constantly swept the terrain. Here and there the sentinels' eyes caught a suspicious movement or an incautiously raised head sank down pierced by a bullet, but the stealthy, molelike advance continued. Hours passed. It was nearly dawn when the remnant of the blasting corps reached the barricade at last and hurriedly put their explosives in position. Back they wriggled breathlessly. An over-hasty movement meant death, yet they must hurry lest the imminent explosions overwhelm them.

Suddenly there was a roar that dwarfed the cannonade and all along the barrier fountains of fire rose skyward, hurling a rain of fragments upon what was left of the blasting party.

### THREE OUT OF FOUR DIE.

The barricade was breached, but 75 per cent of the devoted corps had given their lives to do it.

As the survivors lay exhausted the attackers charged over them, cheering. In the melee that followed there was no room to shoot or wield the rifle. Some of the French fought with unfixed bayonets, like the stabbing swords of the Roman legions. Others

had knives or clubs. All were battle-frenzied, as only Frenchmen can be.

The Germans broke, and as the first rays of dawn streaked the sky only a small section of the wood was still in their hands. There a similar barrier stopped progress, and it was evident that the night's work must be repeated; but the hearts of the French soldiers were leaping with victory as they dug furiously to consolidate the ground they had gained, strewn with German bodies, thick as leaves. Over 6,000 Germans were counted in a section a quarter of a mile square, and the conquerors saw why their cannonade had been so ineffective. The Germans had piled a second barrier of corpses close behind the first, so that the soft human flesh would act as a buffer to neutralize the force of the shells.

#### FRENCH DEFENSE TRULY HEROIC.

While all the German attacks upon the French lines in front of Verdun were marked with the utmost valor and intensity of devotion, the continuous defense made by the French under General Petain was equally vigorous and often truly heroic. Volunteers frequently remained in the French trenches from which the rest of the French defenders had been compelled to retire, to telephone information about the advancing enemy to the French batteries, and some of the heaviest losses of the Germans occurred when they believed themselves successful in an attack.

The consequences of such devotion on the part of French volunteers were exemplified early in the morning of April 12, at a point called Caurettes Woods, along the northeastern slopes of the hill known as Le Mort Homme (Dead Man's Hill), where a French withdrawal had been carried out. Volunteers remained behind to signal information to the French batteries, and an eyewitness of the attack described what followed thus:

"The French seventy-fives immediately concentrated on the hostile trench line. The Germans suffered heavily, but persevered, and soon dense columns appeared amid the shell-torn brushwood on the southern fringe of the Corbeaux Wood, pouring down into the valley separating them from the former French position on the hillside.

"Thinking the French still held the latter, the Germans deployed with their latest trench-storming device in the form of liquid fire containers, with special groups of four installed, two men working the pump and two directing the fire jet.

"The grayness of the dawn was illuminated by sheets of green and red flame and black oily clouds rolled along the valley toward the river like smoke from a burning 'gusher.'

"Suddenly the air was filled with shrill whistling, as shells of the seventy-fives were hurled against the attackers. Thanks to the devoted sentinels dying at their posts in the sea of fire, the range was exact, and the exploding melinite shattered the charging columns.

"An appalling scene followed. The shells had burst or overthrown the fire containers and the Germans were seen running wildly amid the flames which overwhelmed hundreds of wounded and disabled.

#### FRENCH TROOPS CHARGE.

"In this scene of confusion the French charged with bayonet, despite the furnace heat and fumes produced by the red-hot containers flying in all directions. The enemy offered little resistance. It was like a slaughter of frenzied animals.

"The French mitrailleuse corps pressed close on their comrades' heels, placing weapons at vantage points that had escaped the fire and showering a leaden hail upon the main body of Germans retreating up Corbeaux Hill.

"Hundreds fought in a terror-stricken mob to hide in a hole that might have sheltered a score. Those beneath were stifled. Those above threw themselves screaming into the air as the bullets pierced them or fell dead in a wild dash toward a safer refuge. Flushed with success, the French charged again right to the entrance of the wood, and the slaughter recommenced.

"Five of the heroic sentinels, wonderful to say, returned with the French wave that ebbed when victory was won for that day."

#### CONDITIONS AT VERDUN ON APRIL 20.

Several determined attacks were delivered by the Germans on the French lines at Verdun between April 15 and 20, enormous masses of men, sometimes as many as 100,000, being hurled against points in the northeast sector of the battle front. But the French defense held firm, although some trenches were lost and a considerable number of French prisoners were taken. Up to this time the total number of prisoners taken by the Germans at Verdun, from the beginning of the offensive, February 21, was claimed to be 711 officers and 38,155 men.

Such were the conditions before Verdun on April 20, when, with spring well under way on the Western battle fronts, there was daily expectation of a vigorous drive by the Allies against the German lines between Verdun and the sea. While both sides expressed confidence in the outcome of the war, no man could foretell with any degree of certainty what the final result of the great struggle would be.



## ZEPPELIN RAIDS ON ENGLAND.

During the month of March and early in April a number of Zeppelin raids upon various parts of England did more or less damage, though none of an important military character. The east coast of Scotland also suffered from a Zeppelin visit in April.

Reports and figures issued by the British War Office showed that during the fifteen months from Christmas, 1914, to April 1, 1916, no fewer than thirty-four separate aerial raids occurred in Great Britain, including those of aeroplanes and Zeppelins. The total casualties suffered, mainly by civilians, men, women, and children, were 303 killed and 713 injured. This record of results is interesting when it is remembered what they must have cost the Germans in money and men, in view of the comparatively small amount of damage that seems to have been done. Germany, however, insisted that her air raids had done more substantial harm to England than the War Office would admit.

## RUSSIAN ACTIVITIES IN THE EAST.

With the approach of spring in 1916, new activities began on the Eastern front, and the Russians threatened a vigorous attack on the German lines in the north "after the thaw." By the middle of the summer the Russians expected, according to semi-official reports, to have twelve million men armed, drilled, and equipped for battle.

On April 1 the Berlin government declared that in the Russian offensive on the Eastern front, against Field Marshal von Hindenburg, which lasted from March 18 to March 30, the losses to the Russians were 140,000 out of the 500,000 men engaged. This campaign was carried on mostly in the frozen terrain of the Dvinsk marshes, and along the Dvina River, and the German losses were also heavy, although the Russian attacks were as a rule repulsed.

## FALL OF TREBIZOND.

In Asia Minor, however, Russian successes of the winter were crowned in the early spring by the fall of the Baltic seaport of Trebizond, which was occupied on April 18. This city, the most important Turkish port on the Black Sea, was captured by the Russian army advancing from Erzerum. Aided by the Russian Black Sea fleet, the invaders pushed past the last series of natural obstacles along the Anatolian coast when, on Sunday, April 16, they occupied a strongly fortified Turkish position on the left bank of the Kara Dere River, twelve miles outside the fortified town. The official Russian report said:

"Our valiant troops, after a sanguinary battle on the Kara Dere River, pressed the Turks without respite, and surmounted incredible

obstacles, everywhere breaking the fierce resistance of the enemy. The well-combined action of the fleet permitted the execution of most hazardous landing operations, and lent the support of its artillery to the troops operating in the coastal region.

"Credit for this fresh victory also is partly due the assistance given our Caucasian army by the troops operating in other directions in Asia Minor. By their desperate fighting and heroic exploits, they did everything in their power to facilitate the task of the detachments on the coast."

#### GERMANY AND THE UNITED STATES.

The long-continued controversy between the United States and Germany over the methods and results of German submarine warfare came to a climax with the torpedoing of the British channel steamer *Sussex*, on March 24, 1916, in pursuance of the new German policy of attacking merchant vessels without warning. There was no pretense that the *Sussex* was an "armed merchantman," and no warning was given the passengers and crew, the former including a number of Americans on their way from Folkestone to the French port of Dieppe. The ship, though badly damaged, made port with assistance, but the loss of life from the explosion and drowning amounted to fifty, and several American passengers were injured. Germany disclaimed responsibility for the disaster, but the weight of evidence pointed to a German submarine as the cause, and in view of the repeated violations of German promises to the United States to give due warning to passenger vessels and insure safety to their occupants, President Wilson and his advisers, in April, seriously considered the advisability of breaking off diplomatic relations with the German Empire, by way of a protest in the name of humanity. On April 18 the President decided to lay the whole matter before Congress.

The record of German submarine attacks involving death or injury to American citizens up to this time included the sinking or damaging of the following vessels: British steamer *Falaba*, 160 lives lost, including one American; American steamer *Gulfight*, three Americans lost; British steamship *Lusitania*, 1,134 lives lost, including 115 Americans; American steamer *Leelanaw*, sunk; liner *Arabic* sunk, two Americans killed; liner *Hesperian* sunk mysteriously, three days after Germany had promised to sink no more liners; Italian liner *Ancona* sunk (by Austrian submarine), with loss of American lives; Japanese liner *Yanaka Maru* sunk in Mediterranean; British liner *Persia* sunk, United States Consul McNeely killed; steamer *Sussex* attacked, several Americans seriously injured; British steamers *Manchester Engineer*, *Eagle Point* and *Berwyn Dale* attacked, endangering American members of crews.

## A FINAL NOTE TO GERMANY.

On Wednesday, April 19, President Wilson appeared before Congress, assembled in joint session for the purpose of hearing him, and announced that he had addressed a final note of warning to Germany, giving the Imperial German Government irrevocable notice that the United States would break off diplomatic relations if the illegal and inhuman submarine campaign was continued. The language used by the President, after recounting the course of events leading to his action, was as follows:

"I have deemed it my duty, therefore, to say to the Imperial German Government that if it is still its purpose to prosecute relentless and indiscriminate warfare against vessels of commerce by the use of submarines, the government of the United States is at least forced to the conclusion that there is but one course it can pursue; and that unless the Imperial German Government should now immediately declare and effect an abandonment of its present method of warfare against passenger and freight-carrying vessels this government can have no choice but to sever diplomatic relations with the government of the German Empire altogether."

## THE GERMAN WAR CLOUD PASSES.

Germany replied to the President's note on May 4, denying the implication of intentional destruction of vessels regardless of their nature or nationality, and declaring that in future no merchant vessels should be sunk without warning or without saving human lives, "unless the ships attempt to escape or offer resistance."

On May 8, President Wilson dispatched a reply to Germany's note, accepting the German promises as to the future conduct of submarine warfare, but refusing to regard them as contingent on any action between the United States and any other country. Germany later admitted that a German submarine sank the *Sussex*, and promised that the commander would be punished and indemnities paid to the families of those who perished.

This was regarded at Washington as practically closing the submarine controversy, and the German war-cloud, which had assumed serious proportions, gradually passed away.

## ABORTIVE REVOLT IN IRELAND.

An attempt at rebellion by Irish extremists, accompanied by bloody riots in Dublin and other cities in the south and west of Ireland, followed the sinking on April 21 of a German vessel which, convoyed by a submarine, endeavored to land arms and ammunition on the Irish coast. Sir Roger Casement, an anti-British Irishman of considerable note, who had been resident in Germany for some months, was taken prisoner upon landing from the submarine.

For several days, beginning April 25, the rebels, who formed an inconsiderable part of the Irish people and were strongly condemned by the Nationalist leaders and party, held possession of streets and public buildings in Dublin. Incendiary fires did damage estimated at over \$100,000,000, many peaceable citizens were killed, and the casualties among British troops and constabulary amounted to 521, including 124 killed, before the uprising was quelled and the "Irish Republic" overthrown, with the unconditional surrender of its deluded leaders, on April 30. Next day the remnants of the Sinn Fein rebels in Ireland surrendered, making over 1,000 prisoners, who were transported to English prisons. Military law had been proclaimed throughout Ireland and nearly a score of the leaders of the revolt, who were accused of murder, were tried by court-martial and summarily executed. The revolt was alleged to have been encouraged in Germany and also by Irish extremists in the United States, by whom the rebel leaders executed in Ireland were regarded as "martyrs."

#### BRITISH SURRENDER AT KUT-EL AMARA.

After holding out against the Turks at Kut-el-Amara, in Mesopotamia, for 143 days, General Townshend, the British commander, was compelled, through exhaustion of his supplies, to surrender his force of 9,000 officers and men, on April 28. This force included about 2,000 English and 7,000 Indian troops, many being on the sick list. The Turks recognized the gallantry of the defense and refused to accept General Townshend's sword. Many of the sick and wounded were exchanged, and it was planned to imprison the rest of the British force on an island in the Sea of Marmora.

#### ATTACKS ON VERDUN CONTINUE.

German attacks on the French lines at Verdun continued with the utmost vigor up to June 10. From time to time they resulted in small successes, gained at immense cost in human life. From May 27 to May 30 the battle raged with especial severity, this period marking the greatest effort made by the Germans during the whole of the prolonged operations at Verdun. The French stood firm under an avalanche of shot and shell, and drove back wave after wave of a tremendous flood of Teutonic infantry. The infantry fighting in this struggle was described as the fiercest of the war.

The total German casualties up to June 1 were estimated at nearly 3,000,000; the French at 2,500,000, and the British at 600,000, over 25,000 of the latter being commissioned officers.

General Joseph S. Gallieni, former minister of war of France, died at Versailles on May 27, universally mourned by the French, who regarded him as the saviour of Paris in the critical days of August-September, 1914, when he was military governor of Paris and commander of the intrenched camp.



## CHAPTER XXVII

### THE WORLD'S GREATEST SEA FIGHT.

*British and German High-Sea Fleets Finally Clash in the North Sea—Huge Losses in Tonnage and Men on Both Sides—British Navy Remains in Control of the Sea.*

After many months of unceasing sea patrol on the part of the British, and of diligent preparation in port on the German side, it came at last—the long-expected clash of mighty rival fleets in the North Sea.

It was on the misty afternoon of Wednesday, May 31, that Admiral David Beatty, in command of Britain's battle-cruiser squadron, sighted the vanguard of the German high-seas fleet steaming "on an enterprise to the north" from its long-accustomed anchorages in the placid waters of the Kiel Canal and under the guns of Helgoland.

The British battleship fleet was far away to the northwest, but the wireless promptly flashed the signal, "Enemy in sight," and as the battle-cruisers raced to close quarters with the tardy foe, and sacrificed themselves in the effort to hold him in the open sea, down from the north rushed the leviathans of the Mistress of the Seas, that were counted on to crush the enemy when the opportunity came.

But the early stages of the fight found the British battling against odds. Germany's mightiest warcraft were in the shadows of the mist, behind the cruiser scouts; destroyers swarmed around them, submarines appeared from the depths, and Zeppelins hovered overhead.

Gallantly did Admiral Beatty on his victorious Lion struggle to hold his own till the British battleships came up; but one after another his hard-pressed cruisers succumbed to weight of metal, until five of them had sunk beneath the sea, with all their devoted crews, before the near approach of Admiral Jellicoe and his dreadnaughts sent the enemy scuttling back to port, to claim a victory that startled the world for a day, only to disappear when the full extent of the German losses became known, and it was learned that the German high-seas fleet had lost some of its proudest units, that its losses, not only relatively but absolutely almost equaled those of the British fleet, and that the British remained in full control of the high seas, after scouring them in vain for further signs of the enemy.

## THE BRITISH LOSSES.

The ships lost by the British in the battle included three battle-cruisers, the *Queen Mary*, *Indefatigable*, and *Invincible*; three light cruisers, the *Defense*, *Black Prince*, and *Warrior*, and eight destroyers, the *Tipperary*, *Turbulent*, *Nestor*, *Alcaaster*, *Fortune*, *Sparrowhawk*, *Ardent*, and *Shark*. The *Warrior*, badly damaged, was taken in tow, but sank before reaching port. All but one of its crew were saved.

The British dreadnaught *Marlborough* was also damaged, but succeeded in making port for repairs.

Following are particulars of the British cruisers sunk:

**QUEEN MARY**—27,000 tons; 720 feet long. Eight 13.5 inch guns, sixteen 4 inch guns, three 21 inch torpedo tubes. Complement, 900. Cost, \$10,000,000.

**INDEFATIGABLE**—18,750 tons; 578 feet long. Eight 12 inch guns, sixteen 4 inch guns, three 21 inch torpedo tubes. Complement, 900. Cost, \$8,000,000.

**INVINCIBLE**—17,250 tons; 562 feet long. Eight 12 inch guns, sixteen 4 inch guns, three 21 inch torpedo tubes. Complement, 731. Cost, \$8,760,000.

**DEFENSE**—14,600 tons; 525 feet long. Four 9.2 inch guns, ten 7.5 inch guns, sixteen 12 pounders, five torpedo tubes. Complement, 755. Cost, \$6,810,000.

**BLACK PRINCE**—13,550 tons; 480 feet long. Six 9.2 inch guns, twenty 3 pounders, three torpedo tubes. Complement, 704. Cost, \$5,750,000.

**WARRIOR**—13,550 tons; 480 feet long. Six 9.2 inch guns, four 7.5 inch guns, twenty-four 3 pounders, three torpedo tubes. Complement, 704, all saved but one. Cost, \$5,900,000.

The destroyers sunk were each of about 950 tons, 266 feet long, and carried a complement of 100 men. Only a few survivors were picked up after the battle.

## THE GERMAN LOSSES.

The German losses, as claimed by the British, included two dreadnaughts, believed to be the *Hindenburg* and *Westfalen*, each of approximately 26,000 tons, with a complement of 1,000 men; the battle-cruiser *Derfflinger*, 26,600 tons, complement, 900 men; the battleship *Pommern*, of 12,997 tons, complement, 729 men, cost, \$6,000,000; the new fast cruiser *Elbing*, of 5,000 tons, complement, 500 men; the cruisers *Frauenlob*, of 2,715 tons, complement, 264 men, and *Wiesbaden*, not registered; a number of destroyers, variously estimated at from six to sixteen, and one submarine rammed and sunk. Besides these, the battle-cruiser *Lutzow*, of 26,600 tons, was

reported badly damaged, and the battle-cruiser Seydlitz, of equal size, suffered heavily in the battle and was hotly pursued to the mine fields of Helgoland.

The total loss of life in the battle amounted to approximately 4,800 British, including 333 officers; and probably 4,000 or more Germans. Rear-Admiral Horace Hood, second in command of the battle-cruiser fleet, went down with the *Invincible*. Rear-Admiral Arbuthnot went down with the *Defense*.

#### STORY OF THE BATTLE.

The great naval battle, which may go down in history as the battle of the Skager Rack, was fought in the eastern waters of the North Sea, off the coast of Denmark. It lasted for many hours, fighting being continued through the night of May 31-June 1. In general, the battle area extended from the Skager Rack southward to Horn Reef off the Danish coast, the center of the fighting being about 100 miles north of Helgoland, the main German naval base in the North Sea.

Both in the number of lives and the tonnage lost, the battle was the greatest sea-fight in history, as well as the first in which modern dreadnaughts have been engaged. Never before have two naval forces of such magnitude as the British and German high-sea fleets engaged in combat.

The greatest previous tonnage loss was during the Japanese-Russian war. In the naval battle of Tsushima in May, 1905, the loss totaled 93,000 tons. Twenty-one Russian craft were sunk in this fight.

The text of the first British admiralty statement was in part as follows:

"On the afternoon of Wednesday, May 31, a naval engagement took place off the coast of Jutland. The British ships on which the brunt of the fighting fell were the battle-cruiser fleet and some cruisers and light cruisers, supported by four fast battleships. Among these the losses were heavy.

"The German battle fleet aided by low visibility avoided a prolonged action with our main forces. As soon as they appeared on the scene the enemy returned to port, though not before receiving severe damage from our battleships."

The battle was one in which no quarter was asked or even possible. There were no surrenders, and the ships lost went down and carried with them virtually the whole crews. Only the *Warrior*, which was towed part way from the scene of battle to a British port, was an exception.

Of the thousand men on the *Queen Mary*, only a corporal's guard was accounted for. The same was true of the *Invincible*, while there

were no survivors reported from the Indefatigable, the Defense or the Black Prince.

#### TELL OF BATTLE HORRORS.

After the battle there were many stories of ships sinking with a great explosion; of crews going down singing the national anthem; of merchant ships passing through a sea thick with floating bodies.

From survivors came thrilling stories of the horrors and humanities of the battle. The British destroyer Shark acted as a decoy to bring the German ships into the engagement. It was battered to pieces by gunfire, and a half dozen sailors, picked up clinging to a buoy by a Danish ship, told of its commander and two seamen serving its only remaining gun until the last minute, when the commander's leg was blown off.

A lifeboat with German survivors from the German cruiser Elbing rescued Surgeon Burton of the British destroyer Tipperary. He had sustained four wounds.

#### THE FIRST OFFICIAL STORY.

The first account in detail of the battle was given by a high official of the British Admiralty, who said on June 4:

"We were looking for a fight when our fleet went out. Stories that the fleet was decoyed by the Germans are sheerest nonsense. In a word, with an inferior fleet we engaged the entire German high sea fleet, interrupted their plans, and drove them back into their harbors.

"In carrying out the plan decided upon we sustained heavy losses, which we expected, but we also attained the expected result of forcing the enemy to abandon his plan and seek refuge after we had given battle in his own waters near his coast.

"With the exception of two divisions, part of which was only partly engaged, the brunt of battle was borne by the battle-cruiser fleet, and with one exception our battle fleet is ready for sea service. I must admit that we had exceptionally hard luck with our battle-cruisers, but the loss of three great ships does not in any measure cripple our control of the sea.

"The great battle had four phases. The first opened at 3:15 p. m., when our battle-cruisers, at a range of six miles, joined action with German battle-cruisers. Shortly afterward the second phase began with the arrival on both sides of battleships, the Germans arriving first. But before their arrival our three battle-cruisers had been blown up, supposedly the result of gunfire, although possibly they were victims of torpedoes.

"Such close range fighting with battle-cruisers might be criticized as bad tactics, but our fleet, following the traditions of the navy, went



out to engage the enemy, and on account of weather conditions could do so only at short range.

"The third phase was the engagement of battleships, which never was more than partial. This phase included a running fight, as the German dreadnaughts fled toward their bases. All the big ship fighting was over by 9:15 p. m.

#### ENEMY GONE BY DAWN.

"Then came one of the most weird features of the battle, as German destroyers made attack after attack, like infantry following artillery preparation, on our big ships. But these onslaughts were futile, not a single torpedo launched by them getting home.

"With the morning these attacks ended and the scene of battle was swept by Jellicoe's fleet. Not a single enemy vessel remained in sight.

"An incident of the great battle was the torpedoing of the super-dreadnaught Marlborough, which is now safely in harbor. It must have struck a veritable hornets' nest of submarines, as by skillful maneuvering it avoided three of these before it was finally hit.

"Early in the engagement, according to Admiral Beatty's report, a German battle-cruiser, after being hotly engaged, blew up and broke in two.

"Officers of the fleet also reported passing a closely engaged German battle-cruiser which was left behind while the British pursued the Germans. On their return this vessel was missing. Judging from its previous plight it must now be at the bottom of the sea. This accounts for two of the enemy's battle-cruisers, and we have their admission that they had lost two battleships.

"Zeppelins did not play the important part attributed to them. Only one appeared. It remained in action a brief time, retiring under heavy fire, evidently badly damaged. Weather conditions were such that it is doubtful whether any aircraft would have been of much service.

"The enemy sprang no surprises. We saw nothing of any 17-inch guns. No tricks were used which were not already known in naval warfare.

"From the standpoint of actual strength the navy's loss in personnel, while great, was not serious, as we have plenty of men to replace them. But the deaths of so many gallant officers and men have caused profound grief.

"Admiral Hood went down with his flagship *Invincible*, in the words of Admiral Beatty's report, 'leading his division into action with the most inspiring courage.' His flag captain, Cay, went down with him. Capt. Sowerby, former British naval attaché at Wash-

ington, perished with his ship, the *Indefatigable*, while Capt. Prowse died on the *Queen Mary*."

#### BODIES FLOATING IN THE SEA.

From Copenhagen it was reported on June 3 that hundreds of bodies, many of them horribly mutilated by explosions, and great quantities of debris were drifting about in the North Sea near the scene of the battle. All steamers arriving at Danish ports reported sighting floating bodies and bits of wreckage.

The steamer *Para* picked up a raft aboard which were three German survivors from the torpedo boat V-48. They had clung to the raft for forty-eight hours and were semi-conscious when rescued. They reported that ninety-nine of the V-48 crew perished and that in all about twenty German torpedo boats were destroyed.

Other German sailors, rescued by Scandinavian steamers, described the Teutonic losses in the Jutland battle as colossal. A number of the crew of the cruiser *Wiesbaden* and men from several German torpedo boats were rescued and brought to Copenhagen. They reported that many of their comrades, after floating for thirty-six hours on rafts without food or water, drank the sea water, became insane and jumped into the ocean.

The German survivors said that several of their torpedo boats and submarines were capsized by the British shells and sank instantly. Bodies of both British and German sailors were washed ashore on the coast of Jutland.

#### OFFICER'S STORY OF THE FIGHT.

Survivors who arrived at Edinburgh on June 5 from British destroyers which made a massed attack on a German battleship in the battle off Jutland, were convinced that they sent to the bottom the dreadnaught *Hindenburg*, the pride of the German navy. These sailors said that the *Hindenburg* was struck successively by four torpedoes while the destroyers dashed in alongside of its hull, tearing it to pieces until the mighty ship reeled and sank.

An officer from one of the British destroyers gave the following graphic account of the battle:

"The ships of the grand fleet went into action as if they were going into maneuvers. From every yardarm the white ensign flew, the flag which is to the sailor as the tattered colors were in days of old to a hard-pressed regiment. That it went hard with the battle-cruisers is apparent, but one ship cannot fight a dozen. They had fought a great fight, a fight to be proud of, a fight which will live longer than many a victory.

"We fought close into the foe, and if anything is certain in the uncertainties of naval battle it is that we gave at least as good as we

got. We passed along the line of German ships some miles away and let off broadside after broadside. The air was heavy with masses of smoke, black, yellow, green and every other color, which drifted slowly between the opposing lines, hiding sometimes friend and sometimes foe. The enemy ships were firing very fast, but watching the ships in front one came to the conclusion that the shooting was decidedly erratic. Again and again salvos of shells fell far short of the mark, to be followed immediately by others which screamed past high in the air.

#### ROAR OF THE GUNS TERRIFIC.

"I watched the Iron Duke swinging through the seas, letting off broadside after broadside, wicked tongues of flames leaping through clouds of smoke. The din of battle was stunning, stupendous, deafening, as hundreds of the heaviest guns in the world roared out at once. Great masses of water rose in the air like waterspouts, reaching as high as the masts, as the salvos of German shells fell short or went over their target. Now and then a shell found its mark, but it left us absolutely cold as to its effect on each man at a time like this. A dozen men may be knocked out at one's side. It makes no difference.

"It was impossible to see what was happening among the ships of the foe. The smoke obscured everything so effectually that one could only get a glimpse at intervals when a kindly wind blew a lane through the pall. It was apparent that the best ships of the enemy were engaged, but how many neither eye nor glass could make out. The number was certainly large. It was equally impossible to see what damage we were causing. Only the high command knew the progress of the battle. That the damage inflicted on the German ships was great does not admit of any doubt. At one time two vessels, red with fire, gleamed through the smoke.

#### FLAGSHIP LOSES ITS WIRELESS.

"It is a curious feeling to be in the midst of a battle and not to know to which side fortune leans. Where only a few ships are engaged it is different. Our own losses were known with some degree of exactness, but even that was uncertain. Thus at one time it was thought that the Lion had been lost as it did not answer any call. It transpired that its wireless had been destroyed.

"With the dusk came the great opportunity of the mosquito craft and both sides made use of it to the full. It was in this way that one of the saddest of many sad incidents occurred. A destroyer, true to its name, dashed for the big enemy ship. It soon got into effective range and loosed its torpedo and with deadly effect on a German battleship. The ship went down and the destroyer raced for safety,

the commander and officer standing on the bridge indulging in mutual congratulations at their success. At that moment a shell hit the bridge and wiped out the entire group.

"We fought what was in its way a great fight, although it was not a sailor's battle. Both the grand and the terrible were present to an almost overpowering degree. As a spectacle it was magnificent, awful. How awful, it was impossible to realize until the fever of action had subsided, until the guns were silent and the great ships, some battered, others absolutely untouched, were plowing home on the placid sea."

#### MEN THRILLED BY BATTLE FEVER.

After describing the battle itself, the officer reverted to incidents preceding it, saying:

"I shall never forget the thrill which passed through the men on the ships of the grand fleet when that inspiring message was received from the battle-cruiser squadron many leagues away: 'I am engaged with heavy forces of the enemy.' One looked on the faces of his fellows and saw that the effect was electrical. The great ships swung around into battle order and the responsive sea rocked and churned as the massive vessels raced for what were virtually enemy waters. As the grand fleet drew near the scene of action the smoke of battle and mutter of guns came down on the winds. The eagerness of the men became almost unbearably intense and it was a blessed relief when our own guns gave tongue."

#### RUSSIAN TROOPS LAND IN FRANCE.

Between April 20 and June 1, a large flotilla of transports arriving at Marseilles, France, brought Russian soldiers in large numbers to the support of the French line. The transports were understood to have made the voyage of 10,250 miles from Vladivostok under convoy by the British navy.

#### EARL KITCHENER KILLED AT SEA.

The British armored cruiser Hampshire, 10,850 tons, with Earl Kitchener, the British secretary of state for war, and his staff on board, was sunk shortly after nightfall on June 5, to the west of the Orkney Islands, either by a mine or a torpedo. Heavy seas were running and Admiral Jellicoe reported that there were no survivors. The crew numbered 300 officers and men. Earl Kitchener was on his way to Russia for a secret conference with the military authorities when the disaster occurred. His latest achievement was the creation, from England's untrained manhood, of an army approximating 5,000,000 men, of whom he was the military idol.



## CANADIANS IN BATTLE.

After gallantly holding their own for many months against repeated German attacks, the Canadian troops holding that section of the western front southeast of Ypres, between Hooze and the Ypres-Menin railway, were engaged during the week ending June 3, 1916, in a battle scarcely less determined in its nature than that of St. Julien and other great encounters in which they distinguished themselves and added to Canadian military laurels earlier in the war.

On Friday, June 2, the Germans, after a concentrated bombardment with heavy artillery, pressed forward to the assault and succeeded in penetrating the British lines. During the night they pushed their attack and succeeded in cutting their way through the defenses to the depth of nearly a mile in the direction of Zillebeke. The hard-fighting Canadians then rallied and began counter-assaults at 7 o'clock on the following morning. By Sunday morning, June 4, they had succeeded in gradually driving the Germans from much of the ground they had gained, but the losses to the Canadians were severe.

In the British official report of the engagement, it was stated that "the Canadians behaved with the utmost gallantry, counter-attacking successfully after a heavy and continued bombardment." The German losses were very heavy and a large number of dead were abandoned on the recaptured ground. Frederick Palmer, the noted war correspondent, said that for a thousand yards in the center of the line where the Germans secured lodgment the Canadians fired from positions in the rear and filled the ruined trenches with German dead.

It was announced by the War Office that Generals Mercer and Williams, who were inspecting the front trenches on June 2, during the German bombardment, were among the missing. Soon after it was found that General Mercer was severely wounded during the fight, and was taken to hospital at Boulogne, while General Williams, who was wounded less severely, was captured by the enemy. General Mercer was the commander of the Third Division of Canadian troops, which in this action had its first real test in hand-to-hand fighting, and came out of the trial like veterans with glory undimmed.

The two-days' fighting occurred around the famous Hill No. 60 and Sanctuary Wood, names destined to live in Canadian history. It was entirely a Canadian battle, and while the losses of the devoted troops from the Dominion probably reached the regrettable total of over 6,000, including a number of men captured by the Germans during the first day's attack, when they overran the front trenches, they doggedly bombed and bayoneted their way back to the wrecked trenches next day and regained nearly all their front. The commanding officers were especially pleased that the newer Canadian battalions had kept up the traditions of the first contingent, established in 1915 at St.

Julien and elsewhere in France and Flanders, by immediately turning upon the Germans with a counter-attack which was carried out both coolly and skilfully.

The Ypres salient, thus successfully defended by the Canadians in one of the hottest of the minor battles of the war, was regarded by the British commander-in-chief as an important position which must be defended despite the heavy losses. General Gwatkin, Chief of Staff for Canada, stated that the German losses during the heavy fighting exceeded those of the Canadians.

Colonel Buller of the Princess Patricia Regiment was killed by shrapnel while leading his men at Sanctuary Wood.

The total enlistments in Canada up to June 10 exceeded 333,000 men.

### GREAT DRIVE BY THE RUSSIANS.

The first week of June, 1916, saw the Russians successful in a great drive against the Austrian positions in Volhynia and Galicia, a movement that for awhile overshadowed the events on the western front. In the space of five days a new Russian commander, General Brusiloff, who had succeeded General Ivanhoff as Chief of the Russian South-western Armies, captured 1,143 Austrian officers and 64,714 men, recovered almost four thousand square miles of fertile Volhynian soil, and recaptured the fortified town of Lutsk. He had the advantage of a most efficient artillery preparation, which blew the Austrian entanglements, trenches and earthworks into such a chaos that the bewildered occupants surrendered in thousands when the Russian infantry charged.

German reinforcements from the trenches north of the Pripet River tried to stay the Russian rush, but in vain, and many Germans were among the prisoners taken. At several points the Russian cavalry led the attack after the artillery had done its work. A division of young Russians, by an impetuous attack, captured a bridge-head on the Styr and took 2,500 German and Austrian troops and much rich booty. In Galicia the Russian armies crossed the Stripa and by June 10 were once more too near Lemberg for the comfort of the Austrian garrison. At that time the total number of prisoners taken in this drive was considerably over 100,000, while the booty in guns, rifles, ammunition and supplies of all conceivable kinds was enormous. The Allies were greatly heartened by these Russian successes on the eastern front, and on June 15 Germany was preparing to meet them by troop movements from the north, where Field Marshal von Hindenburg was in command on Russian territory. The extent and rapidity of the Russian successes up to that time were without parallel in military history.

## RUSSIA COMPELS AUSTRIAN RETREAT

During the following month the Russian advance toward the Carpathians, for the second time in the war, continued steadily. It was apparent that General Brusiloff, unlike his predecessors in command, was well supplied with effective artillery and ammunition in plenty, and that the vast resources of the Russian Empire had been at last successfully mobilized for attack. Guns and ammunition, in immense quantities, had been secured from Japan, among other sources, and this former enemy of Russia, now her strong and capable ally, aided materially in changing the aspect of affairs on the Eastern battle front.

On June 16, the Russian offensive had progressed to the Galician frontier, and terrific fighting marked the advance along the whole line south of Volhynia. Two German armies went to the aid of the Austrians in the region of the Stochod and Styr rivers, and German forces also made a stand before Kovel. The mortality on both sides was described as frightful, but the Russians continued to make headway and the capture of thousands of Teutonic prisoners was of almost daily occurrence, the total reaching 172,000 before June 18.

Czernowitz, the capital of Bukowina, fell into the hands of the Russians at midnight of June 17, after the bridgehead on the Pruth river had been stormed by the victorious troops of the Czar. One thousand Austrians were captured at the bridgehead, but the garrison succeeded in escaping. The invading troops swept on, crossed the Sereth river, and soon gained control of about one-half of Roumania's western frontier. By July 23 the Austrians were retreating into the foothills of the Carpathian mountains, hotly pressed by the Russian advance. The German army around Kovel continued to make a stubborn resistance, but could not prevent the Austrian rout, and as the Russians approached the Carpathian passes the Austrian prisoners taken by them during the drive reached a total of 200,000 officers and men. Immense quantities of munitions of war also fell into their hands.

On July 4 Russian cavalry patrols advanced over the passes into southern Hungary, and General Brusiloff's army neared Lemberg, which was defended by a combined Teutonic army under General von Bothmer, along the River Strypa. The losses of the Austrians and Germans, in killed and wounded up to this time, were placed at 500,000 men, the Russian offensive having lasted one month, with no evidence of slackening. General von Bothmer then began a retirement westward, while General Brusiloff advanced between the Pruth and Dniester rivers, and a concerted push toward Lemberg was begun.

## "BIG PUSH" ON THE WESTERN FRONT

After many months of preparation by the British, during which "Kitchener's army" was being sedulously trained for active service, a new phase of the great war began on July 1, 1916, when a great offensive was started on the western front by the British and French simultaneously, after a seven-day bombardment of the German trenches. In this preliminary bombardment more than one million shells were fired daily, and the prolonged battle which ensued was the greatest of all time.

This offensive proved that the Allies had not been shaken from their determination to bide their time until they were thoroughly prepared and ready for the attack, and were able to co-ordinate their efforts in genuine teamwork against the powerful and strongly-entrenched enemy in the west, while the Russian offensive on the eastern front was also in progress. This long-awaited movement was no isolated attack, costly but ineffectual, like those of the English at Neuve Chapelle and Loos, but "a carefully studied and deliberately prepared campaign of severe pressure upon Germany at each of her battle fronts." It proved that the war-councils of the Allies held in Paris and London, in Petrograd and Rome, were no mere conventional affairs, but were at last to bear fruit in concerted action that might decide the issue of the war.

The "big push," as it was popularly called in England, was started by the British and French on both sides of the River Somme, sixty miles north of Paris, at 7:30 o'clock on the morning of July 1, and resulted on the same day in a great wedge being driven into the German lines along a front of twenty-five miles, with its sharp point penetrating nearly five miles. The French advance was made in the direction of Peronne, an important center of transportation and distribution long held by the Germans.

An eyewitness who watched the beginning of the battle from a hill said that overwhelming as was the power of the guns, yet as the gathering of human and mechanical material proceeded, "the grim and significant spectacle was the sight of detachments of infantry moving forward in field-fighting equipment, until finally the dugouts were hives of khaki ready to swarm out for battle."

As the days of the bombardment passed, the air of expectancy was noticeable everywhere through the British army, commanded by Sir Douglas Haig. Finally the word was passed that the infantry was to make the assault early the next morning. Then, "at 7:20 A. M. the rapid-fire trench mortars added their shells to the deluge pouring upon the first-line German trenches. After ten minutes of this, promptly at 7:30 o'clock, the guns lifted their fire to the second line



of German trenches, as if they were answering to the pressure of a single electric button, and the men of the new British army leaped over their parapets and rushed toward the wreckage the guns and mortars had wrought. Even close at hand, they were visible for only a moment before being hidden by the smoke of the German shell-curtain over what remained of the trenches."

Of the deadly work beneath that pall of smoke, as steel met steel and the new soldiers of Britain fleshed their bayonets for the first time, and fell by the thousand under the murderous fire of machine-guns, history will tell the tale long after the survivors have ceased to recount the deeds of the day to their grandchildren wherever the English tongue is spoken. Each side gives credit to the other for the utmost bravery and devotion during the battle. The new English regiments fought like veterans, and fully maintained the traditions of the British army for dogged bravery, while the Germans fought with desperate tenacity, valor and resourcefulness, this last quality being displayed in the devices which had been invented and were used to prevent or delay the Allied advance. It was indeed wonderful how well the Germans had protected their machine-guns from the devastating effects of the preliminary bombardment, which tore trenches to pieces and utterly demolished barbed-wire entanglements, but failed in many cases to destroy the deep bomb-proofs in which the Teuton machine-guns were protected and concealed.

#### CONTINUATION OF THE GREAT BATTLE

On July 2 and 3, the battle of the Somme continued without cessation of infantry fighting, while the big guns thundered on both sides. The British offensive took Fricourt on the 2nd, after a tremendous bombardment, and occupied several villages, while the French advanced to within three miles of Peronne. Ten thousand more prisoners fell into the hands of the Allies on these two days. On the 4th, German resistance temporarily halted the British, but the French offensive took German second-line positions south of the Somme on a six-mile front. Violent counter-attacks by the Germans on July 6 failed to wrest from the French the ground won by them during the previous five days, and the Allied troops resumed their advance, taking the German second-line trenches all along the front in the face of a heavy fire. Next day Contalmaison was won by the British, but recaptured by the Prussian Guard, who held the town for three days, when they were again driven out.

A desperate struggle for the possession of the Mametz woods marked the fighting from the 10th to the 12th, the British and the Germans alternating in its possession. Victory at this point finally lay with the British, who on July 12 gained possession of the whole

locality, together with the Trones wood, which had also been the scene of a bloody struggle. By this time some 30,000 German prisoners had been taken by the Allies during the offensive, while the losses in killed and wounded on both sides, in the absence of official reports, could only be estimated in appalling numbers.

TRAGIC TALE OF A GERMAN PRISONER

A typical description of some of the horrors of the battle, as it surged around Contalmaison, was given by a German prisoner on July 12 to the war correspondent of the London Chronicle. He spoke English, having been employed in London for some years prior to the war. With his regiment, the 122nd Bavarians, he went into Contalmaison five days before his capture. Soon the rations they took with them were exhausted, and owing to the ceaseless gunfire they were unable to get fresh supplies. They suffered agonies of thirst and the numbers of their dead and wounded increased day after day.

"There was a hole in the ground," said the German prisoner, whose head was bound with a bloody bandage and who was still dazed and troubled when the correspondent talked with him. "It was a dark hole which held twenty men, all lying in a heap together, and that was the only dugout for my company, so there was not room for more than a few. It was necessary to take turns in this shelter while outside the English shells were coming and bursting everywhere. Two or three men were dragged out to make room for two or three others, then those who went outside were killed or wounded.

"There was only one doctor, an unter officer,"—he pointed to a man who lay asleep on the ground face downward—"and he banded some of us till he had no more bandages; then last night we knew the end was coming. Your guns began to fire altogether, the dreadful *trommelfeuer*, as we call it, and the shells burst and smashed up the earth about us. We stayed down in the hole, waiting for the end. Then we heard your soldiers shouting. Presently two of them came down into our hole. They were two boys and had their pockets full of bombs; they had bombs in their hands also, and they seemed to wonder whether they should kill us, but we were all wounded—nearly all—and we cried 'Kamerade'! and now we are prisoners."

Other prisoners said in effect that the fire was terrible in Contalmaison and at least half their men holding it were killed or wounded, so that when the British entered they walked over the bodies of the dead. The men who escaped were in a pitiful condition. "They lay on the ground utterly exhausted, most of them, and, what was strange, with their faces to the earth. Perhaps it was to blot out the vision of the things they had seen."

Meanwhile, despite the threatening character of the Allied

offensive on the Somme, German assaults on the Verdun front continued unabated during July, and there was little evidence of the withdrawal of German troops from that point to reinforce the army opposed to the British. But except at Verdun, Germany was at bay everywhere, and the situation was recognized in the Fatherland as serious. Never before had the Allies been able to drive at Germany from all sides at once. Only at Verdun the German Crown Prince, long halted at that point, was keeping up a slow but strong offensive pressure.

#### GERMAN SUBMARINE REACHES BALTIMORE

On July 9, the German merchant submarine *Deutschland*, in command of Capt. Koenig, slipped into port at Baltimore, after eluding British warships in the North Sea, English Channel, and Atlantic. The *Deutschland* carried as cargo nearly a million dollars' worth of dyestuffs, as well as important mail. The owners announced that she was the first of a regular fleet to be placed in service between German and American ports, to thwart the British blockade. She made the 4,000-mile voyage in sixteen days, including nine hours during which, according to her captain, she lay at the bottom of the Channel to escape capture. On July 25 she was preparing for her return voyage with a cargo said to consist largely of crude rubber and nickel, having been accepted by the United States Government as an innocent merchantman and granted clearance papers on that basis. Outside the Virginia capes, beyond the three-mile limit, British and French cruisers awaited her possible appearance, with the hope of effecting her capture. But it was announced in Germany that the *Deutschland* reached her home port safely Aug. 23.

#### CANADIANS STRENGTHEN THEIR FRONTS

Along the portion of the western battle front held by Canadian troops, there were frequent heavy bombardments by the enemy during the month of July, but the gallant soldiers of the Dominion consolidated their positions won in battle at Loos and elsewhere, and fully held their own. In trench mortar fighting their batteries maintained the upper hand, often returning six shells for one thrown by the Germans. The Canadian patrols were very active; every night reconnaissances were made all along the Canadian front, and numerous hostile working parties engaged in strengthening German trenches and entanglements were dispersed by Canadian rifle fire.

On July 8, in the gardens of Kensington Palace, London, Princess Louise, Duchess of Argyll, presented to General Steele, for the Canadian forces, a silken Union Jack and a silver shield, given by the women and children of the British Isles in acknowledgment of Canada's good will and valuable co-operation. The Princess made

a short address expressing high admiration and enthusiastic appreciation of the eager readiness with which the officers and men of Canada had come forward to take their share in the cause of the Empire. General Steele, in receiving the gifts, returned thanks on behalf of the Canadian troops.

## NEW RUSSIAN DRIVE NEAR RIGA

On July 24, General Kuropatkin began a new Russian drive in the battle sector south of Riga. After making a preliminary breach in the German lines, Kuropatkin drove in a wedge of fresh troops which swept Marshal von Hindenburg's German forces back along a front of 30 miles, and to a depth at one point of 12 miles. The attack was preceded by a bombardment lasting four days, which battered into ruins the German defense along the coast line from the Gulf of Riga to Uxhull. The Kaiser and his chief of staff recognized the importance of General Kuropatkin's advance by hastening to the Eastern battle front on July 25.

## TWO YEARS' WAR CASUALTIES

	Killed.	Wounded.	Missing.	Total.
Russia .....	1,200,000	2,500,000	2,000,000	5,700,000
Germany .....	900,000	1,900,000	150,000	2,950,000
France .....	850,000	1,500,000	325,000	2,675,000
Austro-Hungary .....	475,000	1,000,000	900,000	2,375,000
Great Britain .....	160,000	450,000	70,000	680,000
Turkey .....	75,000	200,000	75,000	350,000
Serbia .....	60,000	125,000	75,000	260,000
Italy .....	50,000	100,000	30,000	180,000
Belgium .....	30,000	70,000	50,000	150,000
Bulgaria .....	5,000	25,000	5,000	35,000
Total .....	3,805,000	7,870,000	3,680,000	15,355,000

## THE STRUGGLE ON THE SOMME

The second phase of the great Anglo-French offensive on the western front began to develop late in July, and attacks were continuous throughout the month of August and up to September 15. At every point in the Somme region the giant British and French guns poured shell into the German works, destroying barbed wire entanglements and wrecking trenches, while Allied gains were reported almost daily, as the Germans were slowly but surely ousted from their original positions along a wide front.

An engagement typical of the prolonged fighting on the Somme occurred near Armentieres, where the Australians on a two-mile front



made the greatest trench raid ever undertaken in any war, inflicting heavy damage upon the enemy by bombing and hand-to-hand fighting. The German position at Longueval passed into British control on July 28, after what was called the most terrific fighting of the war, in Delville Wood.

Between August 6 and September 10 the British under Gen. Sir Douglas Haig and the French under Gen. Foch fought off many determined German counter-attacks in the Somme sector, and continued their advance, the French gaining Maurepas and the British moving closer to Guillemont and Inchy, driving the Germans back along eleven miles of front and capturing Thiepval Ridge and other important positions near Pozieres.

On September 9 German official reports admitted considerable losses on the western line, both in the section south of the Somme and to the northeast of Verdun. Fierce attacks by the Germans at Verdun had been renewed during August, but the French, under the able command of Gen. Nivelle, more than held their own, recapturing a considerable portion of the terrain occupied by the enemy, including Fleury and the important Thiaumont Work.

#### ITALIANS CAPTURE GORITZ.

The greatest blow which the Italian army had struck against Austria since the beginning of the war was completed on August 9, when Italian troops captured the fortified city of Goritz, for which they had been struggling for months. The number of prisoners taken by the Italians was 21,750, and in the next few days nearly 20,000 more fell into their hands, with great stores of war munitions and many guns.

The taking of Goritz, one of the strongest fortresses in Europe, compelled the retirement of the Austrians at other points along the Isonzo River, and opened the road for the Italians, under Gen. Cadorna, to strike at the coveted city of Trieste, twenty-two miles to the southeast. With the capture of the "keystone" at Goritz, the Italian commander confidently expected the resistance of the Austrians to weaken and looked forward to the early occupation of the coveted provinces of the Trentino.

#### ITALY AT WAR WITH GERMANY

On August 27, Italy declared war on Germany, giving as a reason the fact that Germany had sent both land and sea forces to the aid of Austria. The declaration became inevitable when Italy sent troops to Saloniki to co-operate in the campaign of the Entente Allies on the Macedonian front. For more than a year Italy's position with

regard to Germany had been an anomalous one, for although she withdrew from the Triple Alliance on May 25, 1915, and declared war against Austria, she remained officially at peace with Germany until August 27, 1916.

#### RUMANIA ENTERS THE WAR

After many months of hesitation, Rumania finally decided to enter the war on the side of the Allies and declared war on Austria, August 27. The next day Germany declared war on Rumania, and the issue was squarely joined in the Balkans, which then became the scene of a mighty struggle for the possession of Germany's road to Constantinople and the East. Tremendous activity at once began on the Balkan front, with Rumania's endeavor to aid Russia in cutting off Bulgaria and Turkey from the Central Powers. In the event of the success of this move, it was expected that the Allies would start a gigantic drive toward Constantinople.

The most important gain for either side in the Balkans up to the middle of September was the capture by the Bulgarians and Germans, on September 7, of the great fortress of Turtukai, fifty miles to the southeast of Bucharest, the Rumanian capital, and chief defense of the capital on that side. Russian troops were rushed to the aid of the Rumanians, and the loss of Turtukai was offset by Rumanian successes across the Hungarian border, where they captured a number of towns, driving the Austrian defenders before them as their invasion of Hungary progressed.

#### RUSSIAN ARMIES ACTIVE

By September 10, Russian troops were massed in great force in southeastern Rumania, and engaged the Bulgarians on the whole seventy-mile front from the Danube to the Black Sea, fighting fiercely to wrest the offensive from the enemy invading Rumania. In Transylvania the Rumanians were advancing rapidly, having captured the important town of Orsova, on the Danube, which gave them a grip on the Austrian second line of defense behind the mountains dividing Transylvania from Hungary. The entrance of Rumania into the war had increased the Austro-Hungarian front by about 380 miles, which military men regarded as altogether too long for the Teutonic armies to hold with any hope of success.

The Russians were also on September 10 winning ground in their campaign against Lemberg, the capital of Galicia. They had advanced until they were within artillery range of Halicz, an important railway junction sixty miles south of Lemberg. They had cut the railway line between Lemberg and Halicz, and the latter town was in flames.

## ALLIED PROGRESS ON THE WESTERN FRONT

British and French successes on the Western front continued during the month of September, and the gains were encouraging to the Allies. On September 15 the British took Flers, Martinpuich, the important position known as the High Wood, Courcellette, and almost all of the Bouleaux Wood, and also stormed the German positions from Combles north to the Pozieres-Bapaume road, arriving within four miles of Bapaume and capturing 2,300 prisoners. A prominent feature of the attack was the use by the British of armored automobile trucks of unusual size and power, so constructed that they were able to cross trenches and shell-holes. These "tanks," as they were called, proved a genuine surprise to the enemy. They were said to be developed from American tractors of the "caterpillar" variety, which lay their own tracks as they proceed.

A two-mile trench system, believed to be impregnable, was stormed by the Allied forces near Thiepval September 17, while south of the Somme the French took the German trenches along a front of three miles. Next day more ground was taken in the advance toward Bapaume and German prisoners continued to fall into the Allies' hands. The number of Teuton captives taken during the Somme fighting from July 1 to September 22 was placed at 55,800 men and officers.

The month of September was remarkable for the great number of aerial combats on the western front and the efficiency developed in this mode of fighting. Many airplanes were shot down on both sides, but the Allies seemed to be gaining the mastery of the air. On a single day, September 24, over a hundred air combats were reported, during which fifty-seven airplanes were destroyed. On the same day two French airmen, in flights of 500 miles, dropped bombs on the Krupp works at Essen in Germany.

In a forward sweep near the end of the month the British took a number of German positions northeast of Combles, while the French advanced south of that point, so that the two armies almost surrounded it were scarcely a mile apart. A day later British and French troops entered Combles from opposite sides and drove the Germans out. Continuing the drive from Thiepval, which had also been occupied, the British consolidated their positions and straightened their line a short distance from Bapaume, their objective point at this time. More than 5,000 German prisoners were taken September 26 and 27.

More Allied gains in the Somme sector were reported in the first week of October. German counter-attacks were frequent, but lacked

the vigor and success of former efforts on this front. In a joint attack on October 7 the village of Le Sars was taken and the Allies found themselves within two miles of Bapaume. General Foch with his French infantry took a number of German positions near Ablaincourt, south of the Somme, October 14, and held his gains against repeated German attacks. The fighting was extremely desperate and of a hand-to-hand character. Gas and liquid fire were used by the Germans, but the new Allied lines were firmly held. Liquid fire was also used against the British at Thiepval, but without success.

The Allied attacks on the Somme from October 9 to October 13 were reckoned in Berlin dispatches as amongst the greatest actions of the entire Somme battle, the enemy believing that the Allies themselves then attempted to reach a decision by breaking through the German lines on the largest possible scale. The losses on both sides during this period were admittedly very heavy.

On October 18 the town of Sailly-Saillisel fell to the French after hard fighting and commanding ridges on either side of it were also captured. Fresh progress brought the French troops to the outskirts of Peronne next day, and on the 21st the British advanced their lines along a front of three miles, capturing the Stuff and Regina redoubts and trenches and taking more than 1,000 prisoners, besides bringing down seventeen enemy airplanes.

Captain Boelke, Germany's greatest airman, was killed October 28 in a collision with another airplane during a battle on the western front. He was 25 years of age, had been wounded several times during the war, and is credited with having brought down forty Allied airplanes.

The October losses of the British in the Somme campaign were announced by the War Office to be 107,033, bringing the British total from the beginning of the campaign to 414,202 men and officers, killed, wounded and missing.

In the first days of November the principal activity was in the vicinity of Sailly. The Germans effected a successful counter-attack on November 6, recapturing some of the ground won by the Allies, with 400 prisoners, 300 of them French. Next day, however, a greater number of German prisoners was taken by the French in an advance along a two-and-a-half-mile front south of the Somme, and on the 9th the French strengthened their positions near Sailly, clearing out German trenches and taking more prisoners.

On November 13 the British took a five-mile front in the German line near the River Ancre, capturing two towns and 3,000 prisoners, the Germans being taken by surprise in the early morning mist.



Continuing their advantage the following day, the British took Beaucourt-sur-Ancre with more than 5,000 prisoners. On the 15th German troops took the offensive on both sides of the Somme and succeeded in forcing their way back into some of the trenches and advance positions held by the French, but the British continued their advance north of the Ancre. Next day the French recovered the lost ground and their airmen engaged in fifty-four air battles with German machines along the Somme front. On the 18th British and French airplanes again bombarded Ostend, dropping 180 bombs, and once more raided Zeebrugge. In an ensuing battle six German planes were brought down.

Infantry fighting in the Dixmude sector between Belgian and German troops occurred on four consecutive days, from November 17 to 20, with hand-grenade battles but no definite result. There was a general lull in operations after this, caused by heavy weather and fogs.

#### FRENCH ARE FINAL VICTORS AT VERDUN.

In a dramatic blow at Verdun, after a period of comparative quiet at that point, the French on October 24 took the village and fort of Douaumont, also Thiaumont, the Haudromont quarries, La Caillette Wood, Damloup battery and trenches along a four-mile front to a depth of two miles. The ground retaken was the same that the Germans under the Crown Prince took by two months' hard fighting. This was the quickest and most effective blow struck in the Verdun campaign and reflected the highest credit on the French general commanding, General Petain, and his devoted troops, who thus turned the tide of victory at Verdun in favor of the French and stamped with failure the efforts of the Crown Prince, continued for nine months, to wrest Verdun from French control and open a road to Paris. It was a campaign in which failure meant defeat for the Germans, and its cost in men, money and munitions was enormous.

Four thousand German prisoners were taken on the 24th and the next day the French began encircling Fort Vaux, the only one of the outer ring of forts at Verdun which remained in German hands. All attempts on the part of the Crown Prince to regain the lost ground were fruitless. Four German attacks were beaten back on the 26th, and the following day the French advanced south and west of Vaux and tightened their grip on the fortress. During violent artillery duels, many German attacks on the gained ground were repulsed, and by November 1 the prisoners in French hands numbered 7,000.

On November 4 the French began the attempt to take the village of Vaux, held by the Crown Prince, and gained a foothold in the vil-

lage. Next day they captured the whole of Vaux village and also the village of Damloup. The fort at Vaux had been evacuated by the Germans a few days previously. Thus the long and bloody struggle for the possession of Verdun apparently ended, although artillery duels of varying intensity continued at intervals, and the laurels of the prolonged campaign rested with the French.

#### BRILLIANT WORK OF CANADIAN TROOPS.

Brilliant work on the part of the Canadian troops on the Somme front aided materially to gain the British successes recorded on October 21. William Philips Simms, an eyewitness with the Canadian forces, gave a graphic account of the attack, which was typical of much of the fighting on the Somme. He said:

“Eight minutes of dashing across a sea of mud worse than the Slough of Despond, of methodically advanced barrage fire, of quick work in trench fight, sufficed for the Canadians to take Regina trench—one of the smoothest bits of trench-taking that has been witnessed in the Somme drive. I saw the Canadians, muddy to the eyebrows—but grinning—on the day after they had accomplished the feat.

“The assault was over in eight minutes. It was carried out in brilliant moonlight, and despite a terrific German counter barrage fire and a sea of mud. Every objective the Canadians sought was won.

“Though the Germans repeatedly counter-attacked, the Canadians not only kept every inch they had wrested from the enemy, but before dawn they had strongly reorganized their position and dug over 250 yards of connecting trenches.”

#### ACTIVITIES OF THE RUSSIANS.

On the eastern front in the middle of September strong Russian attacks before Halicz were driving the Teutonic troops back toward Lemberg, and several thousand German and Turkish troops were captured. The Russian advance was checked, however, on September 18, after a total of 25,000 prisoners had been taken by the Russians near Halicz.

The Russian offensive was shifted September 21 from the Lemberg sector to the east of Kovel and a few days after a fresh offensive began along the entire eastern front, heavy fighting being reported west of Lutsk and in the Carpathians. Turkish troops at this time appeared on the Riga front, with German equipment and led by German and Austrian officers. The great 300-mile battle continued unabated to the end of October, with fighting all along the line from the Pinsk marshes on the north to the Roumanian frontier on the south.

By a sudden drive through the Russian front north of the Pinsk marshes on November 10, the Germans succeeded in cutting the Russian first line, taking nearly 4,000 prisoners and twenty-seven machine guns. The Russian lines were believed to have been weakened by the transfer of troops to Roumanian positions in the south. Following this there was terrific fighting in the Narayuvka, where the Russian trenches were carried by the Germans after they had been practically destroyed by high explosives; but the ground lost, located near Slaventin, was gallantly regained by the Russian troops on November 15.

The Russian dreadnought Imperatritsa Maria was sunk by a mine near Sulina, at the mouth of the Danube, November 11. It was launched in 1914 and had a displacement of 22,500 tons. On November 18 Russian troops near Sarny, southeast of Pinsk, brought down a Zeppelin airship, capturing the crew of sixteen and 600 pounds of bombs.

German casualties from the beginning of the war, as compiled in London from German official lists, were set November 10 at 3,755,693. Of this total 910,234 were killed. The total German casualties for the month of October, 1916, reached 199,675 officers and men, of whom 34,231 were killed.

#### GREAT CAMPAIGNS IN THE BALKANS.

For some time after Roumania entered the war her fighting forces were divided between two campaigns—in the Dobrudja and in Transylvania, the Austrian territory invaded by Roumania as soon as she declared war. On September 15 the Roumanians began a retreat in the Dobrudja, before advancing forces of Germans and Bulgarians led by General von Mackensen. The Russo-Roumanian center was driven back thirty miles, while the German and Bulgarian troops occupied several of the Roumanian Black Sea ports.

Then came a great six-day battle in the Dobrudja, with fighting along a forty-five mile line from ten miles south of Constanza to Cernavoda, on the Danube, and in this battle the Russo-Roumanians were successful, compelling the Teutonic forces to retreat southward toward the border. For a while Von Mackesen was on the defensive, but in a counter-attack on September 23 he gained a marked victory over the Roumanians. Gradually the latter were forced to retire, and although they made a desperate resistance to the forces under Von Mackensen the latter reached the coast by October 21, advancing on Constanza, Roumania's chief port on the Black Sea, which was captured October 23. Cernavoda fell on the 25th.

Meanwhile in Transylvania events of a similar character had been happening. At first successful in their invasion of Austrian territory, the Roumanians were unable to hold their advantage, and while the tide of battle was for several weeks in doubt, the German and Austrian troops under General von Falkenhayn at length drove the invaders back across the mountains. By October 8 a Teutonic invasion of Roumania from the northwest was imminent, and two days later the Roumanians were pursued through the passes by Austrian troops. By the 17th Teuton forces were five miles inside the frontier.

On October 25 Von Falkenhayn's army stormed the Vulcan Pass and pushed nearer the railroad at Kimpolong, seventy-five miles from Bucharest. These successes were not gained, however, without hard fighting, the Roumanians making a desperate stand to prevent the Teuton invasion which threatened their capital. They were aided by a French commander, General Bertholet, and struck back hard at Von Falkenhayn, gaining some signal successes in the last days of October and early in November and capturing several thousand prisoners and much war material. These successes, however, proved insufficient to do more than check the Teuton advance toward Bucharest.

In the Dobrudja, after the capture of Cernavoda by Von Mackensen, there were strenuous efforts by the Roumanians, aided by Russians, to regain their lost territory. In their early retreat they destroyed the great eleven-mile bridge over the Danube at Cernavoda and so cut off for the time being Von Mackesen's threatened drive a Bucharest from the south. The Roumanians that had been opposing him fell back northward to the Danube forts. They were hotly pursued by Bulgarians, who on October 29 were reported to be at Astrovo, fifty miles north of the Constanza-Cernavoda railway line. The possession of the latter was an immense advantage to Von Mackensen.

General von Falkenhayn continued his advance into Roumania during November and at the beginning of December the battle for Bucharest was ranging on three sides of the capital, with the Roumanians successful at some points, the invaders at others. West of Bucharest the defenders had been pressed back to the Argesu River, while to the northwest the Germanic forces had smashed through the Roumanian lines and were rapidly moving down the Argesu Valley from Pitesci and down the Dombovitz from the Kompelung region.

To the south of the capital, King Ferdinand's troops delivered a powerful counter-attack on December 2 that forced the Teutons back from the Argesu line and reclaimed two villages.

The Russians meanwhile were making a determined effort to relieve the situation at Bucharest by a counter-demonstration in the



Carpathians, where on December 3 a great battle was developing in their favor. They had gained a foothold in Kirlibaba, the key to the Rodna Pass and the plains of Hungary, and were attacking successfully at other points on the 250-mile front. The Russians also had seized the western end of the Cernavoda bridge over the Danube, thus putting a check on any movement of General von Mackensen's troops across the river from Dobrudja. General Sakharoff's forces continued furious attacks along the entire line in the Dobrudja.

#### ITALIAN CAMPAIGN IN THE TRENTINO.

The Italian forces operating in the Trentino continued their activity during the fall and early winter of 1916, continual gains being made in their difficult undertaking. General Cadorna began a new drive on Trieste in October, transferring the weight of his attacks from the Carso sector to the Trentino front. The total number of Austrian prisoners taken on the Isonzo front from August 6 to October 12 was set by the Italian War Office at 30,880. No decided advantage was gained by either side up to December 5, although the Italians continued to take many prisoners and much Austrian war material in the course of their operations, and in November compelled the Austrian generals to transfer many troops from the Roumanian front in order to cope with the Italian attacks, delivered in the most difficult terrain of the entire war and often under weather conditions that tried the hardihood of troops trained to Alpine warfare.

#### DEATH OF THE AUSTRIAN EMPEROR.

Francis Joseph, Emperor of Austria and King of Hungary, died at Schonbrunn Castle, near Vienna, November 21, at the age of 86. He had ruled for sixty-eight years, his reign being marked by much turbulence in the empire, both political and social, and by a long series of domestic and personal disasters that culminated in the assassination of his nephew, the Archduke Francis Ferdinand, heir to the joint thrones of Austria and Hungary, which furnished the Teutonic excuse for the great war. Francis Joseph was succeeded by his grandnephew, Archduke Charles Francis Joseph, of whose personality little was known outside Austria.

#### ZEPPELIN RAIDERS BROUGHT DOWN.

Several German Zeppelins were brought to earth on English soil during the progress of aerial raids in September and November, 1916. Commander Robinson and Lieutenants Tempest and Sowery of the Flying Corps each accounted for one of the huge aircraft in the Lon-

don district. The former received the Victoria cross for his exploit. The crew of one of the Zeppelins was captured, but in the other cases the crews perished with the airships, which fell flaming to earth. Two more Zeppelins were brought down late in November on the eastern coast of England and fell into the sea. One of these was destroyed nine miles from the coast by naval seaplanes and a patrol boat.

#### DEPORTATION OF BELGIAN WORKMEN.

A wave of indignation swept over the civilized world, already outraged almost beyond endurance by the unprecedented German disregard of international law and the recognized customs of war, when it was announced on November 10 that 30,000 Belgians had been deported into exile by the German authorities in Belgium. It was alleged that all males between the ages of 17 and 30 were being sent in cattle-cars to Germany. Cardinal Mercier of Belgium protested in the name of humanity, the men being ruthlessly torn from their families, and said the Belgians were being reduced to a state of slavery. The Pope protested to the German government against the reported action, and the State Department at Washington made representations concerning it to Berlin. The total number of Belgian males to be deported to work in German industries was alleged to be 300,000. After investigation Viscount Bryce of England and many other statesmen and publicists denounced the German action as infamous.

#### POLAND PROCLAIMED A KINGDOM BY GERMANY.

By a joint manifesto, issued on November 4 by the Emperors of Germany and Austria, the ancient kingdom of Poland was revived and Polish autonomy ostensibly re-established. The kingdom was proclaimed with due ceremony in Lublin and Warsaw. The definite territorial limits of the new nation were not set, according to the proclamation, and would not be until the close of the war. Constitutional rule and a national army, however, were to be established at once. The joint opinion of other nations, neutrals and Allies of the Entente, was that Poland as captured territory could not be recognized as a new kingdom.

#### THE FALL OF BUCHAREST.

By December 2 the battle for Bucharest had reached the outskirts of the Roumanian capital and the guns of Von Mackensen's forces began a bombardment of the outer forts, and on December 6 the armies of the Central Powers took Bucharest, cutting off a large part of the defending army. Ploesci, the great oil center of Rou-

mania, and Sinaia, the summer capital, also fell. Many thousands of Roumanian troops were taken prisoners in the operations near Bucharest, the number being estimated at 38,500 for the first week of the month, and the Roumanians retired to new positions to the north and east of their fallen capital. General von Heinrich, governor of Lille during the deportation of Belgians from that city, was appointed military governor of Bucharest, on which the Germans imposed a levy amounting practically to \$400 a person, or a total of \$140,000,000.

Von Mackensen continued to press his advances in the Dobrudja and eastern Wallachia during the month, though retarded by sturdy Russian and Roumanian resistance. As Christmas approached the forces of the Central Powers were pressing the Russo-Roumanians close to the Danube where it runs east and west, forming the boundary between Roumania and Bessarabia.

#### CHANGE IN BRITISH GOVERNMENT.

On December 7 Mr. Henry Lloyd-George accepted the British premiership and formed a new Cabinet, which included an important representation of labor and other elements of strength pointing to a systematic and determined prosecution of the war from all angles. The Cabinet as announced December 12 included Sir Edward Carson, the Irish Unionist leader, as First Lord of the Admiralty, and Baron Devonport as food controller, a new position. The size of the war council was reduced to five, including the premier. Admiral Sir John Jellicoe was appointed First Sea Lord of the Admiralty, being succeeded in command of the grand fleet of Britain by Admiral Sir David Beatty, who commanded the British battle-cruiser fleet in the battle of Jutland.

France followed suit in reorganizing her war council under Premier Briand, also restricting the number of members to five, and General Joffre was succeeded in command of the armies of the north and the northeast by General Nivelle, commander of the French troops at Verdun, where notable victories were gained by the French in December, regaining almost all the ground lost during the previous operations of the year. General Joffre was promoted to the high honor of Marshal of France, the ancient rank being revived for him.

#### CENTRAL POWERS MOVE FOR PEACE.

On December 12 the Central Powers simultaneously presented notes to neutral powers for transmission to the nations of the Entente, containing a proposal for an armistice to discuss the possibilities of

peace. No terms of peace accompanied the German notes and after consultation with the allies of Great Britain Premier Lloyd-George delivered a speech in the House of Commons on December 19, declaring that the proposals of peace could not be entertained, and in which he said:

"I appear before the House of Commons today with the most terrible responsibility that can fall upon the shoulders of any living man as chief adviser of the Crown in the most gigantic war in which this country was ever engaged—a war upon the events of which its destiny depends.

"We accepted this war for an object, and a world object, and the war will end when the object is attained under God. I hope it will never end until that time.

#### MUST KNOW BERLIN PLANS.

"We feel that we ought to know, before we can give favorable consideration to such an invitation, that Germany is prepared to accede to the only terms on which it is possible peace can be obtained and maintained in Europe. Those terms have been repeatedly stated by all the leading statesmen of the Allies. They have been stated repeatedly here and outside. To quote the leader of the House last week:

"Reparation and guarantee against repetition, so there shall be no mistake, and it is important that there should be no mistake in a matter of life or death to millions."

"Let me repeat: Complete restitution, full reparation, and effectual guarantees.

#### NO HINT OF REPARATION.

"Did the German Chancellor use a single phrase to indicate that he was prepared to accept such a peace? Was there a hint of restitution? Was there a suggestion of reparation? Was there an implication of any security for the future that this outrage on civilization would not again be perpetrated at the first profitable opportunity?

"The very substance and style of the speech constitutes a denial of peace on the only terms on which peace is possible. He is not even conscious now that Germany has committed any offense against the rights of free nations.

"Listen to this from the note:

"Not for an instant have they [the Central Powers] swerved from the conviction that respect of the rights of other nations is not in any degree incompatible with their own rights and legitimate interests."



"The note and speech prove that they have not yet learned the alphabet of respect for the rights of others.

"The Allies entered this war to defend Europe against the aggression of Prussian military domination, and, having begun it, they must insist that the only end is the most complete effective guarantee against the possibility of that caste ever again disturbing the peace of Europe.

"You can't have absolute equality in sacrifice. In war that is impossible. But you can have equal readiness to sacrifice from all. There are hundreds of thousands who have given their lives; there are millions who have given up comfortable homes and exchanged them for daily communion with death. Multitudes have given up those whom they loved best.

#### FOR NATIONAL LENT.

"Let the nation as a whole place its comforts, its luxuries, its indulgences, its elegances on the national altar consecrated by such sacrifices as these men have made! Let us proclaim during the war a national Lent! The nation will be better and stronger for it, mentally and morally, as well as physically. It will strengthen its fiber and ennoble its spirit. Without it we shall not get the full benefit of this struggle.

"Our armies have driven the enemy out of the battered villages of France and across the devastated plains of Belgium. They might hurl him across the Rhine in battered disarray. But unless the nation as a whole shoulders part of the burden of victory it won't profit by the triumph, for it is not what a nation gains, but what it gives that makes it great."

#### PEACE MESSAGE BY PRESIDENT WILSON.

A bombshell was cast into the camps of the nations at war on December 20, when President Wilson unexpectedly addressed a message to the belligerents, urging them to state their terms of peace and end the war without further fighting.

An explanation of the President's message to the nations was made by Secretary of State Lansing on the morning of its publication. In the course of this he asserted that the United States had been brought to "the verge of war," which was generally understood to mean that a threatened resumption of submarine activities by Germany on a large scale might create an intolerable situation; also that the President desired to know the terms of peace contemplated by the powers at war, so as to be informed as to how they would affect the interests of the United States.

Germany replied to the President's note on December 26, giving no terms, but lauding the "high-minded suggestion" of Mr. Wilson and proposing "an immediate meeting of delegates of the belligerent states, at a neutral place," continuing as follows: "The imperial government is also of the opinion that the great work of preventing further wars can be begun only after the end of the present struggle of the nations. It will, when this moment shall have come, be ready with pleasure to collaborate entirely with the United States in this exalted task."

The reply of the Entente Allies to President Wilson's message was received January 11. While disclaiming any intention of exterminating the Teutonic peoples, the Allies in this reply stated terms of peace which would result in the humbling of Germany and Austria-Hungary and the expulsion of Turkey from Europe.

#### ENTENTE PEACE TERMS.

The Entente peace terms enumerated in the reply to the President were:

Restoration of Belgium, Serbia and Montenegro, with the payment of indemnities to each by Germany.

Evacuation of France, Russia and Roumania, with reparation to each by Germany.

Reorganization of Europe "guaranteed by a stable régime and founded as much upon respect of nationalities and full security and liberty of economic development, which all nations, great or small, possess, as upon territorial conventions and international agreements suitable to guarantee territorial and maritime frontiers again unjustified attacks."

#### ALSACE-LORRAINE TO FRANCE.

Restoration to France of Alsace and Lorraine by Germany and to Italy of the former northern provinces by Austria.

Liberation of Italians, Slavs, Roumanians and Tcheco Slovaques (Czech Slavs) from domination by the Central Powers, which would mean the cession of several outlying portions of Austria-Hungary to Russia, Roumania, Serbia and Italy.

Enfranchisement of the Armenians and other "populations subject to the bloody tyranny of the Turks."

Expulsion of the Turkish empire from Europe, thus giving Constantinople to Russia.

## WOULD LIBERATE EUROPE.

"It goes without saying," concluded the note, "that, if the Allies wish to liberate Europe from the brutal covetousness of Prussian militarism, it never has been their design, as has been alleged, to encompass the extermination of the German peoples and their political disappearance.

"That which they desire above all is to insure a peace upon the principles of liberty and justice, upon the inviolable fidelity to international obligation with which the government of the United States has never ceased to be inspired.

## WANT VICTORIOUS WAR.

"United in the pursuits of this supreme object, the Allies are determined, individually and collectively, to act with all their power and to consent to all sacrifices to bring to a victorious close a conflict upon which they are convinced not only their own safety and prosperity depend, but also the future of civilization itself."

Belgium, in addition to joining with her allies in the reply to the President, sent an individual note, in which the conquered kingdom made a stirring appeal for American sympathy in its purpose to fight on till it won freedom with reparation.

The Allies promised that in the event of peace on these terms Russia would carry out her announced intention of conferring autonomy on Poland.

## THE PECULIAR SITUATION IN GREECE.

A curious situation developed in Greece during the fall and early winter of 1916. The German sympathies of King Constantine had brought him into conflict with the considerable portion of the Greek people led by the former premier, Venizelos, and the latter had proclaimed a Greek republic and placed troops in the field in active co-operation with the Allies. Diplomatic representatives of the Entente Powers who had remained in Athens were ordered to leave early in November, their presence being felt to be a menace to the interests of the Allies, whose warships commanded the Greek ports and whose troops were stationed at Saloniki in large numbers. The ostensible neutrality of King Constantine's government was regarded by the Allies as dangerous, the failure of Greece to respond to the call of Serbia, its treaty ally, having demonstrated the governmental inclination toward the cause of the Central Powers. In order to minimize the danger, therefore, the French admiral, Du Fournet, in command of the Allied

fleet, demanded the surrender to the Allies of certain guns and war material, and this demand being refused French and British marines were landed at the Piraeus on December 2, 1916, and took possession of the Acropolis. This led to their being fired upon by Greek reservists who had been called out, and some bloodshed resulted, there being about 200 casualties before a compromise was reached between King Constantine and the Allied commanders and the Greek crisis passed for the time being. The king submitted to part of the Allied demands, the others were waived, and the forces landed were withdrawn, after a day of fighting in which the Greek reservists engaged in many clashes with the armed followers of Venizelos.

On January 9 ministers of the Entente Powers handed to the Greek government an ultimatum giving Greece forty-eight hours to comply with the demands contained in the note drawn up by France, Great Britain and Russia on December 31.

Included in the ultimatum was a request by the Entente Powers that the Greek government fulfill at the earliest possible moment the agreement of December 14 regarding the transfer of Greek troops from Thessaly.

#### BRITISH ENTER GERMAN LINES.

During the night of January 14 a party of British troops entered the German lines east of Loos. Many casualties were inflicted on the enemy, his dug-outs were bombed and some prisoners were secured. North of the Ancre an enemy transport was successfully engaged.

In addition to the usual artillery activity the enemy's positions were effectually bombarded southeast of Loos and opposite the Bois Grenier.

#### GERMANS DRIVEN BACK.

The official communication of the French war office January 15, 1917, announced that reciprocal bombardments took place on both banks of the Somme, the right bank of the Meuse and in Lorraine.

After a bombardment the night before between the Aisne and the Argonne the Germans attacked the French advanced posts; they were driven back after a spirited combat with grenades.

On their side the French carried out several surprise attacks on the enemy lines, taking material and prisoners.

On January 16 a powerful offensive was started by the Russo-Roumanian forces in the Roumanian theatre of war, with strong attacks between the Casinu and Sushitza valleys and on both sides of Fundeni. In places the trenches of the German Allies were entered.



## CHAPTER XXIX.

### CONTINUATION OF WAR IN 1917.

*German Sea Raider Busy—British Victory in Mesopotamia—Russia Dethrones the Czar—United States' Relations with Germany Severed—Germans Retreat on the West.*

On January 10 the Greek government accepted the ultimatum of the Allies, providing satisfaction to them without interfering with the administration of the country or local communications. From this time on the situation in Greece ceased to be a source of serious trouble to the Allied commanders at Saloniki.

#### GERMAN SEA RAIDER BUSY.

It was learned on January 17 that a German sea raider, which had succeeded in slipping through the cordon of British ships, had been preying on commerce in the south Atlantic for six weeks. Twenty-one vessels were reported to have been sunk by the raider, with a total loss of approximately \$40,000,000. Victims of the raider who were landed at Pernambuco, Brazil, January 18 stated their belief that she was the steamship *Moewe*, notorious as a raider early in the war, but later reported docked in the Kiel Canal. It was said that she left the Canal disguised as a Danish hay-ship.

#### NAVAL BATTLE IN THE NORTH SEA.

In a sea battle off Zeebrugge, Holland, on January 23, fourteen German torpedo-boat destroyers, attempting to leave port, were attacked by a British flotilla and seven of them were reported sunk.

#### BRITISH VICTORY IN MESOPOTAMIA.

Victorious advances were made in Mesopotamia during the month of January by the British forces, who were determined to wipe out the reverse sustained in the surrender at Kut-el-Amara in 1916. On January 21 it was announced that the Turks had been driven out of positions on the right bank of the Tigris, near Kut, the British occupying their trenches on a wide front.

After a series of persistent attacks Kut-el-Amara fell before the British advance on February 26, opening the road to Bagdad. The Turkish garrison of the city took flight, hotly pursued by the British cavalry, and more than 2,000 prisoners were taken, with many guns and large quantities of war material. Next day the British defeated the Turks in a sanguinary battle 15 miles northwest of the captured town, and took many more prisoners. Bagdad soon fell into their hands, and as the month of April approached the British were on the eve of effecting a junction with the Russian army advancing through Mesopotamia.

## ON THE EASTERN FRONT.

After many vicissitudes in the fighting on the Eastern front in January, the Russians struck a smashing blow at the Teuton line on January 28, tearing a mile-wide gap in Bukowina, close to the Roumanian frontier. Berlin admitted that the offensives on the Sereth and Riga fronts had been temporarily stopped, that many prisoners had been taken by the Russians, and that the German lines had been withdrawn because of superior pressure. The reorganized Roumanian army was reported ready for a new offensive in the spring.

The Russian successes were, however, only temporary and the remainder of the winter campaign was marked by repeated efforts on the part of the Germans to break down the Russian defenses of Riga on the north, and to push the Slavs still further back on the south. Late in February the Teuton forces entered Russian positions in Galicia and also re-took the offensive on the Roumanian front, raiding Russian trenches in the Carpathians and blocking all Russian attempts to force the mountain passes. On February 28 they recaptured most of the peaks in the Bukowina which were lost to the Russians earlier in the year, and took a large number of Russian prisoners.

Meanwhile the Russian advance in Persia and Mesopotamia against the Turks continued unchecked, and events of importance were shaping themselves in the Russian empire, calculated to have an immense effect on the conduct of the Russian armies in the field as well as on the fortunes of the Romanoff dynasty.

## RUSSIA DETHRONES THE CZAR.

Early in March, after several days of ominous silence in regard to events in Petrograd, the news of a successful revolution in Russia astonished the world. From March 9 to March 15, it appeared, the Russian people, headed by Michael Rodzianko, President of the Duma, set about cleaning house with quiet but characteristic thoroughness. Beginning with minor food riots and labor strikes, the cry for food reached the hearts of the soldiers, and one by one, regiments rebelled until finally those troops which had for a time stood loyal to the government of the Czar and his bureaucratic advisers gathered up their arms and marched into the ranks of the revolutionists.

The change came with startling and dramatic rapidity. The Duma, ordered by Imperial rescript to dissolve, refused to obey and voted to continue its meetings. An Executive Committee was appointed, headed by the President of the Duma, which after arresting a number of pro-German ministers of the Czar, proclaimed itself a Provisional Government and announced its intention of creating a new representative form of government for the country. With the assistance of the army, it was soon in control.

Czar Nicholas was promptly compelled to abdicate the throne for himself and his young son. At first the crown was offered to his brother, the Grand Duke Michael, but inside of twenty-four hours

he declined it, also abdicating formally. The Czar and imperial family were confined, while the former pro-German ministers were thrown into prison. The new Provisional Government pledged itself to conduct the war against Germany vigorously, and promised the people complete religious liberty and freedom of speech, political amnesty, universal suffrage, and a constitutional assembly to determine the form of the permanent new government. Great Britain, France, and Italy were prompt to recognize the Duma committee and it was also given enthusiastic support by the Russian armies in the field.

By March 20 absolute quiet prevailed in Petrograd and throughout Russia. The Allies were officially notified of the abdication of Nicholas II and informed by Foreign Minister Milukoff that Russia would stay in the war with them to the end. Prince Lvoff, one of the most popular men in Russia, was placed at the head of the Government Constituent and general political amnesty was proclaimed in a ukase which brought numbers of political prisoners back to their homes from Siberia, and caused great rejoicing throughout the country, no longer an empire of the Romanoffs, who had ruled it for centuries with a rod of iron.

The United States recognized the new order of things in Russia on March 22. A few days later the grand dukes and royal princes of Russia jointly informed the Government Constituent that they formally associated themselves with the abdication of Grand Duke Michael and would turn over to the new Government the crown lands and other state grants in their possession, thus completing the total abdication of the Romanoff dynasty and placing the seal of complete success on the most remarkable revolution the world ever saw—accomplished almost without bloodshed, for the troops in Petrograd had refused to fire upon the revolutionists after the first few hours of disturbance in the streets of the capital, and most of the casualties were among the soldiers themselves.

The Russian revolution, produced in the crucible of war, meant the overthrow of Germanism in Russia, which had hampered the efforts of its armies by treasonable neglect, if not worse, and in the opinion of many neutral observers, destroyed the last chance of a German victory in the war. The effect of the revolution on Germany was twofold—it darkened her military outlook, and gave a tremendous impulse to the latent liberal forces within her empire. Its effect on the war was almost equivalent to bringing a new nation into the camp of the Allies. Its meaning to German democracy was thus stated:

"Germany has been taught to believe that the European war was inaugurated by Russia for aggressive purposes. Germany's democratic leaders repeatedly pointed to Czarism as the evil spirit dominating the Entente. The object of the Central Powers was proclaimed to be the overthrow of the Russian autocratic menace. Therefore

the Russian revolution may profoundly move German democracy. This is probably its greatest disillusionment since the war began."

#### CAUSES OF THE REVOLUTION.

To get a clear picture of the conditions that produced the revolution, it is necessary to remember that from a very early period the German-born Czarina and the clique of pro-German reactionaries whom her influence made powerful with the Czar, were bent on ending the war prematurely in the interests of reaction. The Ministers set up under these auspices for over two years acted in defiance of public opinion. Their policy was not obscure; they hampered the army in respect of munitions, disorganized the country in respect of its distributive services, brought about artificial famine in a land which is one of the world's chief food-producers, and themselves, through police agents, sought to stir up abortive revolts in order that they might plead military failure and internal revolution as a reason for withdrawing from the war.

The Russian people foiled them for a long time by magnificent and much-enduring patriotism. When the government left the army without munitions, the local authorities—the zemstvos and unions of towns—stepped in and organized their supply. When police agents tried to bring about riots and strikes, the workmen's own leaders prevented their breaking out. When secret negotiations were opened up with Germany, the Duma blasted them by public exposure on the popular side.

The Duma's demand for sympathetic and really national government was enforced, first by the Council of the Empire, normally the stronghold of high officialdom, and then by the Congress of Nobles, which represents the landed aristocracy.

But with the nobility, much of the bureaucracy, the army, the navy, the Duma, the professional classes, and the working classes all ranged against them, the "dark forces" of the empire held obstinately on their way. The murder of the court favorite, the infamous monk Rasputin, only intensified the reaction, though its story and sequel showed significantly how far many members of the Imperial family were from supporting the reigning head and his consort in the policy which was jeopardizing the dynasty. But the Czar's political blindness was incurable. In a kind of panic he got rid of every remaining progressive minister; a nonentity of no importance from the Czar's personal circle was made prime minister, and the real power fell to Protopopoff, the strong man of the "dark forces," who was to see their designs through, but was the first victim of the popular uprising. As minister of the interior he defied all Russia, precipitated the revolution, and in his violent death the career of the "dark forces" in Russia was ended, no doubt for all time.

#### UNRESTRICTED SUBMARINE WARFARE.

On February 1 Germany entered upon unrestricted submarine warfare, after warning had been given of this last resort of desperation.



Ten ships were reported sunk and eight lives lost that day. Neutral vessels and belligerents were destroyed without discrimination, and in the first six days the tonnage of the vessels sunk by German U-boats was 86,344 tons, including 45 ships of all nationalities. The British liner *California*, formerly of the Anchor Line, was torpedoed on the seventh day, and sank with a loss of 100 lives. Transatlantic ships were held in New York and other eastern ports, pending instructions from the Government as to sailing in the face of the German warning, against which President Wilson had strongly protested.

#### RELATIONS WITH GERMANY SEVERED.

Diplomatic relations were broken with Germany on February 2, 1917 when President Wilson appeared before a joint session of Congress and announced that the German Ambassador, Count von Bernstorff, had been given his passports, and that Ambassador Gerard had been recalled from Berlin. War with Germany was then believed to be only a matter of hours, awaiting the first German overt act. The reserve force of the Atlantic Fleet was ordered to make ready for immediate service. But the hour had not yet struck for war.

#### INTERNEED SHIPS DAMAGED BY GERMANS.

Examination of a number of the German merchant vessels interned in United States ports showed that most of them had been seriously damaged by their crews to render them unseaworthy, and it was rumored that the partial wreckage of these ships had been ordered February 1 by the German government. Twenty-three German ships seized by the naval authorities at Manila were also found to have received willful damage.

On February 8 the State Department notified all American vessel-owners that merchant ships under the American flag might arm against submarines but that no naval convoys would be supplied by the Government. Sailings of American liners were still held up pending decision about their armament.

The United States Senate indorsed the stand of the President in the break with Germany, by a vote of 78 to 5.

On February 13 it was announced at Washington that an advance was made by the German government, through the Swiss legation, offering to reopen the discussion of submarine methods. The answer of the United States was to the effect that the Government refused to discuss the international situation with Germany until the U-boat warfare was abandoned and the pledges made in the case of the steamer *Sussex* were restored. The Spanish ambassador took over the deserted American embassy at Berlin. President Wilson, with his cabinet, prepared a bill of particulars containing the grievances against the German government, with special emphasis on the refusal of the latter to liberate seventy-two American seamen taken to Germany as prisoners on the steamer *Yarrowdale*, one of the vessels captured in the South Atlantic by the raider supposed to be the *Moewe*.

## GERMAN PLOT IN MEXICO.

Intense feeling was aroused throughout the United States when it was learned on February 28 that Germany had suggested to Mexico an alliance by which war was to be made on the United States if it did not remain neutral. Mexico was to have German aid to regain the southwestern territory acquired from it, and to have a share in the ultimate peace conference. It was to induce Japan to leave the Allies and join in making war on America. Documentary proof of such plots was said to be in the hands of the President, but a few days later the German foreign secretary admitted the scheme as his own and sought to justify it as a necessary precaution against war. The discovery of the plot did more than anything else to arouse the American people to a sense of the danger impending from Germany.

## GERMANS RETREAT ON THE WEST.

After numerous minor successes by the British and French on the Western front, the Germans effected a retreat late in February, which was the greatest retirement in two years, as they yielded on a front of several miles on the Ancre to the Allies, including important towns. The growing superiority of the Allies in artillery had begun to count, and the retirement, while announced from Berlin as strategic, was undoubtedly forced by the development of Allied strength. The capture of Bapaume soon followed. By March 2 the Germans had retreated on a front of 14 miles to a depth of from two to three miles, and the British were still pushing forward.

Another extended German retreat began on the West front March 17, the British and French advancing without resistance for from two to four miles on a front of 35 miles. Peronne was captured next day and it became evident that the Germans were falling back to a so-called Hindenburg line, 25 miles to the rear of their former positions. The Allied advance continued until more than 300 towns and villages were reoccupied and some 1,500 square miles of French territory regained by March 21. The German armies in their retreat devastated the country in the most wanton manner, even going so far as to destroy fruit trees, wells, churches, and buildings of every kind. They also drove before them many of the inhabitants, including women and girls, leaving only a remnant of the former populations, mostly old and feeble folk and children, these being left destitute and without food even for a day. The story of this devastating retreat aroused horror throughout the world.

On March 25 the French pressed an attack against the whole front between St. Quentin and Soissons and made progress everywhere. From this time on the French offensive was active for three weeks, culminating in a great victory on the Soissons front April 16, in which the German losses were placed at 100,000.

## A GREAT BRITISH OFFENSIVE.

In the week of April 9 the British made great gains in the Arras sector, capturing German positions to a great depth and taking a total of some 15,000 prisoners and 190 guns of all calibers, some of

which were turned against the Germans as they sought to stem the tide of British successes by desperate rearguard actions. Notable victories were won by the Canadian troops in the capture of the hotly contested Vimy Ridge and other positions during the battle of Arras, as this series of important engagements was called, even before it was concluded with all the honors in Allied hands.

For several days after the first dash on Monday morning, April 9, the British tore through the German defenses on an extended front north and south of Arras, from the north bank of the River Scarpe to the German trench system just south of Loos, and straddled the iron line of Hindenburg by April 13 as far as a point seven miles southeast of Arras.

But success did not stop here. To the south the British progressed on a front of about nine miles, between Metz-en-Coutre and a point to the north of Hargicourt. The French columns joining the British in this sector swept forward along with their allies. They attacked with tremendous vigor German positions south of St. Quentin and carried several lines of trenches between the Somme and the St. Quentin railway. These positions were held despite every effort of the Germans to retake them.

Throughout the length of interlinked chain of advances the fighting was of the utmost ferocity.

For the first time in the war the British were making sharp drives and smashes like a skillful pugilist, every one of which contained force enough to have been considered a major attack in the history of other wars. In places the attack has shaken loose from the trenches and was being delivered along the lines of the old Napoleonic strategy.

The British captures of Vimy and later of Givenchy were looked on as victories of the utmost importance, equal to the storming by the Canadians of the Vimy Ridge. When this line of hills was firmly in the hands of the Canadians, they hauled their heavy guns up to the summit with extraordinary speed and proceeded to batter to pieces the powerful defenses of Vimy, while they made continual thrusts down the eastern slopes.

In 1915 Vimy was for a time held by the French under Gen. Foch, but they were shouldered out with great slaughter by the Germans, who proceeded to lavish the last details of their military science upon the fortifications of the town.

Givenchy, too, before which many British dead lie buried, was a stronghold upon which the Germans counted to stem any advance.

On April 16 the extension of the British attack nearly to Loos threatened to pocket Lens, just as a loop had been thrown around St. Quentin, and the fall of this industrial city with its rich coal mines was considered inevitable. Indeed, credible reports had been received in Paris that the devastation of the rich city of Lille by the Germans was well under way, indicating that they contemplated a



reluctant evacuation of the most important center in northern France. At all events, an immediate ebb in the German tide was necessitated by the British successes of April 9 to 16. The momentum of Field Marshal Haig's advance and the successes of the French on their share of the western front appeared to make a further retirement of the whole German line imperative—and the great Allied drive had scarcely begun.

#### SCENE OF THE CANADIAN VICTORY.

An exploration on April 13 of Vimy Ridge, carried by the Canadian troops in a series of historic charges, showed that the British artillery virtually blew off the top of it, and the German stronghold which had resisted all efforts of the French and British during more than two years of war, was finally forced into such a position by high explosives that it could no longer resist infantry charges. Walking on the top of the ridge was a continuous climb from one shell crater to another. Two surmounting knobs, known only on military maps as numbered hills, had attracted the fire of the heaviest British guns and had been shattered into unrecognizable buttes on the landscape.

It was little wonder the Germans made such desperate efforts to hold the Vimy ridge and to retake certain portions of it by counter attacks which failed miserably. The ridge stood as a natural barrier between the Germans and their opponents and was a great protective chain of hills shielding invaluable coal, iron, and other mineral lands that Germany had wrested from France in the first onrush of the war in 1914. The city of Lens, within sight of the British lines, from the ridge, is a great mining center.

#### THE FRENCH VICTORY AT SOISSONS.

On April 16 the "big push" of the Allies in France flared into a continuous battle covering nearly every mile of the long line from the North Sea to the Swiss border. Between Soissons and Rheims the French engaged in a terrific struggle, driving forward in a solid mass against the German lines on a front of twenty-five miles. Their way paved by ten days of "drum fire," the troops of Gen. Nivelle swept forward, carrying all of the first line of German positions between Soissons and Craonne. They also took the second line positions, south of Juvincourt, east of Craonne, reached the outskirts of Bermericourt, and advanced up the Aisne canal at Loivre and Courey.

During these operations the French captured 10,000 Germans and a vast amount of war material.

The British were continuing their pressure on both Lens and St. Quentin, but were temporarily held up by a great storm on the 16th. The night before they captured the village of Villaret, which straightened Field Marshal Haig's line northwest of St. Quentin, and made further progress to the northwest of Lens. The prison cages to the rear of Arras were filled with German prisoners, nearly



all of whom were captured in a dazed condition from the terrific British fire that won the great battle of Arras.

#### A TITANIC STRUGGLE FORESEEN.

"The struggle in the western theater of war promises to be a titanic one," said an eye-witness at British headquarters, April 16. "The Allies are prepared as never before, both in material and personnel, and are co-operating with a smoothness which comes from a complete understanding and thorough appreciation of the work in hand.

"The Germans have more divisions on the western front than would have been thought possible a year ago, but already a half score of Germany's best divisions have been smashed to pieces by the British onslaught and their own unsuccessful counter-attacks. The Bavarian divisions were sacrificed first, but the Prussian Guard divisions, thrown in to stem the British flood tide, have suffered such casualties in the last few days that they will have to be relieved."

The Canadians accounted for a large contingent of Prussian grenadiers in the fighting about "The Pimple" on Vimy ridge while an engagement at Lagnicourt April 15 took its heaviest toll both in dead and prisoners from five German guard regiments.

#### GERMAN ROUT AT LAGNICOURT.

The rout of the Germans at Lagnicourt, after what they believed to have been a successful attack, will ever be one of the striking pictures of the war. Repulsed and running for their own trenches, they were trapped by the barbed wire entanglements which had been built with such great strength and thickness in front of them. The boast of the Hindenburg line had been its belts of protective wire.

Caught within the meshes of this wire, the German guardsmen screamed madly for help and guidance. Some, like trapped rabbits, scurried up and down the outer barrier, searching in vain for openings. The British troops meantime had the greatest opportunity for open field rifle shooting since the battle of the Marne. Lying flat upon the ground, they poured bullets into the panic-stricken, gray-coated Germans until each man had fired a full 100 rounds.

While this was going on the British field guns came into play with a shrapnel barrage fire which completed the demolition of the entrapped enemy. It was little wonder that later 1,500 German dead could be counted, or that 400 guardsmen surrendered with upheld hands and emotional cries of "Kamerad!"

#### FRENCH CONTINUE THEIR ADVANCE.

The French under General Nivelle continued their victorious advance on the Soissons-Craonne line April 18, crushing the German resistance along a front of thirty-five miles, and raising the total of German prisoners taken during the movement to 17,000. Seventy-five guns, including a number of heavy siege pieces, were captured, also several supply depots which the enemy had been forced to abandon in his haste.

## CHAPTER XXX.

### UNITED STATES ENTERS THE WAR.

*The President Proclaims War—Interned Ships Are Seized—Congress Votes \$7,000,000,000 for War—Raising an American Army—War to Victory Wilson Pledge—British and French Commission Reaches America.*

On April 2, 1917, Congress having been called in special session, President Wilson appeared before a joint session of both houses and in an address worthy of its historical importance asked for a formal declaration that a state of war existed with Germany, owing to the ruthless and unrestricted submarine campaign. He recommended the utmost practical co-operation with the Entente Allies in counsel and action; the extension of liberal financial credit to them, the mobilization of all the material resources of the United States for the purpose of providing adequate munitions of war, the full equipment of the Navy, especially in supplying it with means for dealing with submarines, and the immediate enrollment of an army of 500,000 men, preferably by a system of universal service, to be increased later by an additional army of equal size. The President took pains to point out that in taking these measures against the German government, the United States had no quarrel with the German people, who were innocent, because kept in ignorance of the lawless acts of their autocratic government, which had become a menace not only to the peace of the world, but to the cause of fundamental human liberty. The object of the United States, said the President, was to vindicate the principles of peace and justice as against selfish and autocratic power, and to insure the future observance of these principles.

After due debate the following joint resolution, declaring war with Germany was adopted by the Senate and House of Representatives and signed by the President on April 6, 1917:

“Whereas, the imperial German government has committed repeated acts of war against the government and the people of the United States of America; therefore, be it

“Resolved, by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, That the state of war between the United States and the imperial German government which has thus been thrust upon the United States is hereby formally declared; and that the President be, and he is, hereby authorized and directed to employ the entire naval and military forces of the United

States and the resources of the government to carry on war against the imperial German government; and to bring the conflict to a successful termination, all of the resources of the country are hereby pledged by the Congress of the United States."

THE PRESIDENT PROCLAIMS WAR.

Immediately after signing the resolution of Congress, President Wilson issued a formal proclamation of war, embodying in it an earnest appeal to all American citizens "that they, in loyal devotion to their country, dedicated from its foundation to the principles of liberty and justice, uphold the laws of the land and give undivided and willing support to those measures which may be adopted by the constitutional authorities in prosecuting the war to a successful issue and in obtaining a secure and just peace."

The President further enjoined all alien enemies within the United States to preserve the peace and refrain from crime against the public safety, and from giving information, aid, or comfort to the enemy, assuring them of protection so long as they conducted themselves in accordance with law and with regulations which might be promulgated from time to time for their guidance. The great mass of German-American citizens promptly avowed the utmost loyalty to the United States, but numerous arrests of suspected spies followed all over the country.

INTERNED SHIPS ARE SEIZED.

Following the declaration of war all the German merchant vessels interned in ports of the United States were seized by representatives of the Federal authority, their crews removed and interned, and guardians placed aboard. These ships in American waters numbered 99, of an aggregate value of about \$100,000,000, and included some of the finest vessels of the German merchant marine; for instance, the *Vaterland*, of 54,283 tons, valued at \$8,000,000, and numerous other Atlantic liners. The disposition to be made of the German ships was left to the future for decision, with great probability, however, that they would be used to transport munitions and supplies to the Allies in Europe through the German submarine blockade.

CONGRESS VOTES \$7,000,000,000 FOR WAR.

Prompt action was taken by Congress to furnish the sinews of war. By April 14 a bond and certificate issue of \$7,000,000,000 had been unanimously voted by both houses, and preparations were made to float a popular subscription for the bonds. Three billions of the amount was intended for loans to the Allies, and the remainder for active prosecution of the war by the United States. The debates in Congress indicated that the country stood solidly behind the President in a determination to bring the military autocracy of Germany to a realizing sense of its responsibility to civilization.

## RAISING AN AMERICAN ARMY.

Legislation was immediately presented by the War Department to the military committees of the Senate and House of Representatives, to provide for raising an army for active participation in the war. This legislation was described by President Wilson as follows:

"It proposes to raise the forces necessary to meet the present emergency by bringing the regular army and the National Guard to war strength and by adding the additional forces which will now be needed, so that the national army will comprise three elements--the regular army, the National Guard and the so-called additional forces, of which at first 500,000 are to be authorized immediately and later increments of the same size as they may be needed.

"In order that all these forces may comprise a single army, the term of enlistment in the three is equalized and will be for the period of the emergency.

"The necessary men will be secured for the regular army and the National Guard by volunteering, as at present, until, in the judgment of the President, a resort to a selective draft is desirable. The additional forces, however, are to be raised by selective draft from men ranging in age from 19 to 25 years. The quotas of the several states in all of these forces will be in proportion to their population."

Recruiting for the army and navy became active as soon as war was declared. On April 15 President Wilson issued an address to the nation, calling on all citizens to enroll themselves in a vast "army of service," military or industrial, and stating that the hour of supreme test for the nation had come. The United States prepared to rise to its full measure of duty, confident in the patent justice of its cause, and echoing the sentiment of its President when he said:

"The hope of the world is that when the European war is over arrangements will have been made composing many of the questions which have hitherto seemed to require the arming of the nations, and that in some ordered and just way the peace of the world may be maintained by such co-operations of force among the great nations as may be necessary to maintain peace and freedom throughout the world."

## ENGLAND WELCOMES U. S. AS AN ALLY.

The news of the President's proclamation of war, following the action of Congress, was received in England and France, Russia and Italy, with enthusiasm. A great service of thanksgiving was held in St. Paul's Cathedral, London, attended by the King and Queen, ministers of state, and an enormous congregation that joined in singing "The Star-Spangled Banner" and the national anthem, while the Stars and Stripes by official order was flown for the first time in history from the tower of the Parliament buildings at Westminster and on public buildings throughout the British empire. A high commission was



appointed to visit the United States for a series of war conferences, and Premier Lloyd George expressed the national satisfaction in glowing terms of welcome to the United States as an ally against Germany, paying at the same time an eloquent tribute to the masterly address of President Wilson to Congress, which stated the case for humanity against military autocracy in such an unanswerable manner, the British premier said, that it placed the seal of humanity's approval on the Allied cause and furnished final justification of the British attitude toward Germany in the war.

#### POPULAR DEMONSTRATION IN PARIS.

In France, the Stars and Stripes were flung to the breeze from the Eiffel Tower on April 22, and saluted by twenty-one guns. This marked the opening of the ceremonies of "United States day" in Paris.

The French tricolor and the star-spangled banner were at the same hour unfurled together from the residence of William G. Sharp, the American ambassador, in the Avenue d'Eylau, from the American Embassy, from the city hall, and from other municipal government buildings.

It was a great day for the red, white and blue, 40,000 American flags being handed out gratis by the committee and waved by the people who thronged the vicinity of the manifestations, which included the decoration of the statues of Washington and Lafayette.

Members of the American Lafayette flying corps, a delegation from the American Ambulance at Neuilly and the American Field Ambulances were the guard of honor before the Lafayette statue.

Ambassador Sharp and his escort were received at the city hall by the members of the municipal council and other distinguished persons. Adrien Mithouard, president of the municipal council, welcomed Ambassador Sharp, who was greeted with great applause when addressing the people of Paris. He said:

"Citizens of Paris: May I say to you, on this day you have with such fine sentiment set apart to honor my country, that America remains no longer content to express to France merely her sympathy. In a cause which she believes as verily as you believe to be a sacred one, she will consecrate all her power and the blood of her patriotic sons, if necessary, to achieve a victory that shall for all time to come insure the domination of right over wrong, freedom over oppression, and the blessings of peace over the brutality of war."

The French Government also appointed a war commission to visit the United States forthwith for conference.

Resolutions expressing the great satisfaction of the Allied nations at the action of the United States were adopted by the British House of Commons, the French Chamber of Deputies, the Russian Duma, and the Italian Parliament.

## ENTHUSIASM IN THE UNITED STATES.

War being declared, the people of the United States were not slow in letting the President know that they stood solidly behind him. From all parts of the country came assurances that the action of the Government was approved. Organizations of every conceivable kind passed resolutions pledging their support to all war measures decided to be necessary to carry the war to a successful issue. Recruiting was at once started for both the Army and the Navy. The recruiting depots were thronged daily and thousands were enrolled for active service while Congress was debating the respective merits of the volunteer system and the "selective draft" advocated by the general staff of the Army and approved by the President and his cabinet.

The full quota of men desired for the Navy, to place the ships already in commission in a high state of efficiency, was soon secured. More men offered themselves for naval service, indeed, than could be accepted pending the action of Congress. Volunteers for the aviation corps, the marines, the field artillery, the engineer corps, and all the various branches of the military establishments came forward freely, and a general desire was expressed to send an American force to the trenches in Europe at the earliest possible moment consistent with proper training for the field.

As the reports of American diplomats from the war zone, freed from German censorship, were given to the public, the martial spirit of America grew apace. Ambassador Gerard's corroboration of German atrocities in the occupied territory of France, and Minister Brand Whitlock's report on the situation in Belgium and the illegal and atrocious deportation of Belgian citizens for hard labor, ill treatment, and starvation in Germany, added fuel to the flame of national indignation, already running high as the result of continued destruction of American merchant vessels and the loss of American lives by submarine piracy and murder, continued almost without cessation since the infamous sinking of the *Lusitania*, one of the never-to-be-forgotten crimes of German ruthlessness.

One hundred million free-born people were at length aroused to action. The Navy was ready for immediate service where it could do most good, and promptly took over patrol duty in the western Atlantic, relieving British and French men-of-war for service elsewhere. The raising of an army of a million or more men for active participation in the war waited only on the action of Congress.

American women responded nobly to the President's call for universal service, flocking to the Red Cross headquarters in every city and setting to work immediately in the preparation of comforts for the great army gathering on the horizon. They were promptly organized, so that their efforts might count to the best advantage.

In August, 1916, the United States Navy included 356 war craft of all kinds, as against 693 credited to Great Britain, 404 to France, and 309 to Germany. The latter figure does not include an unknown number of submarines of recent construction.

#### THE BRITISH COMMISSION ARRIVES.

On Sunday, April 22, the British war commission reached Washington, headed by the Right Hon. Arthur James Balfour, secretary of state for foreign affairs and former premier. The commission included Rear Admiral Sir Dudley R. S. De Chair, naval adviser to the foreign office; Major-General G. T. M. Bridges, representing the British army; Lord Cunliffe of Headley, governor of the Bank of England; and a number of other distinguished officials and naval and military officers, with clerical assistants. The party met with an enthusiastic welcome in Washington. Mr. Balfour was received by the President in private conference next day, and after a round of receptions and social functions of various kinds, arrangements were made for the business meetings affecting war policies, which were the object of the visit.

Mr. Balfour informed the President that the British commission had come to Washington not to ask favors, concessions, or agreements from the United States, but to offer their services for the organization of the stupendous undertaking of fighting Germany. He said that if the United States was confronted by the same problems that confronted England at the outset of the war, the British commission could be of service in pointing out many grievous mistakes of policy and organization that proved costly to the British cause. He was, in turn, assured by the President that the United States would fight in conjunction with the Allies until the Prussian autocracy was crushed and Americans at home and abroad were safe from the ruthlessness of the Berlin government.

#### MARSHAL JOFFRE IN WASHINGTON

The French war commission soon followed the British envoys, arriving in Washington on Wednesday, April 25, on board the presidential yacht *Mayflower* from Hampton Roads. Headed by M. Rene Viviani, minister of justice and former premier of France, the commission included the famous hero of the Marne and idol of the French army and people, Marshal Joffre; also Admiral Chocheprat, representing the French navy; the Marquis de Chambrun (Lafayette's grandson), and other distinguished Frenchmen. The fame of Marshal Joffre and the traditional friendship for France secured for the party an enthusiastic popular greeting. Its members were accorded similar official receptions to those of the British commissioners, and they similarly expressed their desire to be of service to the American people by giving the Washington government the benefit of their costly experience in three years of war.









LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 021 547 461 6